






LIBRARY  
OF THE  
UNIVERSITY  
OF ILLINOIS

805  
NEA  
v. 3  
no. 1-6

PERIODICALS







Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2022 with funding from  
University of Illinois Urbana-Champaign









SEE THE  
NAME

"Cadbury" ON EVERY PIECE  
OF CHOCOLATE.

JUNE, 1925

MONTHLY

VOL. III. NO. 1

# The Adelphi

1/3



1/3

EDITED BY JOHN MIDDLETON MURRY

## Remington passes on the benefit

THE phenomenally rapid increase in sales of Remington typewriters in Great Britain and Ireland has enabled us to reduce our overhead expenses.

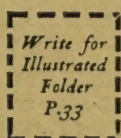
this saving we pass on

PORTABLE MODEL

—formerly £14

NOW

£12 - 10 - 0



OFFICE MODEL No. 12

—formerly £26 10s.

NOW

£25 - 0 - 0

The REMINGTON TYPEWRITER CO. Ltd.

Head Office: 100, Gracechurch Street, London, E.C.3.

And Branches in principal Provincial Centres.

# MARSHALL & SNELGROVE'S

## SPORTS HALL

We hold the largest and most carefully selected stock of Tennis Rackets in London. These represent the first pick of all the reputable makers' best models.



### THE "PARAGON" TENNIS RACKET,

manufactured from the very finest materials, strung Tracey's Gut, with double centre mains. Unequalled for driving and volleying. Perfect balance.

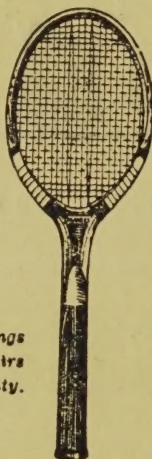
68s. 6d.



### THE "MAX WOOSMAN"

Tennis Rackets, made to the specification of Mr. Max Woosman. A perfectly balanced racket.

Price 67s. 6d.



Clubs supplied on special terms.

Tennis Courts completely equipped.

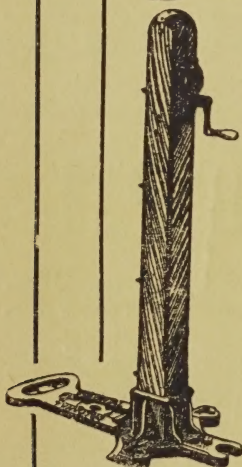
Tennis Racket Restrings and repairs a speciality.

### THE "EMANESS" TENNIS RACKET,

guaranteed strung Tracey's Gut, tournament tension. Equal to the very best rackets being offered.

57s. 6d

Fully guaranteed for season in which the racket is sold.



### THE "COLONIAL" LAWN TENNIS POLE.

These poles are 2 1/2 in. square, made of selected English ash. They are fitted with our improved brass worm winding gear, which is very powerful. No. 1. Price, with large screw and spanner.

Per set £5.



### ARDEE TENNIS POST.

3in. round poles of selected ash. Tongue fitting base. Outside ratchet winder.

Price 50s. pair complete.

# MARSHALL & SNELGROVE

VERE STREET AND OXFORD STREET  
LONDON W.1



# ORIENTAL Rugs & Carpets

*Those best acquainted with the Near East are strongly of the opinion that a few years hence fine Persian Rugs and Carpets will be unobtainable.*

*With a view to studying the position on the spot, our Carpet Buyer has recently visited the most important producing centres. He was welcomed by the leading native merchants and collectors the more so as he was informed that he was the first English buyer representing the large Retail Houses that had visited these markets since 1918. By dint of hard work he managed to secure an exceptionally interesting collection of Modern Persian Rugs and Carpets, as well as a number of particularly fine antique pieces.*

*For those who are looking for moderately priced Rugs there are many KHELIMS in antique colours, ANATOLIANS in old wine shades, and MOSULS in antique blendings, which we were able to purchase for cash at prices considerably below their present market value. Indeed the prices of many of these beautiful and artistic Rugs compare favourably with to-day's quotations for ordinary machine-made goods.*

## Harvey Nichols

**of Knightsbridge, S.W.1**

HARVEY NICHOLS & CO., LTD., KNIGHTSBRIDGE, LONDON, S.W.1.

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
A DIVAGATION ON POLITICS. By JOHN MIDDLETON MURRY ... ..	1
THE FIDDLER AND THE GIRL: A POEM. By HERBERT E. PALMER ... ..	12
THE AUNT SALLY. By CONSTANCE HOLME ...	15
THE ROAD TO DARMSTADT. By A. LISTER KAYE ... ..	22
A CHARMING OLD MAN. By MARY ARDEN	33
BROADCASTING: A POEM. By A. C. BENSON	40
A DAY WITH THE GOLDEN TREASURY. By L. A. MORRISON ... ..	41
(Continued on page iii.)	

¶ The Editor of THE ADELPHI will be pleased at all times to consider MSS. if accompanied by a stamped and addressed envelope. No responsibility, however, is accepted for MSS. submitted. Communications for the Editor and MSS. should be addressed to The Editor, THE ADELPHI, 12, Cursitor Street, Chancery Lane, E.C. 4.

¶ The Subscription Rate for THE ADELPHI is 13/6 per annum post free to any address. Subscriptions should be addressed to The Publisher, THE ADELPHI, British Periodicals Limited, 12, Cursitor Street, Chancery Lane, E.C. 4.

¶ Advertisement copy and all communications relating to the advertisement pages should be sent to the Advertisement Manager, THE ADELPHI, British Periodicals Limited, 12, Cursitor Street, Chancery Lane, E.C. 4, to whom applications for Advertisement Rates should be made. (Phone, Holborn 225-226.)



# CONTENTS—*continued*

	PAGE
THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB.	
Rudolf Steiner : A Personal Impression. By Mrs. Pethick Lawrence ... ..	47
Goethe's Critical Credo. By William Gerhardt ... ..	50
The Status of Illustrative Art. By Dorothy M. Richardson	54
The Late Work of Sargent. By Edward Fazackerly ...	57
"Cæsar and Cleopatra." By Arnold Gibbons ... ..	58
AN EPITAPH. By MARGARET RADFORD ... ..	59
THE WRONG BOOK. By THE JOURNEYMAN ... ..	60
ANTIPATER OF SIDON : A POEM. By H. D.	64
SIGNS OF THE TIMES.	
Madame Tussaud's ... ..	65
Picture-Selling ... ..	66
Jazz ... ..	67
Cross-Word Puzzles ... ..	68
BOOKS TO READ ... ..	71
NOTABLE NOVELS AND SHORT STORIES	73
[ALL RIGHTS RESERVED]	

**"Lurvisca"**  
REGD  
**SHIRTS**  
**PYJAMAS & SOFT COLLARS**  
 are distinctive and possess all the  
 qualities which make for true economy.

Look for the  
 "L U V I S C A"  
 TAB on every  
 Garment. None  
 genuine with-  
 out.  
 If any difficulty  
 in obtaining  
 write **COURT-  
 TAULDS, LTD.**  
 (Dept. 42 M.),  
 19, Alderman-  
 bury, London,  
 E.C.3, for name  
 of nearest re-  
 tailer and de-  
 scriptive  
 booklet.

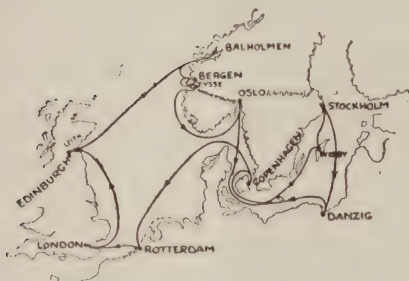
By the new

**P&O**

Oil-burning



Steamship **RANCHI** 16,600 tons.  
15,000 Horse-power.



## A PLEASURE CRUISE

# NORWAY

& THE NORTHERN CAPITALS

23 Days Aug. 15 to Sept. 7

**FARES from 30 GUINEAS**

On this cruise passengers will have a brand new P. & O. liner as their pleasure yacht at sea and their floating hotel in port. The "RANCHI," the second to be completed of four beautiful 16,600-ton vessels designed for the Indian Mail Service, has four passenger decks; an electric passenger lift; handsomely appointed public rooms, including lounge; writing and card room; smoking saloons and

large airy and well-lighted dining saloons; broad promenade decks; a first-class orchestra and a skilled culinary staff. There is a limited number of cabines-de-luxe. The cabins are unusually large and not more than two passengers will be berthed in any cabin unless by request. Besides exploring the beautiful Sogne and Hardanger Fjords, the "RANCHI" will visit the more attractive of the northern capital cities. A plan of the itinerary is shown above.

A programme picturing the "RANCHI" and her Cruise, with a cabin plan and any desired further information may be had on application :—

## P. & O. CHIEF PASSENGER OFFICE

(*F. H. Grosvenor, Manager*),

P. & O. HOUSE, 14, COCKSPUR ST., LONDON, S.W.1

**GIBRALTAR, MARSEILLES and EGYPT at Holiday Fares.**

Programme on Application.

# The Adelphi

---

VOL. III. NO. 1.

JUNE, 1925

---

## A DIVAGATION ON POLITICS

By John Middleton Murry

MR. CHARLES WHIBLEY has, not for the first time, written an excellent book. His life of *Lord John Manners and his Friends* \* is not merely, to use the common cliché, "a valuable contribution to the social and political history of the nineteenth century"; it is something which is as much more important as it is more rare—to wit, a *book*. The narrative flows equably, never turbid, never stagnant, from its source to the sea; so that no one who combines a moderate amount of interest in doings of man as a political animal, with a sense of the amenities of literary locomotion, can fail to be delighted by this smooth progress through the Victorian scene.

Lord John Manners was born in 1818 and died, Duke of Rutland, in 1906. He had been a Cabinet Minister for a greater length of time than any of his contemporaries, chiefly in minor offices, though he refused not a few great ones. But the interest of his career, for one who takes little stock of either aristocracy or cabinet ministering for their own sakes, is that he was in the 'forties a leading member of that Young England Party, whose memory is kept a rather vivid green by Disraeli's *Coningsby*.

---

\* Blackwood. 2 vols. 30s. net.



## THE ADELPHI

The romantic Toryism of Young England is a curious phenomenon, and it is appropriate that its history should be chronicled, with rather more restraint than Disraeli would have found congenial, by Mr. Charles Whibley, who forms, together with Professor Saintsbury, the Tory Party in England to-day. For himself he probably would like to decline the name "romantic," though his admiration for Lord John Manners would hamper the customary vigour of his gesture of refusal ; and, in any case, to be a Tory to-day is to be romantic indeed.

I have neither the desire nor the ability to discourse upon the politics of "Victoria's middle time"; but I should like to muse for a moment on that bewildering confusion of principles from which the ideas of Young England were born, and which took visible form in the elevation of the brilliant and rococo Disraeli to the Delphic oracle of Toryism. Surely only England—delightful, preposterous England—could have conceived and begotten the Primrose League.

Toryism : it is a pleasant word. I should like to be a Tory, for the sound of the thing. I dare say I am ; at all events, if I were to claim to be one no one could say me nay, since nobody knows what a Tory is. He is one who elects to stand on the old ways—*stare super antiquas vias*. But which old ways? Those of ten years, or a hundred, or a thousand years ago? Rousseau chose to stand on the ways of the state of nature. That was going a long way back. He ought, by all the rules, to have been a very crusted Tory indeed : but he was a revolutionary. Again, in the matter of the Christian religion those who desire to go as far back as they can are generally called heretics.

The good old ways, if they are old enough, are the damnable new ones. Lord John Manners, when young, was all for "the Patriot King" and dancing on the village green : but, instead of stopping discreetly at

## A DIVAGATION ON POLITICS

the Elizabethan era, in his youthful enthusiasm he went back further, to pre-Reformation days, when the Church was still one and indivisible. He dallied with extreme Tractarianism, and he was promptly turned out of Parliament on the good old "No Popery!" cry. Up to a dozen years ago "No Popery!" was still a sound plank in the Tory platform: perhaps times have changed since then. But I do not think so. English Toryism is a post-Reformation affair. Naturally: for how many of our "old nobility" received their acres as their share of the plunder of the monasteries! Toryism, as a political creed, has but a relatively short period in which to seek its principles: a period bounded on the one side by the Reformation and on the other by the Whig Revolution of 1688. And it is not easy to see what practical principles it can get out of it. The divine right of kings is scarcely adapted to an age which has endured a European war through an inspired Hohenzollern. Mr. Baldwin (of Baldwin's, Ltd.) no doubt considers the King a kindly and honourable gentleman to whom *devoir* is due; but I imagine that neither his majesty nor he are under any illusions concerning the divine right of royalty. It is a dream, fatal to those who dream it.

The fact is that Toryism is not a practical creed, but a romantic velleity. The sole principle which might be excogitated for it is a refusal of democracy. But, for an Englishman that is hardly possible. He may mistrust democracy, he may believe that in practice it is pernicious, but if he wishes to refuse it he must leave this tight little island and take himself off to Russia or the parts about Cyrene. And, of course, this is what Disraeli, the political realist, clearly saw, when he invented Tory Democracy—a conception nearly as hybrid as Disraeli himself, but not sterile as most hybrids are: the first parent of Joseph Chamberlain's radical Imperialism.

## THE ADELPHI

Disraeli's political creed was as good as most, better than many. It had at least a germ of imagination in it, a vision of something beyond the mere ledger loyalty of the narrow Cobdenite persuasion. In his own rococo way Disraeli had a grasp of one aspect of the truth that man does not live by bread alone, as the Manchester school believed. The question : What besides bread man needs, has been answered in many ways. Disraeli thought, with the Romans, that it was circuses. Young England had faith in the maypole. But circuses (in politics) are as likely to turn out nice little wars as morris-dances. And then Little England found its opportunity.

The see-saw of Victorian politics is mildly interesting, but it belongs with last year's snow. The wealthy manufacturer now stands with the landowner ; the agricultural and the commercial interests have had to sink their differences long ago in the recognition that the real political battle is to be fought over the question of private property. That is a real issue, and, one would have thought, a pretty straightforward one. Unfortunately it is continually confused with an issue of another kind—the equality of men. That all men are equal is the fundamental doctrine of Christianity, which should, by its title-deed, find more joy in one sinner that repenteth than in the ninety and nine which need not repentance. But this equality is a spiritual equality which all men share by virtue of their having an immortal soul, if they can find it. This spiritual equality has consequences in the material realm, but it is not included in those consequences that men should be equal in material things. The real corollary of the spiritual equality of men is that in all the affairs of life one man should regard another as an individual being, that he should love his neighbour as himself : which does not mean that he should share all his property with him. Doubtless there is a condition, which some



## A DIVAGATION ON POLITICS

men have reached in the past, and which humanity as a whole may one day attain, wherein men may become supremely indifferent to possessions and find it beneath their dignity to take thought for the morrow. But that condition is far away ; nor is it in virtue of that ideal that the equality of man is proclaimed as a political principle to-day.

The equality of man that is demanded and proclaimed to-day is equality of possessions. There is no reason in earth or heaven why men's possessions should be equal. And this is so evident that more often the naked "principle" is discreetly disguised as "equality of opportunity." It is utterly impossible that men's opportunities should be equal, for opportunity is not a tangible and divisible thing like a barrel of apples ; it is a happy conjuncture of the man and the moment, and no amount of care in preparing the moment can assure the capacity of the man. The grain of solid truth in these specious catch-words is that it is an injustice, and a remediable one, that a child, who is not yet fit to battle with circumstance, should be deprived of the opportunity to become the best man he is capable of becoming. Nearly all that Governments can do in the way of remedying that injustice has already been done : most of the rest depends upon mothers and fathers.

But even if the time comes when they will do their part, neither possessions nor opportunities nor men will be equal. It would be a nightmare world if they were. But there is no danger of it. As far as we can see there will always be masters and men in the world. What is to be desired, and what is demanded by the true principle of equality (which, being spiritual, can have no material *equivalent*) is that they should be good masters and good men—a simple demand, in truth, but one that is still far from being satisfied by the one side or the other.

Equality is, as a political principle, pure bunkum ;



## THE ADELPHI

while to declare that the present distribution of rewards is just, is pure hypocrisy. It is unjust that anyone should possess a million pounds, for no man's work for the world is worth that share of the world's goods ; it is unjust that a bad mechanic should be paid the same wage as a good one. It is just that a man should get his deserts, good or bad ; it happens once in a thousand times. The real question is why on earth men should go on making all this fuss about justice. It is not a thing to ask for too insistently : one might be disconcerted if justice were really given. Again, there is no danger. There is no one to dispense it. " One would need to see with the eye of God to decide who is good and bad," as Tchegov said.

But, of course, the justice for which men clamour is not justice at all. They want happiness, which is a very different thing, and they have an extraordinary conviction that they are entitled to it ; and an equally astonishing notion that they will get it by possessing some concrete thing which they do not possess already.

Every grown man knows that happiness does not depend upon a change of material conditions ; yet, because few men are grown, the old will o' the wisp still allures. Capitalism will be abolished, and the golden age will begin. Just as men say " opportunity " not " possessions," they say " capitalism," not " property," for they thereby conceal from themselves the fact that they are simply asking for what belongs to other people ; if they were to say that property must be abolished, they might realize that they themselves would have to make sacrifices for their own ideal. And the abolition of property is an ideal, and a high one, so high that we may be fairly certain that when men get so far they will be content to abolish their own property, and not be concerned to abolish other people's. Then they will regard with pity the man who is so far behind them in development that he cannot be scornful of

## A DIVAGATION ON POLITICS

possessions ; but the last thing they will wish to do is to convert him by violence. So long as they do, we may be sure that their motive is not the high spiritual ideal of renunciation, but the common and fallacious desire to acquire happiness by riches, or the eternal grudge of the have-nots against the haves.

It is very easy to confuse spiritual ideals with base desires ; and the confusions are plausible. The communism of to-day is glibly identified with the communism of the early Christians ; from which it differs by the whole breadth of heaven and not a few miles of hell. On the other hand, those who expose the fallacy, lie often and justly under the suspicion that they are magniloquently defending an order of things by which they profit. They would be heard more gladly if they were to show, by their behaviour and their lives, that the spiritual equality of men was a reality for them. It is not enough simply to denounce the wild-fire word of Rousseau : " Man is born free, he is everywhere in chains," as a lie. A mere lie never becomes a wild-fire word. Rousseau's word is part truth, part falsehood ; and only he can convincingly point the falsehood who shows himself responsive to its truth. Man is born to freedom, but the chains which prevent him from it are chiefly of his own making : and not only is the servant in bondage, but the master also, until the one can recognize that he can be free in service, and the other understand that only a free man's service is worth having.

Doubtless this also is an ideal, but it has the advantage of being an ideal that has sometimes been attained. It is not on record that the first thing the noble Roman convert to Christianity did was to free his slaves ; he entered upon a new relation with them, by which they both recognized the necessity of the temporal relation of master and man, and both recognized the spiritual obligation of one free man to another. The thing is

## THE ADELPHI

still being achieved, in innumerable corners of England ; but it is harder to attain now that the master is so often depersonalized into a company, and the man into a member of a trade union. Had the masters lived up to their responsibilities in the good old days of *laissez-faire*, there would have been less bitterness in the hearts of the men, and less of the stubborn desire to do no more than they can be compelled to do.

But there is no going back. Trades Unions and limited companies have come to stay. The true-blue Tory may regret times past and claim that he, or his ancestors, did recognize a relation of mutual obligation between master and man ; and that it was the soulless manufacturers who first regarded men and women and children as mere units of power to be ruthlessly used and ruthlessly discarded. There may be a grain of truth in it, but not more. The agricultural labourer of the 'forties fared hardly better than the slave of the factory. His cottage was, as often as not, a picturesque and pestilent hovel ; and the only agricultural labourer I know well—a man of eighty odd years—has told me that his father, a farm-labourer likewise, and on a noble earl's estate, had to bring up eight children on nine shillings a week. They had nothing but bread soaked in water from one week-end to another. Six of them died. I am afraid there was very little to choose between the Manchester manufacturers and the Tory squires, in bulk. The good old days always turn out, on closer knowledge, to have been the bad old days.

Pat to my purpose, as I write these words, comes the *Times Literary Supplement* (April 30th) with a leading article on " Life in the Eighteenth Century," reviewing two books by authors who have devoted themselves to investigation, unbiased either by Tory romanticism or by the Socialistic *arrière pensée*, of the conditions in London and the country prior to that



## A DIVAGATION ON POLITICS

industrial revolution which is continually paraded as the source of all our discontents.\*

Our brief survey (says Professor Bowden) has sufficed to reveal conditions of pauperism, helplessness and degradation, from which the older economic society seemed to offer no way of escape. To multitudes long hopeless, the new system of production offered promise of deliverance. . . . Historical veracity demands the blotting-out of the idyllic pictures that have been painted of working-class conditions in agriculture and the older industries preceding the great economic change; it necessitates a modification of the judgment that the status of the workers in the new industrial centres was inherently, inevitably inferior. . . . During the earlier stages of industrialization, the new industries ameliorated rather than rendered harsher the conditions of life for the workers.

The truth is that the industrial revolution was one result of an awakening of the national intelligence. Another result was that men began to be ashamed of the beastly conditions in which the poorer classes lived, whether the servants of cits. or noblemen. What had really happened was not that conditions had deteriorated, but that the general conscience had improved. But it seemed to men that things were worse, not themselves a little better; and they put the blame for a degradation which had not occurred upon the great visible change in the country's economy which had. At the touch of the facts the Tory romanticism of Young England vanishes into thin air.

Toryism is a queer amalgam of a dream of the past and a dream of the future; in other words, it is only another variety of Rousseauism. The Tory is a romantic in silk stockings, the Socialist a romantic *sans culotte*. These facile romanticisms are equally futile.

---

\* *London Life in the Eighteenth Century*. By M. Dorothy George. (Kegan Paul. 21s. net.)

*Industrial Society in England Towards the End of the Eighteenth Century*. By Wilt Bowden. (Macmillan. 15s. net.)

## THE ADELPHI

There is a profound and eternal verity in a true romanticism, but it lies at the core and will not be found in these superficial transpositions of the creed. True romanticism does not dream ; it is an unrelenting pursuit of the *reality* of the individual, just as a true classicism is a faithful pursuit of the verity of the external world. Let that be grasped, and it is obvious that true Romanticism and true Classicism make the best of bedfellows : they do not conflict with, they complement each other. Romanticism is not revolutionary, neither is classicism conservative. Both seek the truth, and each is aware that it does not possess all the truth.

Why tempt ye me? Bring me a penny that I may see it. And they brought it. And he saith unto them : Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto Him, Cæsar's. And Jesus, answering, said unto them, Render to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and to God the things that are God's.

So we come, as ever, back to fundamentals.

People have a way of resenting being brought down to bed-rock. It is necessary and salutary, for it is abhorrent to human dignity that a man's left hand should be ignorant of the behaviour of his right. That is no true belief which does not insist upon being squared with all a man's thoughts and actions and it seems to me that a true connection between religious belief and political creeds can only be established if we think less in terms of "rights" and more in terms of "obligations." In the old phrase of the catechism, it is "my duty towards my neighbour" that chiefly matters, and, if the conception were real to us, it would take us a good deal nearer the millennium than the rights of man, or the rights of property. *Noblesse oblige*, if you like, provided you remember that noblesse is the privilege of any man who cares to make it his.

And the Socialists should give up dreaming of the golden age to be ; and the Tories give up dreaming

## A DIVAGATION ON POLITICS

of the golden age that was. The present days are better, even though they may seem dark ; and the future lies not with that country which expropriates or exterminates its masters, or with that which most swiftly forces its men to work on the old terms, but with that which can push through the present universal deadlock of capital and labour to a more widespread sense of the responsibility of each man for his neighbour.

Let us hope that country will be England. It has been in the van of Western progress too long for any true-bred Englishman not to feel instinctively that England will yet show the way out of the confusion that has fallen upon the West. But whether England, which was the first to plunge into the unknown of the industrial system, will be the first to emerge from it, or whether English industrialism will speed onwards to new and extreme developments of which we do not dream,—these things are hidden. But there is a compass by which we may steer across the uncharted ocean of the future ; and that is a true individualism. If every man would strive for the possession of his own self, he would reach a point at which he knows that all manner of things which seemed important, are not important at all : that wealth does not produce happiness, and that happiness itself is not a thing to be aimed at, that circumstance is as it must be, that the only change worth having will be a change in men's attitude to circumstance, and therefore to their fellows, that in so far as this change comes to pass (and each man must do it for himself) men will be content to do as well as they can the work they have it in them to do, and not falsely dream that, if outward things were otherwise, they might be otherwise also.



# THE FIDDLER AND THE GIRL: A NEW SONG OF SOLOMON

*By Herbert E. Palmer*

BUT the root of the matter is I am growing old,  
And kicking at the barriers. There's grey in my hair,  
An ice-cold sediment dropping through my veins,  
My body has lost its spring, my brain its swiftness ;  
Poor am I as a mouse in a timber-yard,  
And I am glad that there must come an End.

I lived on hope once ; felt my spirit uplifted  
By some dream-prospect of established greatness,  
Hoped for a Crown and wore it, Power and was rich ;  
Possessed through every misfortune and restraint ;  
In Desolation was a kind of king.  
The regal Marlowe built not firmer than I,  
For Getting was just Hoping. Now Life's different.  
All's going away, fading, and slipping from me,  
And Death seems friendly.

But then, yesterday,  
As I sat fiddling on my slackened heartstrings,  
Brooding and biting, wishing Death would take me,  
In squalid disillusion of tired spirit  
Tracing upon the ever perishing page  
An acid sonnet with some malice in it,  
There stole on me a hand as—if from Heaven—  
Your hand.—You entered, and stood looking at me.  
And now my fiddle strings grow taut again,  
And there's sweet music nestling in the frame.

## THE FIDDLER AND THE GIRL

So I can say, "To the winds with Hope! What's  
Hope!"

Say it unscathed, set free from rage and hate.

What's Hope to me when the instrument is speaking!

Only by this I pay for my lease of life.

My fiddle's the thing. Let hopes die where they soared.

Oh! I'll not chide you for your swift intrusion,

Nor make you shy that you have given me kindness

As senseless as the sun's tap on the hill

Or the soft-footed South wind's wanderings.

Heaven's sense it was, as sudden as wind or sun;

Yet timely, just a touch from the blue sky.

And the root of the matter is I am growing old

And you've half saved me.—No! it is not Passion.

If it should ever shake you make no sign,

Nor let your thought run on my slain discretion

That I should sing of you 'neath sun or star,

You the Sun's flag; for I kneel down to the Sun

And the whole curving radiance of blue sky,

That breadth that holds all Wonder and pure Reason.

And there's a stretch of severing years between us,

Deep chasms of night and tired experience,

You a fair child, and I pushed back by Time.

There's no affinity 'twixt our outward selves,

The carnal trappings of the central sense,

You so aglow, I withering; you the wild rose,

Song's eglantine, the hyacinth cupula,

Or the juniper, Elijah's cloaking tower

(When he hid from Ahab in the wilderness)

Any fair flower that's fragrant in the Spring,

The Spring itself, and then the Sun of Spring.

## THE ADELPHI

You were all that to me, like a maid to a lover,  
Touching my darkness with soft kindling fingers,  
The rays of your spirit shining through my spirit  
Till I was pinned to Heaven and the light again,  
I Earth's sad clod, and you a shaft from the Sun.

How shall I thank you? Praise what lies beyond you  
And all about you, and in the heart of Day ;  
Do it in this, the string along the wire,  
Scattering a trail of music on the silence  
As I press forward, acolyte, and knowing  
I can do nothing save respond and follow  
As the earth follows the sun, yet does not follow,—  
Its worn face tilting to the kindly radiance,  
Swinging around in the wide severing void.

But I'd speak plainer, change the speech's figure.  
The body's between us, that's the actual severance,  
Yet almost nothing if I break with Time  
And let the clean stripped spirit touch the spirit.  
In any thousand years what's age and change?  
What's blight and death, or any sudden thing  
That starts new life out of life's perishing?  
There are no walls between us, only chasms,  
The abysses of the flesh, the sinews' cleavage.  
(Both voice and sight go out upon the uplands)  
And these will melt as they have melted before.  
The Spirit summit towers firm through Death and  
Change.

And I'll see plainer ere the century's gone,  
And know what has stolen upon me in strange guise.  
For every spring it comes,—shakes me, then goes.



# THE AUNT SALLY

*By* Constance Holme

It seemed as if he would never get home. . . .

He had been an unusually long time coming over the pass,—so long, indeed, that already the dusk was falling. Already the mountains in front of him had faded. A film had come over the lake. On every side of him the gates of the valley were closing for the night.

But even the sight of the shadows creeping along the plain beneath him had failed to hurry him. His pony, recognizing its own dale even before its vague contours were visible from the heights, had chafed at the rein as it pushed forward down the winding track. But the soul in him had refused to push forward. He had held himself back as he held the pony back. While his body was carried downwards towards the valley to which he belonged, his mind remained obstinately fixed in the valley lying behind him.

He had had such a grand day, over there. . . . The Shepherds' Meeting in Hawesdale was always a great "do," but this year it had been better than ever. There had been a fox-hunt, to begin with, followed by the sorting of the sheep that had wandered from their heafs; and after an immense meal there had been sports and sheep-dog trials. He had had to leave the latter, though, before they were through, grumbling to all and sundry about the necessity. He had told everybody that he had to be getting back because he had stock to see to; but what he really had to be getting back to was his wife Cattie.

He had forgotten Cattie during the day, busy as he was with that sudden rushing busyness that comes every

## THE ADELPHI

now and then in the rhythmical life of the dales. It seemed natural to forget her,—over there. Most of the people he met had known him before he was married, and found it easier than not to think of him as still unwed. He had found it easy to think it of himself, too, joyfully slipping back in their company to his boyhood days. He had laughed and joked as of old, and talked—especially talked—as if bent upon making up for all those hours at home when he gritted his teeth on his tongue and said nothing.

It was the innkeeper's wife who had reminded him of his own, and that just when he was at his happiest and freest. "And how's Mrs. Ewbank, these days?" she had asked, interested as the daleswoman always is in her neighbours, even when she is separated from them by the solid bulk of a mountain. "Not so well, isn't she? Eh, now, that's a sad pity! Likely she finds it dull at your spot after what she's been used to . . ." and he had been forced to remember Cattie. Bitterly resenting the interference, yet unable to refrain from acting upon it, he had saddled his pony and started angrily and reluctantly on his homeward journey.

Dropping down the last of the fell, he came to the stream that bordered the dale, and across which, no more than two or three hundred yards away, he could see the shepherd's cottage that was his dwelling. It had a curiously uninhabited look, he thought, regarding it grimly through the gloom, with no smoke going up from the chimney and nobody stirring about the door. But then Cattie, who hated the place, had always had the knack of making it seem as though nobody lived in it. That was a curious thing, when you came to think of it, seeing how highly coloured she was and shrill,—a thin, red-cheeked, flaunting type of woman, with a high, penetrating voice. . . .

His pace had slackened continually as he approached

## THE AUNT SALLY

the bridge that led across the beck to his home, and now he drew rein altogether. The reluctance that had held him back on the hills swelled now into a fierce distaste. Empty though the house seemed, he knew quite well that it was nothing of the sort. Cattie would be waiting for him inside,—waiting for him, yet not glad to see him, and full of snarled complaints. The pleasure of the day would be paid for and overpaid by the time he went to bed ; and suddenly he felt that he could not face that payment. There came upon him, indeed, an almost physical horror of the bridge that led from the happiness he had just left to the bitterness lying before, a horror that was like an actual barrier preventing him from crossing it. He sat for a moment or two swearing to himself as he stared across at the cottage, and then, slipping from his saddle, turned the pony loose, and flung himself to the ground.

He said to himself, half-sitting and half-lying, his fingers scraping among the loose stones on the fellside, that he would not enter the house that night. . . . He knew so well what it would be like,—the dirty kitchen and larder, the frowsty bedroom, the general air of confusion and desolation produced by its careless mistress. As he went in he would see Cattie's red cheeks flaring at him through the gloom, those curiously red cheeks that always looked as though they were painted. They were not painted, as he knew, from the days when he had cared enough to put his own against them, but they looked like it, nevertheless. He had sometimes found himself wishing that they actually *were* painted ; so that, one of these days, when the paint happened to be rubbed off, he might possibly find a human being underneath. . . .

For he had never found it yet. . . . In all the years that he had spent with Cattie she had never seemed to him quite a real woman. There were times when he felt that not only had she paint on her cheeks but in her



## THE ADELPHI

veins, so little was there in her to which it seemed possible to appeal. There was no spring of tenderness or humanity in her, as far as he could tell ; no more than could be expected or discovered in a brightly coloured doll. . . .

Raising himself a little, he flung a stone idly in the direction of the beck. They had had heavy rains lately, and the water was still out. The grey streak of the stream flowed away on either hand until it was lost in the greyer dusk. Behind him the pony pulled raspingly at the strong fellside grass, munching contentedly in spite of its bridle. His dog, as tired as himself after the excitements of the day, lay with its head on its paws and shut lids set on the lightest of light springs.

He flung a second stone at an old tree-trunk half-submerged both by the water and by the shadow of the bridge, watching the grey curve of the missile as it swung upward and then down until it reached its objective. Miserable as he was, he was yet able to feel a thrill of pride in the correctness of his aim. He had always had a sure eye and a steady hand, and could still take pleasure in them, even though every stone that he threw reminded him of his first encounter with Cattie.

That encounter had taken place during one of his rare visits to the market-town, which was not only separated from him by the hills, but was a dozen miles away. There had been a fair in the place, that day, with hobby-horses in the evening, swinging-boats and cocoa-nut shies, and dancing, flaring lights. He had been the round of the shows, and was having his last shots at an Aunt Sally,—so many shots, indeed, and so successfully, that the showmen were getting tired of him. It was almost as if there was a fatal attraction for him in the great stuffed doll, with its blazing cheeks and twisted, leering mouth,—so much so that it seemed impossible for him to miss it. He had stopped for a

## THE AUNT SALLY

moment to exchange a word and a laugh with the little crowd that had gathered admiringly around him, and as he turned himself about he had caught sight of Cattie. Laughing up at him, with her bright cheeks and her mocking mouth, she had reminded him sufficiently of the Aunt Sally to spoil the effect of his next shot. He had left the booth, after that, and followed her about for the rest of the evening. He had flung things at her, too, he remembered now,—orange-peel and paper-pellets, comfits and—kisses. She had fled from him and he had pursued her, drawn by the attraction of her red cheeks as he had been drawn by the red cheeks of the Aunt Sally. And he had caught her in the end. . . .

He sat up straighter, flinging a stone more viciously than before in the direction of the stump. He hit it right enough, he felt sure, even though there was no answering rap from the sodden wood, but only a musical answer from the water. The pony munched a little nearer, making those loud, strange sounds that seem so much louder and stranger in the failing light. The dog opened its eyes and shut them again. Groping about in the dusk, he found another stone. . . .

Yes, he had caught her all right . . . and from the very first moment of their marriage things had gone all wrong. It seemed incredible to him now that he should ever have been foolish enough to believe that they could possibly go right. She had hated his life and all that it stood for from the start,—the valley and the sheep, the fratching hours when he was with her, and the empty hours when he was not. And by the end of the first month he had hated HER—her harsh voice and her hard soul, her red cheeks and her mocking mouth. . . .

He had grown more than ever to think of her as a sort of Aunt Sally, later on, seeing the colour fix in her cheeks and the tightening line of her lips. The likeness had accentuated the desire that had grown upon him to

## THE ADELPHI

fling things at her coloured face. (He threw another stone now with an added force that made it sing in the air.) She had never known how often his hand had crept to his side, stinging and aching with the strength of that desire. That was why it would be better for him not to enter the cottage to-night. He had always been able to hold his hand until now, but he knew he would not be able to hold his hand to-night.

His mind swung back again over the pass, and sunk once more into the heart of the company he had left. The sheep-dog trials would be over by now, and shepherds and dogs would be thronging into the inn. There would be fire and light, drink and song. . . . The innkeeper's wife would be moving about the place, and the innkeeper's buxom lasses. Good-humoured, smiling women, satisfied with their lot. . . . Kindly and homely women, taking care of men, as men wanted to be taken care of, when the evening came. . . .

And for him there was nothing but the slatternly cottage across, with for wife and companion a foul-tongued Aunt Sally at which he might not throw. . . .

He got to his knees in a sudden frenzy of resentment and thwarted longing and something that was curiously like fear, flinging his stones in great, fierce flings at the motionless, sodden stump. He threw first with one hand and then with the other, the better to keep pace with the driving-power that was in him. He scrabbled furiously among the stones, and threw with both hands at once. . . . It was as if he flung his very self at the stump, his hatred and his long martyrdom and all the pent-up vengeance that he dared not wreak. He swore as he threw, and cried,—great, tearing sobs that set the dog whimpering in sympathy behind him. He threw until the whole world seemed full of whirling stones that yet went straight to their mark, until his arms slowed in spite of him . . . slowed and stopped . . . began and stopped . . . until at long last his strength gave out



## THE AUNT SALLY

altogether, and he sank down panting with his face against the grass. . . .

He stayed in that position for such a long time that when he lifted his head again the light had gone entirely. Only a grey streak against the greyer earth spoke to him of the river, with over it a more solid piece of the dark that he knew to be the bridge. He got to his feet unsteadily, feeling heavy in all his limbs. He knew himself to be tired beyond any tiredness he had ever known, and longed to be indoors. He must have the comfort of a roof-tree over him, he said to himself, even though it was the doubtful comfort of a roof that sheltered Cattie.

But at least there was no longer any reason why they should not be together. His rage had spent itself now, and had been succeeded by a dreary peace. He no longer felt any hatred for his wife, nor even his customary sensation of dull bitterness. For a moment, indeed, as he stood wrapped in the soft mantle of the thick hill-dark, a touch of glamour came to him out of the past, showing her as she had appeared to him on that first evening, mocking, indeed, but desirable and alluring, a laughing, coloured, dancing thing in a spinning circle of flame. . . .

The dog had risen silently as he rose, and at a wave of his hand rounded up the pony ; but when he got the latter to the bridge, he found that it would not cross it. Planting its forefeet, it leaned back against the rein, and by the vibration of the leather in his hand he knew that it was trembling. The dog had left his heels and was running up and down the bank, a piece of the dark that had got loose and was running, running, running. . . . It broke suddenly into loud barking,—crying and making little plunges at the old tree-stump in the shadow of the bridge.

And suddenly he remembered that there was no old tree-stump in the shadow of the bridge. . . .

# THE ROAD TO DARMSTADT

By A. Lister-Kaye

I got into the train at Vienna. As we steamed through the Wienerwald I walked down the corridor to have a look at my fellow-travellers. By good fortune I discovered a friend. We greeted one another effusively, and inviting me to remain in his compartment he presented me to his friend—"Graf Keyserling"!

I looked in silent interest at this tall, much-discussed person. He seemed annoyed at the intrusion and at being interrupted. They were discussing the approaching end of our civilization. The baron put me *au courant*.

"The Graf was saying our culture is in danger unless we make an effort to save it. Its destruction may be compared to a Second Flood. Those who save our culture and transmit it to the future will be as the animals in the ark. The Graf is among those who are helping to build the Ark."

I mentally applied this simile of the Ark to his School of Wisdom. It came into being, I had been told, as a result of the "Travel Diary,"\* an appeal for further instruction having been made by so many of those who read this book. It may be wondered that so curiously objective a study should have been so inspiring. The reason is that "Knowledge operates in it, and the juxtaposition of the many world-views is not the essence, but that to each a deeper meaning is assigned." The journey had nothing actually to do with the book. He explains that . . . "its idea is that one whose centre

---

\* Published April, 1925; by Jonathan Cape.

## THE ROAD TO DARMSTADT

recedes far enough above all form can converse in the most varied cultured tongues." Its essence was bringing divergent rays to unity in a same centre. It is, of course, his effort to make things seem "worth while."

As we sped past the gloriously situated monastery of Melk, abode of much learning, we spoke of Progress. An ever-recurring theme in his teaching.

Progress, explained Keyserling, is not so much a change from false to right views as a growing convergence between idea and power of expressing it. We may always mean the same, but far later arrive at the suitable means of self-expression. The only real progress is greater depth, a deeper soul-consciousness.

He seemed to see Psyche lying in a heap in her pebbly stream, while Pan from his rock watches her with malignant pleasure. Materialism gloating over fainting soul. People are as desert sand, without soul, without faith, with no roots in the historical past. They disbelieve in and are impatient of authority. Authority, spiritual or temporal must be accepted in the idea or it ceases to exist. The roots of this disorder date back to the Reformation. Instead of authority, individual comprehension is the deciding factor. No one admits that individuals may be short-sighted, blind, or of inadequate understanding.

One of the signs of decay is the everything-made-easy system. Fatal to growth. An easy accumulation of facts, a smattering of superficial learning, this constitutes the standard of being well-educated. There is neither time nor inclination for thought. Life is arranged to avoid opportunity for thought. Acceleration is the only impetus. No one pauses to reflect that travelling is fastest when one is sliding downhill. Progress, we shout, as we tear madly along the road, oblivious that progress may be in the sense of the Nietzschean Wave. Change does not constitute progress upwards, it is the effort, the aim. Where there



## THE ADELPHI

is no effort and concentration there is no knowledge. Knowledge alone is creative. If our culture is to be saved an effort must be made.

No need to bring anything New to light, there is so much of the Old still unprobed! Confucius, the founder of Chinese culture, was proud of the fact that he gave form to the old. Keyserling's basis is, that acceptance of the reality of matter as opposed to spirit is fatal to soul. Spirit is reality. One of the happiest contributions to thought in the eighteenth century was Leibnitz's "infinite possibility." Reality, as we see it, is the symbol of the unseen; it is not the ultimate limit. Beyond the seen is possibility, which is unlimited. Beyond the "is," form, the word, lies the possible, the meaning, the idea. Western thought, following the lines of the Socratic inheritance, has laid stress on form, reality, and for the sake of accuracy and technical exactitude, on words as such. But beyond the literal interpretation of words lies their possible meaning, idea. They are means of contact with idea. Words are dead matter, without meaning, until vitalized by idea. Idea finds interpretation, like the sun in the dew-drops seeming a thousand, yet but one, in language, art, music, politics, to-day, yesterday, to-morrow. None separately gives the fulness of an idea. Only what expresses an idea is vital, and the expression of a vital idea demands the highest art. There are four stages in speech, articulation. First, a stringing together of words in which a man may be very eloquent and have nothing to say; second, the idea the writer or speaker intends to convey; third, the possible interpretation of his words; fourth, the coincidence of his idea with the one expressed, a unit of expression and idea.

In this now developing spiral we were brought to see that soul and man stand in the same relation to one another on a deeper level as idea to word. Hard as it is to express thought in words, it is even more so to live

## THE ROAD TO DARMSTADT

thought. Thought should be lived. It should be the embodiment of a person's being. In proportion as we understand we can express, what we only half understand we only half express. Understanding comes by effort. Freedom, half understood, has been carried into the life of the soul, in disregard of the fact that to be free the soul must be a conscious soul and not an amorphous one. None but the most highly developed souls can find their fulfilment in the "Limitless without Name of Form." The lesser find in it their undoing.

A vision of motoring madly through the dark, dazzled by glaring head-lights rushing past one; the only thing preventing one from dashing into the oncoming motor, or from plunging off the road, was a thin white line delimiting a path on which one keeps a steady eye. What we need, he was saying, is a centre of steadiness, and it can only be found in the soul. More emphasis has been laid on establishing contact between words and things than between soul and the unseen. Without recognition of soul there can be no consciousness of it. For some time past there has been more concentration on intellect than on soul. But always qualities of soul outweigh intellect. England has more soul than intellect; Germany has more intellect.

It has become customary for logic or reason to be the deciding factor. This process has been not only not constructive but detrimental to soul. Reason is of matter, interprets materialism and has destroyed all the spirituality there was to destroy. Man having become its slave is a "prey to the contingency of the external." Socrates has remained for us the prototype of the "philosopher," or one who searches after truth, but not one who *knows*. There is no abstract truth. The only truth is idea, which transcends truth. Truth, as definition, recedes as we approach it, and leads away

## THE ADELPHI

from spiritual reality and Life. Christ saw beyond form and the appearance of things when He said : God is Love. By soul-vision He saw things contrary to what they seem. To an Oriental, who wants to express some detached idea from the unseen world, not to define the seen—a lie is nearer the truth. He believes that idea is of more importance than words. Untruth often conveys meaning more effectually than attempted exactitude. Women generally understand this indirect method of conveying an impression much better than men. The East has excelled in the spiritual sciences and the West in the exact. The one has concentrated on the unseen and the other on the seen.

A similar situation has arisen now to that when Socrates made his ill-fated attempt to raise the intellectual standard of his contemporaries. For his rash endeavour he was proclaimed a Perverter of Youth, condemned to death, and cultured Hellas came to an end. What could have saved them can save us : more Wisdom. Meaning a fusion of mind and soul. We suffer at present from the right amount to ruin ourselves. Wisdom is there ; it is for us to see it. Truth alone is not the quest, but wisdom. Those who *know* make a deeper impression than those who act. The Emperor Tschun sat with his face to the South and there was harmony. Repose. He knew. The most conscious is the most developed being, and consciousness is soul-consciousness, which alone can lead to wisdom. Our wise men have as a rule not been identified with philosophers, they are very often poets. Our greatest thinkers have rarely been wise. Socrates' work is ready for accomplishment ; Hegel having carried logic to its furthest apex, the era of Reason is now closed. The time has come for philosophy to demonstrate the deeper meaning underlying ethics, religion, and all which mankind has until now dimly intuited. The philosopher should strive for perfect wisdom,



## THE ROAD TO DARMSTADT

fixing his centre in the realm of Idea, and externalize his deepest knowledge. Interpret anew, for instance, the eternal idea underlying Christ's words, beyond the form of which lies still unfathomed meaning to every age. Simple-looking sayings have often the deepest meaning, and the difficult no greater depth than their difficulty. Where nothing is explained all may be understood. Each individual within the limits of his capacity is able to understand what in the case of higher capacity becomes wisdom. Highest wisdom speaks not to the few but to the many. The wisdom of Christ, Krishna, or Buddha excludes no one, for all can understand without great knowledge and with great knowledge still understand. In the sphere of absolute values saint and sage are equal. They are the keynote of life.

Wisdom is for all, but the wise only should teach. The function of the wise is to define in new form the Eternal Idea. Form changes, Idea is imperishable. Idea must be expressed in terms of the Age. The spirit of an Age is oftenest intuited by its artists, who first give it interpretation. No really gifted artist expresses himself in an out-of-date style. But the men of deepest insight are not the artists but the statesmen. The Church was the school of Faith, the University for learning. We now require a school for Wisdom, where we can be taught not to be fragments or thought-machines, but to be our own thought, to act it, to live it. That the word become "flesh" in each one, our being the embodiment of our thought. The school of wisdom must primarily influence a man's being. It must be something between Church and University, for the building of a man's intellect and the spiritualizing of his soul, so that not faith alone, nor learning, but a trinity of faith, learning, and life become an active higher consciousness. Since we become what we can visualize and mould ourselves on the already known, by sketching saints people become saints. Also wise.

## THE ADELPHI

But they must first have a distinct conception of what wise means.

If people only see in a philosopher a learned man or a professor they can derive no other impression from him. Words are limited to our knowledge of their meaning, but that does not prove that there is nothing more to understand in them. In itself a word tells us nothing, it is a senseless sound, like buzz of bees or a foreign tongue. It is our experience, knowledge, which gives it meaning. The idea only that gives it life, is Life. In the beginning all was silence,—chaos. Then God spoke and the World was. Slumbering Eros was quickened by Logos. Without Logos what was Eros? In this further sense, the grasp of the idea equals the degree of life. The Word is understanding consciousness, without which everything is meaningless. Our thought is our centre. What we think and live towards we realise, for the Life-principle is subjective. The Messiah came because the Jews had always expected Him. He was the externalisation of their thought. Each one can have his thought and live it, from labourer to statesman. It grows within. To know what we are and be it, is the Idea. Each has something to voice if he only knows it. There is no help for people who do not know what they want. The urge comes only from within. This urge is towards completion.

The complete fool, I thought hopefully, is better than half a fool. While Blake's comment was, "If a fool would but persist in his folly he would become wise."

Even the man of narrow views, Keyserling continued, unconscious of the interruption, who is consistent in his thought, whose thought is an integral part of himself, is doing more to express an idea than one of broad views, whose thought is general thought, herd-thought, no-thought. Even prejudices are a form of soul life.

It was not a surprise to hear him say that spiritual

## THE ROAD TO DARMSTADT

awakening is always possible, that we are capable of growing, developing, unfolding soul. Inertia though is the line of least resistance. It was the line of least action that led to the belief in God, according to Maupertuis! What are needed, he told us, are initiative, vision, understanding, flexibility, for whatever is not expressive of the Age is like a dead language, an empty formula, which when it ceases to have meaning drops out of usage. This applies also to classes and types. A type exists only so long as it is representative of something, has some stimulus behind it. Without this initiative and personal effort derived from understanding there can be no improvement in the particular or in the universal. Life and History do not forgive those who do not understand. Witness the Last of the Romanoffs. If external circumstances are to improve, the inner man must be improved. The Chinese recognized this long ago, one of the many things understood by us now. We repeat it often, forget it again, and seldom live it. Suppose, for instance, all were Christians instead of only calling themselves so, there would be no difficulty in our understanding one another.

When we get deep enough men always mean the same, only they cannot understand one another from different levels. Minds dwelling on a same level understand one another without the necessity of explaining. If behind Socialism as such we understood that a deeper meaning, inadequately voiced in socialist programmes, and which was the economic and legal formula of the age for the eternal sense of solidarity, was trying to find expression we should pass beyond party and strife. It is some such dim recognition of this fact that has given Bolshevism its immense power. By grasping the deeper meaning we can also externalize a new form of it. Constantine the Great grasped the idea of the need for the Roman Empire of the spiritual support of the Christian Church. He transferred to a deeper level what on the shallow one appeared a peril.



## THE ADELPHI

Instead of opposing he understood the underlying unity of their aims : to rule. In this sense Lao-tse says : the weak are stronger than the strong ; and the flowing than the frozen. Total misapprehension was shown in the Treaty of Versailles. It formulated not peace but war. The Entente failed to co-relate on the deeper level what they recognize as true on the shallow, that not division but unity makes peace. In subsequently setting up the League of Nations they showed no progress in understanding. Ideologists grasp an idea but by incorporating it in arid systems and programmes they sterilize it. Neither the League nor an *Ara Pacis* has gone deep enough. Charlemagne with his "imperial idea" was nearer. Rays of light follow a curve, the straight line misses the mark. A Bismarck and a Stinnes have a deeper insight and very likely the peace of Europe will be achieved by men of far-sighted, egoistic and economic interests, and not by idealists. Why have ideals been found so shattering? Because ideals cannot conform to programmes, they must be lived. When there is dissonance between word and idea, life and thought, then "doth confusion make its masterpiece." It is a house divided against itself. Why did Germany stir world hatred against her? Because of her incompetence in self-expression. There was a fatal divergence between what she expressed and what she was. Without knowledge, without soul-consciousness, there is no consonant self-expression.

This higher wisdom of which Keyserling speaks is not unattainable. He himself points out that the great figures of the past are the forerunners of a quite possible general standard. What Prometheus was the first to achieve every worker in a match-factory can do to-day. Again, in the England of to-day the standard of "gentleman" is a universal one. The progress we can make now is far greater than any in the world's history. The impulse given by Christ is ripe for realization. He can only now be fully understood. We

## THE ROAD TO DARMSTADT

are at the beginning of an epoch when error can lose its dominion, for we have understood that it is our attitude of mind which determines the power of antagonistic forces. The strength of Sin is the Law. Good,—meaning tending to life as opposed to Evil tending to death,—can always retire to a level where Evil cannot reach it. That is why in the end Good must triumph. If there is to be real freedom it is not by the realization of any programmes of universal blessings, which are either utopias or swindles, but through a greater soul-consciousness by means of which complete freedom is attained and control of our destinies. The unmeasured depths of soul are as limitless as Space.

Never to turn or look back, like Lot's wife, but to press forward, beyond, to the furthest limits, in affirmation of life is Keyserling's idea. Andromeda bound to her bare rock of poverty is Negation, released by Perseus the sun-god, who is wealth, Affirmation of Life. Perseus always comes. It is for us to see him as the shining hero. If not, Andromeda remains bound by her chains of negativity. Our lives need to be fuller, richer, deeper. Wealth of life is in affirmation not in negation, not in a greater asceticism but in a fuller acceptance. Not to be less but to be more self-expressive in one's work and life, to render the best possible. There is no need to give up a "calling" but to put more into it. All work is equally important, and every "profession" equally noble. The inequality is in him who does it. He emphasizes,—and emphasis in the right place is all-important,—that every one has his "niveau" where fullest development is possible. There is no need to bother about what "one" should do. The question is only, what should "I" do? There is a life's work in that "I." "Better to fulfil one's own however humble Dharma than anyone else's illustrious one," says Khrishna. He says to business

## THE ADELPHI

people not to bring ideals into business : profit is its very essence, it is the basis of Life, and anyone acting in a contrary sense is not improving but spoiling his work. Wealth should be extended in a fuller return and a deeper understanding of responsibility. The quality of a man is what he gives to his fellow-creatures, not what he takes from them. Those who take and give nothing are parasites. If the least of workers wants to give his least work it is because the highest have set the standard of taking the most and giving the least. The acceptance of gifts without an equivalent return is dangerous to soul for all but the highest and best. Capitalism has arrogated to itself the "right" to take without giving an equal return : that is, to give amply in the interest of the Community, corresponding to the greatness of its economic power. The greatest Romans held it their privilege to spend their wealth in benefiting the community. Agrippa not only built baths and the Pantheon for the Romans, but provided them with games, distributions of food, &c. The responsibility of possession demands that in proportion as a man receives he must render in full measure. The claim that only workers have income rights is a re-statement of this elementary principle. Generosity is the measure of noble birth, and it is below not above, that nobility is most often found in these days. Less conscience and not more is the stamp of the topmost strata at present.

In conclusion, I have not pursued my journey further to Darmstadt. I have stood wavering at the cross-roads, reading the sign-post. His last words were : We become the prisoners of our decisions. Until we decide we are free. What is begun in this life finds completion in the next. There is no voluntary development in the next Life. It is this Life that determines.



# A CHARMING OLD MAN

By Mary Arden

YOUTH! Youth! Firm chin, rounded cheek, laughing eyes. "What a delightful boy!" Manhood. Tall and slight. Always holding himself erect, bearing his head with such splendid dignity through the years. "Sixty-five if a day, my dear, but *so* handsome!" And then . . . "What a *charming* old man!" Yes, charming. The perfect word. Incredibly right. Simply *complete*. That triumph to which he had come, as it were, through a travail of years, and which hung like a silver aura about him—perfect, complete. . . .

"Strictly amateur, my dear sir," he said, bending forward across the luncheon table, "strictly amateur, but I *do* like a good game now and then, and there's a lawn, a good lawn. . . ." With his left hand and his fork he made a little gesture towards the sunny boarding-house window, "You've tried it, I dare-say. . . ."

"Well, sir, no," said the little weak-voiced man opposite, "I can't say I have. Croquet? I don't think I've ever played, but there are experts here I fancy," and he let his languid blue eyes travel about the crowded dining-room, "Miss Stedworthy, for instance, and among all these August visitors, of course, one never knows. So many flowers are born to blush unseen, as they say. . . ."

"Hum, lose their tempers, these women. Never knew one that didn't yet. Playin' with them. What's in it? Keep out o' their way, that's all. Go for yer hoop. . . ."

## THE ADELPHI

"Quite right, sir, yes . . ." but he wasn't listening, the little man.

"Do you ever read poetry, Colonel?" he asked. "Some wonderful things have been done in that line, I think. I remember when I first read 'In Memoriam,' as a boy at school.

"Calm is the morn *without a sound*. . . ."

He stopped. He looked fixedly at the line of glittering sea that quivered out there beyond the lawn and the bright red arrogant clumps of geraniums and the railing and the esplanade, as if he were trying to catch through all this clatter of knives and forks a murmur—Mmmssh-ah-ah! of the waves.

"Wonderful!" he said.

"Eh?" said the Colonel. "No, I don't." And under his beautiful white moustache he let his mouth stay open. There were some things which after a long life, a very long life, one *wouldn't* a' believed. Or—or never had believed in an' couldn't now.

"My dear sir," he was beginning admonitory, "don't you. . . ." but a gentle hand pressed his arm.

"Father dear," said the voice of his only, his devoted daughter, "do eat your dinner now. Some people are almost at cheese. . . . These pears are really very nice. So cool, and I'm surprised that they know at a place like this *how* to cook them. I used to say to Freda, 'Now let them stew and stew and stew *very* slowly,' and she never would. She'd serve them all white and still quite hard. There were some things she never *could* understand, just as when I used to tell her *not* to put your things to warm so *near* the fire. . . ."

"I suppose you wouldn't care for game o' croquet, my dear?"

"Oh, no, father, not on a hot afternoon like this, and surely you wouldn't either, not in *that* sun. No, no, sunstroke 'd be the very least. You let me take your

## A CHARMING OLD MAN

deck-chair over to the clump of laurels in that nice patch of shade. I was there yesterday. You watch the sea and the people and are so cool and comfortable all the while. I was surprised. No one else came and invaded the whole afternoon. I was quite to myself."

"For you to sit in th' shade, my dear, is all very well, *very* nice. But you don't seem to realize—there's a difference. I shall—I shall go into th' town an' do some shoppin'."

"What is it you need, dear? I can——"

"Several things, Kate. Important. Do 'em myself. . . ." But even as he spoke the enthusiasm he had felt for—well, really, for what?—drained away. Like fine sand, Frooo! it went through the sieve and was gone. And he didn't care any more. Why care? One had no *part*. Why care? . . . Och, what was that beastly thing on his neck? He put down his knife. But Kate had already seen. With an abstracted air, as if she didn't know what her right hand did, she flicked with a corner of napkin and the fly was gone.

"Oh, well," he said, "a bit hot perhaps. After all I've not finished *The Times* to-day."

So together they carried out his deck-chair across the lawn.

"Let me carry it, let me!" He put one hand on to the end and kept it there. His feet, always unbent at the instep, made a pleasant noise on the soft grass. Very pleasant. But how hot it was! Under the little corduroy smoking cap he'd insisted on putting on, he thought he felt some sweat collect. A long way off, it seemed, they would come to the patch of shade. But he didn't mind the distance. He felt amiable and rather happy.

Three little children had begun to play ball. They shouted and laughed. What a butter-fingers that youngster was! Catch it, now, catch it! Aw, missed again! He'd never quite made up his mind whether



## THE ADELPHI

he really liked little children or not. Now he thought that he did. Fancy running about like that in the heat! Surely they oughtn't to be allowed!

"Don't you think it's rather hot for those children to be out, my dear?"

"Yes. Their mother's a careless woman. I saw her just now in the hall gossiping with that person Mrs. Weldon."

They crossed a narrow gravel path and here came the shade. Briskly Kate unfolded his chair. He lowered himself into it. On one side he could see the front—not many people walking along there now—on the other the lawn, the children playing, the flower-beds, the house.

"Now, dear, I'm going indoors for a while. You'll be quite comfortable here?"

"Yes, yes, Kate. Yes, quite, thank you. . . ."

And he watched her thin, retreating figure. She was of his begetting. How strange that seemed! How strange! How alien she was! How different! Strange! Strange! Suddenly the word was a quintessence for him. Strange! And it seemed that in all this world he saw with his eyes nothing was familiar, nothing was close and real. Nothing. And yet, in a sort of way, those children on the lawn were more real, more familiar to him than Kate.

Now the smallest of them—a little girl in a blue and white check frock—suddenly, for no reason that he could see, broke away from the game and trotted over to the gravel path that ran along close before him. Now she was on the path itself. Going quickly. Tremendous purpose on her little face. Smack! Oh, dear, what a tumble! Up again. Let's see. No harm done. She managed to get to her feet and for a moment looked blankly astonished. Then came the storm. Oh-oh-oh! She wept drearily, and the tears spouted out so fast.

## A CHARMING OLD MAN

"Come, come," he said, getting up stiffly from his chair, "let's see if we can't make things better again."

He went over to her. She let him guide her along into the shade. She still wept and didn't look at him. He sat down again and held her between his knees, while he got out a beautiful smooth, yellowish silk handkerchief and fumblingly wiped her eyes with it, then began to dab at a scratch there was on her knee.

"Oh, not much," he said, "looks much worse'n it is. Very soon be well. We'll tie the handkerchief round, shall we?" Slowly he formed a knot behind the knee.

"There, there," he said, as she still wept, "we can't have any more tears, nothin' to wipe them away with now."

"Oh-oh-oh!" But gradually she stopped, and now, yes, it was over. She stared at him critically.

"You've got a *big* tear," she said.

"Oh, yes, yes, but that's different. No good wipin' that. It never goes away." He pulled her up on to his knee and began carefully to explain how a long time ago in the wars he had got a piece of shot in by his tear gland, and now there would always be a tear.

"You get quite used to it," he said.

"Children, children! Dickie! Nellie! Florrie! Come in *at once*!" There was the careless woman standing in the door-way.

"I think that's your mother, isn't it, little girl?"

"Ye-es." She smiled crookedly, got off his knee and trotted away. Half-way across the lawn she had an after-thought:

"Good-bye."

He waved one of his hands slowly to and fro like morse signalling and nodded his head.

Now the hot afternoon buzzed over the empty lawn, over the almost deserted front. The green seat on the other side of the railing. Phew! It must be too hot

## THE ADELPHI

to touch ! Over on the dazzling metallic sea there was one little boat with a white sail. He closed his eyes . . .

The fierceness went from the sun, the light changed. A little breeze sprang up and a lot of small sails appeared on the sea as if fanned there by the draught. The people walking along the front began to have long pointing shadows. There was a buzz of conversation now, in the welcome cool.

" Please, sir," a husky voice said in his ear, " Madame told me to tell you she's very sorry, but she's got a touch of headache and is lying down, and she says it's late and wouldn't you like some tea? "

He opened his eyes. There stood that little scared creature of a maid, twisting her large hands together over her apron.

" All right," he said, " I'll go in."

He got up, feeling as if all his bones had been screwed tight, went over to the house, and climbed the dark stairs.

Tap ! Tap !

" May I come in, Kate? "

" Yes, do, dear," she said, and as he entered her room, " I've been wondering what you were doing."

" Have you had tea? " he asked.

" Of course. A long time ago. It'll be *dinner* time soon." She tossed her head fretfully on the pillow.

" Why didn't you come in sooner than this? "

" Oh, I—I had a bit of a nap, y' know. The heat. How's your head now, my dear? "

" Oh, it might be worse. I shall get up for dinner, of course."

" Anythin' I can do? "

" No, no, dear, thank you very much. Nothing."

He stood awkwardly by the door, smoothing the handle with his hand. This mood of hers he felt was—difficult. Surely one ought to do *something* ! But



## A CHARMING OLD MAN

what? What? Puzzled, he looked at that thin person lying on the bed.

"Would you rather I—I just left you quiet for a bit?"

"Yes, yes, dear, please."

"Very well." He went out, closing the door softly.

"In the old days, when she was a child," he thought, "what a sweet little thing she was! How we used to understand each other then!" And he saw himself sitting in the old drawing-room in his uniform at tea-time, sitting very straight up with Kate across one knee, while he fed her with bits of much-too-rich currant cake. His moustache moved up and down while he munched himself.

"I cut off your moustache. Snip, snip!" she said, and snipped an end with two stiff little fingers.

He didn't want any tea. He lit his pipe and wandered slowly out, through the garden and on to the esplanade. He had a queer feeling he couldn't define. He just said:

"It's all a strange business, very strange. . . ."

The sea was beginning to have that opaque, milky look of evening. The sky was clear and soft. He felt that it overarched a world that was strange indeed. Most of the people seemed to be couples walking arm-in-arm.

What place had he in such a world: what business there—he who had lived so long ago?

"A long time ago," he thought, "hoch! yes, not that it is. Not so many years after all. But yet—it is! . . . What a tongue-tied chap I am! Never could put a thought into words. What in the world do I mean, I wonder now? Well, well!" He sat down at the extreme end of a seat whose other end was occupied. The girl had her arm round the man's neck in a shameless way.

Puff! Puff! The Colonel drew on his pipe and

## THE ADELPHI

looked straight ahead. . . . And out of that other far-off life he heard :

“ I’m so alone without you ! Ah, so alone ! I love you so ! ”

I love you so ! Well, well ! But what was the good of thinking of things—just *thinking*? None whatever. Led to sentimentality, that was all. . . . Dinner time nearly by now, he supposed. Slowly he got up and slowly returned.

## BROADCASTING

*By* A. C. Benson

CALL me the mirthful spirits, every one,  
To solace me, to sate my craving ears  
With all the babblement beneath the sun,  
The jests men flourish to disguise their fears.

Fall from the sky, and ripple into song,  
O sounding string, O wind made musical !  
Conspiring dreams, that would your grace prolong  
To cheat the silence that awaiteth all.

Hush, hush, ye chiding spirits ! Be content  
With what ye prate of, with the world ye span.  
Leave me the all-enfolding firmament !  
This only know I,—that the heart of man  
Is sweeter than the idle word he saith,  
And silence is the noblest gift of Death.

# A DAY WITH THE GOLDEN TREASURY

By L. A. Morrison

I think a day with *The Golden Treasury* is a day when labour is apt to wear an honest face, and the rewards are in the round and auriferous. Often I push aside in a fit of more or less honest petulance my Theories of this and Psychologies of that, and sundry other Studies and Monographs, and slip a cheap edition of Palgrave into the sagging pocket of my old golfing jacket (I am a duffer at golf, but the loose habiliments of the game suit my taste), and go out on to the uplands, and it may be climb the sunward slopes of Tinto to its mist-engulfed "Tap." Go out, if you please, like Thoreau : determined to make a day of it. There, on the verdurous flanks of Tinto if anywhere, is the place to browse on the Heliconian pastures, in company with and after the fashion of the nibbling tups and ewes. After all, their methodical cropping and munching of the succulent blades of green grass is very regulative to observe ; one cannot help ruminating (Gabriel Oak like) after their kind ; and the taste of some of the pastoral lyrics in Palgrave seems to borrow the flavour of the herbal juice which the sheep find so satisfying. But my chief reason for the companionship of the *Treasury* is other : that (as Wordsworth perceived) "the common, unaided senses of man are not equal to the realization of the world." I must borrow (unless I am one of them) the spectacles of the poets. They gather together the stray gleams of my vision, circumscribe and concentrate the powers of my affection. They



## THE ADELPHI

take the tossing hazels, flaming gorse, hyacinth patches, sombre pines, dappled sky, and, "with brede ethereal wove," compose them into a picture that is literal and yet a figure, luminous with a significance I should otherwise have missed. They reveal what shapes they are which haunt thought's wildernesses, shapes of tragedy, irony, umbered or scimitar-edged beauty. As I let my eye wander about me, from the bright watersmeet of tributary streams to Symington's russet woods in autumn glory, where

with chiming Tweed  
The lintwhites sing in chorus,

and then glance between the covers of my little green book, it is a case of "beauty making beautiful old rhyme," and who shall deny that something fragmentary but imperishable remains with me (if only until dusk) **between**

The beauty coming and the beauty gone?

Even the cacophony in the thickets towards Thankerton is a reminder of the time when England was a nest of singing birds, and when "a sudden song from some rare throat" pierces the thick skin of my consciousness and sets me subcutaneously tingling, I turn to relieve my feelings to the sonneteer who sang so sweetly and similarly from a bough by Avon. And what with Shakespeare and Shelley may only have been an imaginative experience becomes for me, as they distil it after long keeping in the wood, a spiritual experience. My soul (no longer spell-bound) swims out into the sea of life surrounding me, or that life imbues my soul with a sense of eternity. "When we bethink us," says a very fine writer, "that our hearts beat and our blood flows through a virtue which blossoms in the flowers, which for the birds is wings and happiness, and which night and day unfurls a new flower over our heads, then we have passed from the transitory to the permanent."

## A DAY WITH THE GOLDEN TREASURY

It is not difficult, for example, to hear "The horns of Elfland faintly blowing" as your heart swells with the music of the "Ode to the West Wind" while the elemental Æolus stirs among the birks about you,

And each tall tapering crest is stirred,  
and the eternal whisper heard.

Or so I imagine. For it is not at all difficult to imagine (however handicapped you are in sensibility) when you have a volume of poetic imagery beside you clearly and beautifully embodying the ideas born in you of communication with Nature, ideas unresting until given substance and form in the felicity of exact poetic expression. But there is more in the *Treasury's* companionship than that; though indeed it is a great deal. Hear Emerson: "There is some *awe* mixed with the joy of our surprise, when this poet, who lived in some past world two or three hundred years ago, says that which lies close to my own soul, *that which I also had wellnigh thought and said . . .*"

This is where the *Treasury* comes in, a complementary channel to that by which Nature's delight flows to us.

Sweet Robin sits on the bush  
Singing so rarely.

But the expression of the rarity of the song of so commonplace a bird (if any bird can be called commonplace) would have escaped us but for a Scott to articulate it. So, but for Keats, the "high requiem" of the nightingale when dusk, with its opiate wand, has touched us to fitting mood. So, at high noon, the "bee-loud glade," had not both Keats and Mr. Yeats moved us to accept its "magic murmuring." Sound, in truth, is a secret of the poets: the onomatopoetic communication of what hardly can be captured let alone communicated. "Cuckoo, jug-jug, pu-wee, to-witta-woo."

It comes to this, then. "The economy of Heaven is

## THE ADELPHI

dark," as Charles Lamb cryptically muttered ; the opening of a flower may irradiate it ; but only with the aid of the spectacles of the poets can we see in the sudden illumination, and comprehend a revealed cosmos in which

The swans on still St. Mary's Lake  
Float double, swan and shadow.

Only with the assistance of their hyper-sensitive imagination can we envisage the universe as it ideally is, as it blooms again in the poet's mind. In the words of that forgotten critic, Von Hans Hecht, of whom someone wrote so well in the c'd *Athenæum* : " A fine imagination, like the presence of Eve, gives a second vegetation to the beauties of Nature." It is this second vegetation which the companionship of the *Treasury* brings to pass as we explore the countryside.

Then, with the panorama of Nature unfolding about you and its ideal interpretation in your mind, esoteric problems seem to resolve themselves. In the face of Nature, it does not seem to matter very much whether its beauty exists apart from our consciousness or only exists because of it and in it and as it ; whether the attributes we distinguish in the objects we perceive are absolutely possessed by these objects, or whether, as Kant says, they are merely phenomena explicable from the nature of the mind itself. Objects would be objectless—or object-lesson-less—as far as our spiritual natures were concerned, if we were able somehow to separate them from the emotions they arouse and intelligence they convey as our senses come into contact with them. We may not dis sever morality from beauty. " Art for art's sake " was never a more barren formula (if we divest it of what some sleight-of-word experts have introduced into it) than when confronted, say, with the " God's-eye view " from some intermediary standpoint like Tinto. We cannot, without paying dearly for our self-suppression, check our inner responses to



## A DAY WITH THE GOLDEN TREASURY

the external life about us. After all, if God created Nature, man in whom His Spirit dwells must recreate it in his own image. When he has done so, according to his conscience, he finds that "The whole of Nature is a metaphor of the human mind." It is, you see, in his own image. How could it be otherwise, when the human mind is a microcosm of the divine? When "the rim of the plain trenched along the shining heavens" is only the boundary between the visible dial-plate and the invisible workings? Surely it is extraordinarily satisfying to the mind of man in his contemplative hours to know that, as Emerson puts it, "day and night, river and storm, beast and bird, acid and alkali, pre-exist in necessary ideas in the mind of God"? And that he—man—may, by his mind, penetrate to the essential core of these things, extract their ideas, and give them the symbolic expression for his own understanding of them? Surely his mind is in this way the link between the invisible God, on the one hand, and visible Nature on the other, by which the insoluble riddle of existence is solved, the meanings of the one interpreted in the language of the other, on which plane the two opposites meet and are seen as symmetrical about the pole of his being? The natural antagonism which Mr. Santayana's logic posits in his warning to those who "shatter Nature to discover God" is based on a false premise and does not exist, any more than the supposed antagonism between life and art, morality and beauty, patriotism and Christianity.

But it may be we are passing, now, beyond the bounds of our subject. It is a far cry from Palgrave to Santayana, though the leap through the void, when taken, leads to fascinating adventures in the realm of thought—which, be it said, is the golden purpose of a day with the "Treasury." No other. But there is this to be underlined: If we examine the language we employ—our stock of similes and metaphors and idioms

## THE ADELPHI

—old coinages and those newly struck—and believe (as we cannot help believing after a dispassionate inspection) in the “radical correspondence between visible things and human thoughts,” we must agree with Emerson, I fancy, that Nature is the mind in metaphor. Nature inspires the poet, and the poet animates Nature with his inspired expression of it. He has seen Nature as symbolic, and the result is poetic symbolism. And I think it happens thus. As he gazes deeply on the face of Nature with his “seeing eyes,” material appearances seem to evanesce, fade, and dissolve themselves into their natural background, and their spiritual outlines to emerge, exquisitely defined where the light of the inner vision falls on them. His plastic mind consequently becomes engraven (as with letters on soft bark) with these symbolic lines and curves—these images. I think this was the origin of the theory of symbolism. Anyhow, all truly great poetry is symbolic, and its symbolism is taken from Nature, whose symbols were the first emanations of Divinity. “Who looks,” asks Emerson, “upon a river in meditative hour, and is not reminded of the flux of all things?”

It is a pertinent question. And it is only one of the numberless questions aroused by a day in the country with *The Golden Treasury*. The mind is a lively fold indeed by the time we turn homeward, its beautiful flocks excitedly crowding each other and clamouring for outlet; which (God willing and scrivener’s palsy abating) they shall have. But happen that as it may, the proximity of *The Golden Treasury* is a very present help when silence “sits drooping.”

# THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

RUDOLF STEINER : A PERSONAL IMPRESSION.—At a French railway station a few weeks ago I procured an English newspaper : on opening it I saw the announcement of the death of Doctor Rudolf Steiner, the Founder of the Goetheanum Theatre and School in Dornach, Switzerland.

Beyond one or two meagre notices, nothing to my knowledge has appeared in the English Press which would lead one to suppose that in this country the extraordinary powers of Rudolf Steiner have received recognition in spite of the fact that he has a following in every country in Europe, and also in America, and has exercised a profound influence in such various realms of science and art as architecture, in eurhythmie—a new art of movement—painting, sculpture, and in medicine.

Doctor Steiner was a theosophist and a master of the Rosicrucian system of Mysticism, who united in himself the two streams of Eastern and Western Esoteric wisdom. He possessed a profound knowledge of the ancient Indian scriptures and expressed the deepest veneration for the ancient religions communicated to the human race. He believed, however, that the divine revelation was continuous, given by widely differing manifestations, adapted to an ever changing condition of human development. As a European he felt the profound significance to Westerners of the Rosicrucian philosophy, and believed that in the lives and the writings of modern thinkers and poets and in particular in the life and the writings of the poet Goethe, were to be found the seeds of a new era, opening immediately to the more advanced portions of the human race. To occultists in general he was by almost universal consent the foremost living master, working in the world amongst men



## THE ADELPHI

and women, possessing the rare and extraordinary gift of a fully conscious clairvoyance entirely independent of any mediumship and independent of the condition of trance. Both mediumship and the condition of trance were deprecated by him. He believed these states to be a return to past conditions, rather than an advance towards the goal of spiritual development. He sought to instruct his pupils to reach the successive stages of Imagination, Inspiration and Intuition, by which those who aspire in these modern days to spiritual vision may attain access to the spiritual world which is connected with the physical world as cause is connected with its effect.

Upon me, a member of the outer circle of the Society which he founded, unable to bring any standard of my own as a measurement of his great wisdom, he made an impression as an incarnation of burning love—love breaking down barriers that hem in the human race, and love to those around him, expressed in daily life as a great gentleness which is the flower of great strength. All the kingdoms of the mind were open to him but it was not enough for him to see and to know : he was impelled to the almost impossible task of communicating his vision and his knowledge. His patience and persistence, his energy and sacrifice seemed illimitable. Day by day, depriving himself of the sleep to others indispensable, with incredible and apparently inexhaustible energy he laboured, teaching in the lecture room to graded classes ; ever ready to meet his pupils in private audience—founding schools for children based upon deep study and understanding of human nature, training the teachers, and keeping closely in touch with their work, conducting medical research ; and with all these and many other incessant activities showing unfailing courtesy to everyone. Complex as were his creative interests the keynote of his character was simplicity. He moved amongst crowds

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

unassuming as a well-bred child, and gave one, in a social assembly, an impression of almost shyness, apparently pleased if anyone went up to him and opened conversation ; yet he seemed to know by instinct if any in the gathering specially needed him, and in that case he would find them out at once.

I connect this love and gentleness with Steiner's interpretation of the mission of Christ to this earth. The wisdom manifested in all Nature, in the revolution of the stars, in the structure of the physical body, and in every adaptation of life, was, he held, by virtue of the incarnation of the Christ Spirit to develop in this present earth period into the manifestation of love, as the flower develops from its root. Humanity, when brought in the course of his appointed destiny to the fulness of the measure of the stature of Christ, was to be the hierarchy of love and freedom, and this earth planet had, he taught, been chosen as the sphere for the development of these particular qualities unknown in their perfection to the angels and archangels in all the companies of heaven.

It was this flame of divine love that inspired him with prodigious energy, and led him to the sacrifice of the natural physical powers with which he was endowed, so that the burning of the building\*—the Goetheanum—which was his great work—became the symbol of the burning up of his own body. The most touching thing of all to me was that he wanted to remain with us—that he, to whom the world beyond mortal life was a homeland, fought with his spirit and with his will not to forsake those to whom he was a light and a way. He foresaw and foretold impending trouble on the earth, and he wanted to go through it with his disciples, his spiritual children. But great initiate as he was, he knew that he himself and all the human

---

\* The disaster took place, a result of incendiarism, on the eve of New Year's Day, 1923.

## THE ADELPHI

race were under the direction of greater beings whose purpose and will he accepted.

Great as was the power of life manifested by Rudolf Steiner in his life on earth, to those who accept him as their teacher that power is greater upon them now that he has passed over into the unseen world and has made himself one with those spiritual forces which are bringing to birth a new era upon the earth.—MRS. PETHICK LAWRENCE.

GOETHE'S CRITICAL CREDO.—Herewith receive a corroboration of the criticism of the criticism of Sinclair Lewis's novel in the April ADELPHI, from no less a man than Wolfgang von Goethe himself—a man as great as any of the great men you usually fall back upon when defending your religion against irreligious attackers—and one of *exactly* the same kind (for he is aware as much as any of them "worauf es eigentlich ankommt," and is always concerned and preoccupied with solving the elusive problem of the *livingness* of life, while his contemporaries—not altogether excluding Schiller—are engaged in crude theoretical discussions), in short, a man whom, for some curious reason, you persistently ignore.

Anyhow, the passage underlined, is *your* opinion, expressed a hundred and twenty-four years ago. But I enclose the whole correspondence on the subject, started by Schiller (also not a fool!), and dealt with by Goethe,—and I suggest that you have it printed in the ADELPHI for the illumination of mankind.

When one thinks of the works of Anton Tchekhov and the criticism he was always met with in his time—that he had no *ideals*, &c!!!—or let us say, Goethe's own delightful *Hermann und Dorothea*, in the light of Goethe's critical credo, and compares these simple works of art, with, let us say, the poem of my



## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

Innsbruck friend, called *Der Heereszug Gottes*—the most elevated kind of bunkum that you can think of, the difference becomes particularly acute. And it seems to me, moreover, that most of your opponents misunderstand you on this very point and think that you have grown solemn and didactic and so require from a novelist that he talk solemnly and ponderously of *elevated* things only, preferably of Man, God, and the Universe—at least the most stupid of them do.

*Schiller to Goethe (March 27th, 1801).*

A few days ago I attacked Schelling for an assertion in his *Transcendental Philosophy*: "In Nature the beginning is made from the Unconscious and the effort is to raise it to the Conscious; in Art, on the contrary, the movement is from the Conscious to the Unconscious." Certainly he is here concerned only to make the distinction between the product of Nature and the product of Art, and so far he is quite right. But I am afraid that these idealist gentlemen are prevented by their ideas from paying enough attention to fact; and in fact the Poet also begins only with the Unconscious, yes and must count himself lucky if through the clearest consciousness of his operations he manages to discover the first dim total idea of his work undiminished in the completed piece. Without a dim, but powerful total idea previous to all technical operations, no work of poetry can come into being; and poetry, it seems to me, consists precisely in the ability to utter and communicate that unconscious idea—that is, to transpose it into an object. The non-poet can be affected just as much as the poet by a poetical idea, but he cannot express it in an object, he cannot exhibit it as having a claim to necessary existence. So, likewise, the non-poet, just as much as the poet, can produce something with consciousness and necessity; but such a work does not begin in the Unconscious, and does not end therein. Unconsciousness and thoughtfulness combined make the poetic artist.

In recent years in the effort to raise Poetry to a higher *degree* of excellence, the conception of it has been confused. Anyone who is able to transpose his condition of feeling into an object in such a fashion that this object compels me to pass into that condition of feeling, thus having a living effect upon me—I call a Poet, a maker. But not every poet, by virtue of that, attains the highest *degree* of excel-

## THE ADELPHI

lence. The degree of his completeness depends upon the richness, the content, he has in himself, and therefore represents outside himself, and on the degree of necessity his work exercises. The more subjective his feeling, the more fortuitous it is. Totality of expression is demanded from every work of Poetry, because it must have individuality, or it is nothing; but the complete poet expresses the whole of humanity.

There are, at the present time, many men so cultivated that only the wholly excellent satisfies them, but they themselves are unable to produce even a little bit of good work. They cannot *make* anything; the road from subject to object is barred to them: but this is the very step that makes the Poet for me.

Similarly, there have been and are Poets enough, who can produce a good and individual piece of work, but they do not satisfy those high demands with their work. These, I say, lack the *degree*; the others lack the *kind*; and I think the distinction is not made clearly enough to-day. Whence comes an unprofitable and interminable controversy between them which does no good to art: for the former, who take up their position in the vague realm of the Absolute, oppose to their enemies only the obscure *idea of the highest*, but the latter have the *fact* on their side, which, though limited, is real. And nothing can come of an idea without a fact.

I do not know whether I have expressed myself clearly enough. I would like to know what you think on this matter. . . .

### *Goethe to Schiller.*

As regards the questions touched on in your last, I am not merely of your own opinion, I go still further than you. I believe that everything that Genius, *quâ* Genius, does, is done unconsciously. The man of Genius can work rationally also, after careful consideration, from conviction; but that is all beside the mark. No work of Genius can be improved, or even freed from its mistakes by reflection and its immediate results; but Genius can, by reflection and practice, gradually perfect itself to a point at which it produces perfect works. The more genius the age itself possesses, the more is individual genius assisted.

*As regards the high-falutin' demands which are now made upon the Poet, I too think that they will not assist in producing a poet. The art of Poetry demands in the man who is to exercise it, a certain generous, reality-loving*

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

*limitation, behind which the Absolute lies concealed. Demands from above destroy this innocent and creative condition, and instead of real poetry, set in the place of poetry something which, I say once for all, is simply not poetry—as we have learned to our cost in these days. The same state of things holds good in the different arts,—in Art in its widest sense.*

This is my credo.

In connection with the article on “ Personality and Immortality ” and the poets with immortal “ tremors,” may I recall to you the end of Goethe’s *Faust*, which is of the same kind :

Alles Vergängliche  
Ist nur ein Gleichnis;  
Das Unzulängliche  
Hier wird’s Ereignis;  
Das Unbeschreibliche,  
Hier ist es gethan;  
Das Ewig-Weibliche  
Zieht uns hinan.

And I enclose a picture of a Vienna monument to the wonderful man. It’s a bad picture, but a wonderful monument, in the Ring. A massive statue of a tall, big, strikingly good-looking man leaning back in a ponderous armchair, his arms resting on the sides and his hands hanging down perfunctorily. A clean-cut profile and wonderful large eyes. The expression of the eyes—in sculpture of all things!—is extraordinary. There he sits and looks before him, and the tram car passes in front of his nose, little people dash past him without cease and without noticing him, judges and statesmen and such, and old ladies and nurses with children. And, now and then, a foreigner visiting these parts, will halt before the striking figure, read the name in hushed awe, bow his head, and pass by.

I was going to tell you what a wonderful man I think he was, but I have let myself into describing the spectacular side of it, which has nothing to do with it. But never mind.—WILLIAM GERHARDI.



## THE ADELPHI

THE STATUS OF ILLUSTRATIVE ART.—To turn the pages of the popular magazines of the last century is to experience, together with delight in the quality of even the most commonplace of their pictures—the sheer *quality* resulting from the work upon steel or wood of the immediate human hand—sorrow over the devitalization of the picture-book that has followed the use of elaborate mechanisms for the reproduction of pictures good and bad. Much, no doubt, on the whole, has been gained. And it is not the cheapness of quality resulting from mechanical methods that to-day denies even to first-class illustrative work the status of legitimate art. In any period and no matter in what manner his work is presented, the artist who consecrates himself, whether by direct interpretation, by commentary or by abstract decoration, to the illustration of the printed page, will be classed, until his work shines forth from a past, as a mere bondservant of literature. To-day, with art grown as abstract as higher mathematics, he is more than ever despised and rejected.

His triumphs, up to the closing years of the last century, have been popular triumphs. Rowlandson and Gilray, set now in the ranks of accredited artists, were as popular in their own time as are to-day Bateman and Morrow. And Blake, the father in England of the decorative book, although before his time and therefore never popular in the wide sense, produced in his best work—that accompanying the *Songs of Innocence* and the *Book of Job*—what was actually a cosmic extension of the coloured broadside, and, as such, a direct manifestation of the English spirit. In France, Gavarni and Daumier were from the first best-sellers—though Daumier, atrociously exploited, did not himself reap his harvest—and the one live book of that wasted comedic draughtsman Gustave Doré—his *Contes Drôlatiques*—was racy, of the soil, in every line. The work of this period, culminating in Daumier's tremendous *Don*

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

*Quixote*, left the illustrator, in the opinion of the eminent connoisseurs of the day, definitely in the basement. And those of to-day, compelled to canonize Daumier as one of the greatest or alternatively as the greatest graphic draughtsman the world has seen, have carefully ignored the fact that he was a cartoonist and, in the strictest sense of the word, an illustrator.

And while the use of the wood block by the Dalziel brothers temporarily raised the status of book illustration in England, it is doubtful whether these contributors to the Moxon Tennyson would have received contemporary recognition had they not also been painters. With them the illustrator ceased to be a hack, but was a long way from the salon where for a while in the 'nineties in the person of that revolutionary designer of illustrated books, Aubrey Beardsley, he was not only acclaimed but enthroned. For the first, possibly the last time in history an illustrator of books became in his own day the demi-god of the *élite*. Free from the taint of popular appeal, the decorated book was a thing that superior people could discuss and openly display upon their tables. The simple either ignored, or, seeing, called loudly for the police. Now that the incense is dispersed we see that Beardsley's influence, although technically strong, is more apparent than real. Finding the graphic arts bogged in a dull literalism he broke fresh ground. But while influencing the material of our decorative art, upon its spirit he has had but little effect. For the bright new path he found ends all too soon in the *cul-de-sac* of the preciousness from which we have only recently escaped. That we have escaped is amply evident in the work of four young adventurers in book illustration now exhibiting in London and only by the scraps of tinsel adhering to their coats betrayed as having for a while hung over the shoulder of that amazing technician, entranced, watching him at work. But each of them stands now upright on his feet and is in

## THE ADELPHI

his way an innovator, with his own idea of the book as an entity. Mr. John Austen is perhaps the most thoroughgoing bookman of the four. The drawings for his *Hamlet* and the Regency beaux of his *Rogues in Porcelain*, pieces of perfect penmanship exhibiting an adorable purity of line, are as much parts of a carefully balanced whole as things in themselves. Though his pen-and-ink work has depth and intensity, Mr. Harry Clarke's medium is colour, pure illumination. He sees in terms of colour and it is by colour used in a manner recalling the richly imaged rêveries of mediæval illuminated manuscripts and stained glass that he attains cohesion. Hearing that he is himself a designer of stained glass, one could wish that all colourists might serve the same apprenticeship. The powerful draughtsmanship of Mr. Austin Spare at his best is Oriental, that is to say distinctively mystical in quality. All his work is indirect, saturated with symbolical intention and always, in comparison with that of his co-exhibitors, pure interpretation rather than illustration or improvisation. Mr. Alan Odle, preoccupied with the humanities and with a strong tendency to satire, looks at the world with his author, drops on occasion into drama—his comedy scenes from *Candide* testify that the direct dramatic method of Hogarth and Rowlandson can still score heavily if handled with speed and vigour—but keeps the reins in his own hands, flicking from time to time a barbed tail-piece in his author's face by way of reminder that the artist sees both ways. Between whiles an accomplished decorator, he tends to subordinate decoration to exposition, and although his grotesques and *boutades* are characterized by a powerful and strongly individual technique that gives them a secure place in the development of English Baroque, his use of the tail-piece as a sort of lineal epigram is perhaps his most significant contribution to the art of illustration. All four men possess the three essentials: ability to



## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

decorate the page, to expound the author, and to improvise in the same vein.

Book illustration reaches with these four artists (to whose names many more might be added) an interesting stage in its development, and its lovers need have no fear that its future will be less splendid than its past. As an art-form it needs no justification. Those constrained to belittle it should be reminded that half the surviving masterpieces in the world's galleries are either direct illustrations of, or literary improvisations based upon, the Bible and the classics.—DOROTHY M. RICHARDSON.

THE LATE WORK OF SARGENT.—It is easy to compare unfavourably the work of Sargent with Manet's or, for the matter of that, with Orpen's, but it is also easy to overlook the fact that in several of his paintings of the last decade he approached more nearly to an individual point of view than in the brilliance of his middle period, striking though it is at first glance.

There was in Sargent a real strain of the baroque, a delight in doing what had been done before with rich and flamboyant additions. And it seems that while he was at the beck and call of wealth, this gift could not find an outlet in spite of magnificent—if "magnificent" be the word to use—manipulation of surface effects.

But recently, perhaps because our modern costume gives little excuse for bravura, Sargent depended more and more upon reminiscence of the old masters. He produced Vandyck-Sargents, Kneller-Sargents, Velasquez-Sargents. The bravura was still there, but unity was there too. His colour began at last to play a part in his pictures. Instead of looking like pieces of nature with a sheet of bluish glass in front of them—his pictures took on a life of their own. A life of the memory perhaps, but enough to make Sargent's name more permanent than it might have been.—EDWARD FAZACKERLY.

## THE ADELPHI

"CÆSAR AND CLEOPATRA."—The Birmingham Repertory Company has paid another tribute to Mr. Shaw in reproducing this "history." He, it will be remembered, has stated his conviction that the theatre is more valuable than any other medium of expression for expounding problems or correcting misconceptions. The attitude is manifestly valid ; but with it, the vitality of the characters and their human appeal to the audience must depend on the urgency of restating a specific lesson or argument. That the audience laughed continually over the play does not prove that Mr. Shaw has judged the urgency well ; it suggested rather that neither those who understood, nor those who misunderstood, cared very much about the lessons.

To use the meeting of Cæsar and Cleopatra partly as a peg for satire on the late Victorians, partly to demonstrate that the interests of imperial nobility and cunning involved in that meeting were no more tainted with barbarism than those of 1898, seems at best to be asking for three hours' attention to inessentials. If the late Victorian mind denied a culture to Cæsar (and presumably it did for Mr. Shaw to have been aroused) it is safe to say that the play was as unintelligible to it as the denial is to us. Moreover, the humour would be as cheap to those who had no respect for the great Roman as it now appears unnecessary. For Cæsar, having had a bag put before him by his secretary, Britannus, with the words, "Our enemies are delivered into our hands," to make reply, "In that bag?" would merely have confirmed their feeling that he was a barbarian and an imbecile ; to us, it is simply a silly joke.

The wit with which Mr. Shaw is universally credited is a strange possession : it displays an acute understanding of stage necessities and of life, yet it has the immediate effect of devitalizing any character made to employ it. Perhaps it is that each stroke is designed to strengthen caricature, to disengage the characters

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

from their humanity, for the purer enunciation of the intellectual motive, while achieving *en route* enough laughter to maintain the interest of the audience. The technique is, in many cases, too apparent. For instance, the youthful Cleopatra's repeated allusions to the "strong brown arms" of Mark Antony, who was no more than a childish memory to her. Mere probability apart, the effect is simply caricature. Cleopatra is not made to live by the trick. Cæsar himself, moulded into a solid, but unconvincing figure, part candour, part platitude, part generosity, part "foxing," is the rock against which the lesser figures strike their wit, in the hope of occasional sparks. The hope is sometimes justified.

The actors all display the sound, pleasing skill which comes of Repertory work, and are to be congratulated on their harmony and cohesion. The scenery and costumes are in no way remarkable. Indeed, the scene showing the Sphinx, and the curtains behind which Cleopatra's nurse is slain, might well be changed. The close black and white stripes of the curtains put a positive strain upon the eyes.—ARNOLD GIBBONS.

### *An Epitaph*

LOVE, here lies your child,  
Whose heart was wild, wild. . . .  
Stilled in death now : for ever  
Faithful,—unreconciled.

MARGARET RADFORD.



# THE WRONG BOOK?

By The Journeyman

THERE has been a religious call to arms. It was drowned in the noise of the Budget. Unfortunately, the change in the price of silk stockings obscured the change in the Church calendar, which the Anglo-Catholics have been making, and against which one hundred and fifty good men and true have called upon English Churchmen to defend themselves.

A plague on both your houses !—were it not by far too violent—might express the attitude of the modern man. He is profoundly indifferent to the whole business. Sixpence off the income tax—that is something. But whether or not Corpus Christi should be slipped into the Church festivals, or the Assumption dubbed a Saints' day on carpet consideration—that is remote from his concerns. Why should two, or twenty, more Church services give a sleepless night to a man who never dreams of going to one? Therefore, why should the editor of the *Daily Anything* waste a precious headline on a manifesto which would have divided the nation and sent a Government packing only fifty years ago?

I am not so indifferent. I have an affection for the English Prayer-Book, and hate the thought of its being transmogrified by a set of Romanizing hot-heads, who, if they want to go to Rome, would do it more decently and more courageously, by resigning their cures in a Church which has its origin in a deliberate separation from Rome. That seems a matter of simple honesty and elementary good faith. But reference to those virtues is notoriously irrelevant in religious controversy. Sectarians never see, and never believe, that one

## THE WRONG BOOK?

straightforward act of self-sacrifice more powerfully declares the glory of God than a thousand back-stair victories.

For these unassuming reasons I am with those who call upon us to defend the principles of the Church of England against those who would denature it from within, and I hope there will be some active response to their appeal. Moreover, I freely confess that I do not want to see the Roman Catholic Church gaining ground in England, even though I know its gains will always be more apparent than real. If it advances it will be because there is a real indifference concerning religion in its established forms in this country. If that is so, we must accept the fact. It will probably turn out to be less deplorable than it sounds. Anyhow, I am certain that if the advanced Anglo-Catholics dream of subtly reconquering this country for Rome, and they achieve their dream, they will have won a Pyrrhic victory. They may have the Church, but they will not have the people: nor will they have the money—the people will see to that.

I am not a wholly detached spectator. My sympathies are quite definitely engaged on one side. And yet I cannot help feeling that the main interest of this "call to action" lies in the possibility that it may show, sooner or later, whether the nation as a whole has become irrecoverably indifferent to the forms of religion. It *looks* as though it had become indifferent; and, if it is really so, there is no call to lament over it. The reality of religion will never disappear from among men: it is as necessary to their lives as the casing air. And if Englishmen in the long run refuse to rally to the defence of the Established Church it will be because they have begun to look for the religious reality elsewhere. Those who cannot do without forms will have gone where the forms are most comprehensive, namely, to Rome; those who desire to dispense with forms—

## THE ADELPHI

and these I believe will be found in the majority—will have gone their own individual way.

In this there would be nothing to be alarmed at. It seems to stand in the nature of a Church that is founded, as the authors of the "call to action" themselves acknowledge, on the claim that the individual soul has access to "a direct communion with God," that it should one day evolve itself out of existence. You can hardly build an everlasting institution on the principle of private judgment.

Nevertheless, on second thoughts, an institution, without being everlasting, may endure a long time; what is bound to happen "one day" may well take centuries in the process. Of English institutions, in particular, it is singularly rash to prophesy impending dissolution. They have a trick of being uncommonly tough at the core. And though the signatories to the "call to action" are responsible men who would certainly not have sounded the alarm without good cause to show, I cannot help wondering whether they have not underestimated the powers of resistance to essential innovation that lurk in the hearts of the thousands of simple-minded church-goers in the English countryside. The House of Clergy may resolve that Corpus Christi is to be an English festival, and seriously argue that "The Falling Asleep of the Blessed Virgin"—the very phrase has a hot-house religiosity that the English soul abhors—should be received among Saints' Days with a Collect, Epistle, and Gospel of its own; but perhaps the Anglo-Catholics in the House of Clergy, and their perturbed opponents, have both forgotten an important fact. I do not pretend to know; but I am inclined to suspect that the main reason why the House of Clergy is suffered to perform its alarming antics is that nine out of ten of the simple-minded country church-goers neither know nor care that the House of Clergy exists.



## THE WRONG BOOK?

It may be said that this is very wrong of them, and that they ought to know and care. But why? Why should they be required to scratch their heads over the manœuvres of ecclesiastical wire-pullers? They go to Church, once a week, to praise the Lord according to the fashion of their fathers, not torture themselves with the subtleties of the Thirty-nine Articles after the manner of John Henry Newman. Who's in, who's out in Church politics is no affair of theirs. And it is a very good thing it is not. If they began to attend to the wrangles of the House of Clergy, they might begin to have an even more sceptical attitude towards parsons than they have yet acquired.

But their indifference is dangerous? The enemy is sowing tares while they sleep? No doubt he is. But when it shows above ground a countryman can tell a tare from a wheat-blade without much risk of error. And perhaps, when these innovations of the Anglo-Catholics have ripened from resolutions into full-sized ceremonies and the words in the Prayer-Book begin to look queer, the countryman will simply refuse them. It may take a long while for him to realize what is being done. I cannot imagine my friend Isaac Gill readily changing his prayer-book (which belonged to his grandfather and enjoins him to pray for a George who more needed assistance than this one) for a new-fangled missal *ad usum Anglo-Catholicum* with Corpus Christi and The Falling Asleep of the Blessed Virgin in it. When he is told to do so, there may be trouble.

Not spectacular trouble, of the kind that sectarian zealots (be they Anglo-Catholic or Kensitite) are zealous to provoke with their banners and processions; but respectful, solid, stolid, insuperable trouble of the sort so well described by Thomas Hardy:

“ Now perhaps (said Parson Torkingham) we had better sol-fa the tune. Eyes on your books, please. Sol-sol! Fa-fa! me.”

## THE ADELPHI

"I can't sing like that, not I," said Sammy Blore, with condemnatory astonishment. "I can sing genuine music, like F and G, but not anything so much out of order of nater as that."

"Perhaps you've brought the wrong book, sir?" chimed in Haymoss, kindly. "I've knowed music early in life, and late—in short, ever since Luke Sneap broke his new fiddlebow in the wedding psalm, when Pa'son Wilton brought home his bride. . . . I've knowed music ever since then, I say, sir, and never heard the like o' that. Every martel note had its name of A, B, C at that time."

"Yes, yes, men, but this is a more recent system."

"Still, you can't alter a old-established note that's A or B by nater," rejoined Haymoss, with yet deeper conviction that Mr. Torkingham was getting off his head. "Now sound A, neighbour Sammy, and let's have a slap at 'Christen Sojers' again, and show the Pa'son the way."

"Perhaps you've brought the wrong book, sir," may turn out to be the impregnable defence of the real Church of England against the zealots of the House of Clergy.

### *Antipater of Sidon*

WHERE, Corinth, charm incarnate, are your shrines?  
Your citadel? Your towered wall? Your line  
Of noble women? Your ancient treasure?  
And that ten thousand of your people lost?

War wreaked on you his hideous ravishment;  
We, we alone, Nereids inviolate,  
Remain to weep, with the sea-birds to chant:  
Corinth is lost, Corinth is desolate.

H. D.

# SIGNS OF THE TIMES

MADAME TUSSAUD'S.—For many persons Madame Tussaud's has ever persisted curiously in the memory, lingering with a definition which cannot be quite explained. The strangeness and diversity of human endeavour manifested there always seemed to fascinate the recollection ; and its humble, naive style had long since grown into a novelty. Indeed Time, which had conquered most other waxworks, had formed with Madame Tussaud's an alliance which he perpetually strengthened and cherished, so that in these latter days it came to possess a certain intrinsic interest as an exhibition. That was perhaps half its charm ; that there existed, unchanged in outlook, although augmented in property, an institution which had entertained our grandfathers ; although its attraction, moulded into delicacy in this recognition, was still firmly centred in the wax figures themselves.

There is a most singular impressiveness about a ceroplastic image, modelled to have a lively semblance to the individual. Charles II. peers through the scratched glass panes of his case in Westminster Abbey in a truly remarkable way. He peeps out, not as a king, but as the wax image of a king, stolidly, deadly, a funeral semblance of wax. That is his significance, a semblance. Yet how real and vital is the thought of him, as was that of Fouquier-Tinville, Robespierre, Carrier, or Marie Antoinette, whose features, modelled after execution by order of the National Convention, were in Madame Tussaud's. Those lost days, closing in the agony of death, seemed to filter, real and rigid, from the poor crimson wax on their necks . . .

The Chamber of Horrors was a misnomer. It was never precisely that. It was, more than anything else, another statement of interrupted life, of murderers, prisoners, assassins who perished suddenly on the judg-



## THE ADELPHI

ment of their fellow men. Their crimes seemed to surround them quietly, yet the impression—so strangely compelled by the graven, gloomy features—was always one of abrupt, cleaving termination. The whole gallery was a monument, more consistently convincing to the imagination than any similar exhibition, to ceaseless change, futile endeavour and to the continuity of human experience.

There appears to have been a necessary distinction between this solidity of semblance, and the utter lifelessness which could not be denied to many of the exhibits. When they were intended to represent pictorially alone they were least successful. Tableaux of kings and queens were quite meaningless, although to many of the visitors they were as traditionally valuable as most others. That was a curious fact, though in part responsible for the popularity of the exhibition, and exemplifying that affection for what had pleased their fathers before them.

Those relics so ably reflecting, in their singular manner, the violent action of the French Revolution and the Napoleonic period which were consumed in the recent fire, together with much useless wax, can never be replaced, and it is doubtful if Mr. Tussaud's words : " We shall be born again," will be fully realized. The charm of his exhibition went away in smoke as intangible as itself.—A. G.

PICTURE-SELLING.—It has become necessary for the writer to discover under what conditions modern pictures are sold and to what people other than the few almost " professional " picture-collectors. Investigation of recent exhibitions—especially of an exhibition famed for its quality as a market—revealed the fact that casual purchase of pictures depends chiefly upon idea—a cow well seen and drawn, for instance, has no advantage *from the selling point of view* over one badly

## SIGNS OF THE TIMES

done. The work of those artists who depend upon their technical skill, a class dominant to-day, is, it would appear, bought for the most part by amateurs in the branch in which the artists specialize.

For the benefit of an imaginary person who is adopting art as a profession, I have drawn out in my notebook the table below :

TO CATCH	IT IS NECESSARY TO PRODUCE
1. Casual purchasers.	Work of any class with emphasized idea.
2. Amateurs.	Work of any class with emphasized technique.
3. Connoisseurs.	Portraits and subject pictures with emphasized reference to the old masters.

(2) is the most difficult of the three classes to attempt, but provides the quicker return for capital outlay ; (3) is undoubtedly the course to recommend to the young person of moderate gifts, as it will also bring good Press notices, which are often valuable.

Good framing is essential, but this can safely be left to any well-known framer. Cheap framing will take quite 50 per cent. of the value of a picture away in the eyes of an intending purchaser, though he will very often not be aware of it.—E. F.

JAZZ.—Though I am not a professional musician, I know something of the technique of music and I would like to express my wonder at the form which popular music has now taken. It is no longer a watered-down version of what is loosely termed "classical" music, but is absolutely distinct from it, employing as it does instruments which, with the exception of the trumpet and cornet (usually played muted with the hand or

## THE ADELPHI

top-hat), and the piano, are unknown to the concert orchestra.

Some of the tunes which this music employs are undoubtedly humorous and entertaining in themselves, and perhaps this is the reason for its popularity (one must remember that bands playing the music can easily fill the Queen's Hall), but since whatever individuality the tunes may possess is immediately and invariably stamped out by them by an exaggerated monotonous rhythm, in combination with meaningless solo work for the various instruments comprising the band, it is not easy to see how this music maintains its hold on the public.

I would not have troubled THE ADELPHI with this minor point, except that it is impossible to go into any place of amusement at the present moment without hearing these too familiar sounds. By the way, the orchestras providing the sounds have fanciful titles. One such band advertises itself as "The Shakespeare-Rutterford Rhythmonic Combination"!—J. H. W.

CROSS-WORD PUZZLES.—Cross-word enthusiasts can be roughly divided into two main groups. There are those who, in their march through this mechanised world, set an almost symbolic value upon the activity, as a test of ingenuity *per se*; and there are those who, instinctively frightened of loneliness, seek alliance of any kind, and assume that alliance is stabilized by wholesale participation.

Further examination compels us to transfer, temporarily at least, many from the first group to the second, and makes the boundary impermanent. For it will be perhaps admitted that the pleasure of solving any puzzle, as distinct from the pleasure involved in pronouncing upon its "goodness," is limited entirely by the ability of the intelligence; while its "goodness"



## SIGNS OF THE TIMES

varies as the process of solving has, consciously or unconsciously, flattered the vanity of the solver.

A riddle is propounded to the intelligence ; unraveling proceeds apace to solution ; and two effects arise, shared by the thousands of minds which accepted the riddle. The first is the common bond of triumph, the second a presumed ascendancy over the intelligence of the author. The second brings a curious addition to personal and intellectual security.

It is interesting to observe the policies successively adopted by the popular Press, which exists for the specious purpose of welding such "civilized" alliances, in return for pennies.

Interest was revived after the decline of the first, "geometrical" era by resorting to unsymmetrical designs and erratica contrived in the form of houses, dogs, top-hats, and other objects. Care was even taken to set out the clues in rhyme, after the manner of acrostics. A second decline was followed by a third period, in which the words suggested by the clues were "curtailed," "beheaded," and abbreviated, and much ingenuity was expended in devising time-limits for solution. To maintain interest, recourse was even had to mechanically ingenious aids, resulting in tedious, inevitable repetitions of certain words.

Along a totally different line of evolution, the services of eminent persons were engaged for the construction of the puzzles. This line of development seemed promising, but it prematurely revealed its limitations by the fact that the most eminent person so far engaged has been Mr. Gilbert Frankau. This suggests the nice abstract problem : What degree of eminence is compatible with being generally accepted as an authoritative deviser of cross-word puzzles? Or, in the concrete : Which would be the greatest personal triumph for the greatest number of cross-word devotees—to solve Dean Inge's puzzle, or Sir Oliver Lodge's, or

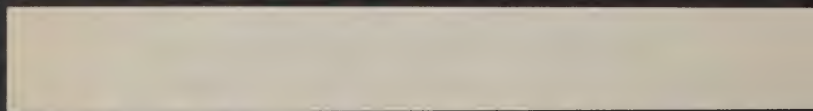
## THE ADELPHI

SIR Arthur Conan Doyle's—remember what Sherlock Holmes has done for spiritualism—or Steve Donoghue's, or Horatio Bottomley's, or Winston Churchill's, or Montagu Newton's, or Mrs. Asquith's? Let the *Daily Mail* decide.

Certain more serious speculators, who believe that a definite vision or message may be communicated by a group of words not linked in grammatical sequence but co-ordinated by an original thought, have suggested that possibly some higher mind, making use of a cross-word-puzzle-author's intelligence, may actually convey a message to each of the many solvers' minds. Such a possibility, though apparently at variance with the practice of the popular Press, is an interesting hypothesis.—E. H. O.

. . . . The pages that are missing were removed because they were advertisements.





# CONTENTS

	PAGE
A THEOLOGICAL ENCOUNTER. By JOHN MIDDLETON	
MURRY ... ..	77
ESTHER'S DAUGHTER. By SARAH GERTRUDE MILLIN	89
THE LOVE STORY OF LADY MARY MONTAGUE.	
By G. H. STEVENSON ... ..	95
RETURN: A POEM. By WILLIAM SOUTAR ... ..	105
ADVERTISING AND JOURNALISM. By HENRY	
KING ... ..	106
A NIGHT ON PICQUET. By IAN MARS ... ..	112
THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB	
"H. W. M." By J. M. Murry ... ..	125
"The Cherry Orchard." By Arnold Gibbons ... ..	129
The Complaint of the Schoolmistress. By Vera McCormick ...	131
The Find. By H. Bardsley ... ..	132
Epstein in the Park. By Edward Fazackerley ... ..	135
Death as a Solution. By S. G. Millin ... ..	136
ON WIRELESS AND NIGHTINGALES. By THE	
JOURNEYMAN ... ..	138
SIGNS OF THE TIMES	
"Towards the Stars" ... ..	146
Noel Coward ... ..	147
Posters ... ..	149
BOOKS TO READ ... ..	150
NOTABLE NOVELS AND SHORT STORIES ... ..	152

[ALL RIGHTS RESERVED]

**"Luvisca"**  
REGD  
**SHIRTS**

**PYJAMAS & SOFT COLLARS**

*leave absolutely nothing to be desired  
either in the matter of wear or appearance*

Look for the  
**"LUVISCA" TAB**  
on every Gar-  
ment. None  
genuine without.

If any difficulty  
in obtaining write  
**COURTAULDS,**  
**LTD.** (Dept. 42M.),  
19, Alderman-  
bury, London,  
E.C.2, who will  
send you name of  
nearest retailer  
and descriptive  
booklet.

By the new

**P&O**

Oil-burning



Steamship **RANCHI** 16,600 tons.  
15,000 Horse-power.



## A PLEASURE CRUISE **NORWAY**

OF THE NORTHERN CAPITALS

23 Days Aug. 15 to Sept. 7

### FARES from 30 GUINEAS

ON this cruise passengers will have a brand new P. & O. liner as their pleasure yacht at sea and their floating hotel in port. The "RANCHI," the second to be completed of four beautiful 16,600-ton vessels designed for the Indian Mail Service, has four passenger decks; an electric passenger lift; handsomely appointed public rooms, including lounge; writing and card room; smoking saloons and large airy and well-lighted dining saloons; broad promenade decks; a first-class orchestra and a skilled culinary staff. There is a limited number of *cabines-de-luxe*. The cabins are unusually large, and not more than two passengers will be berthed in any cabin unless by request. Besides exploring the beautiful Sogne and Hardanger Fjords, the "RANCHI" will visit the more attractive of the northern capital cities. A plan of the itinerary is shown above.

A programme picturing the "RANCHI," and her Cruise, with a cabin plan and any desired further information may be had on application as below:—

### SUMMER DAYS AT SEA.

**P  
&  
O**

Every Friday (April-September) one may embark in the P. & O. India-Mail Steamer (10,000 to 21,000 tons) at **REDUCED SUMMER RETURN FARES** with **REDUCED HOTEL TARIFFS** for Gibraltar (Morocco\* and Spain), Marseilles (Provence and Rhone Valley)—Perfect climatic conditions. Travel, at sea and ashore, of unsurpassed interest. Tours from 14 days in duration, with 3,000 or 4,000 miles of health-giving sea passage at a cost (afloat and ashore) of about £18 (2nd cl.) to £23 (1st cl.).

(\*Gibraltar to Morocco by  
Bland Line.)

### SHORT SEA TOURS

FOR ILLUSTRATED HANDBOOK  
APPLY AS BELOW.

## P. & O. CHIEF PASSENGER OFFICE

(F. H. Grosvenor, Manager),

P. & O. HOUSE, 14, COCKSPUR ST., LONDON, S.W.1

**INDIA & CEYLON—Special Tourist Fares, December—January.—Apply as Above.**

# The Adelphi

---

VOL. III. NO. 2.

JULY, 1925

---

## A THEOLOGICAL ENCOUNTER

By John Middleton Murry

**I**N *The Guardian* of May 8th last an able theologian criticized, with an unexpected tolerance, some recent remarks of mine on "Personality and Immortality." I was greatly interested in this writer's views, first, because I found them extremely difficult to grasp in spite of the obvious skill with which they were presented, and secondly, because his habit of mind was unfamiliar to me. Though I have read a little in Thomas Aquinas and a little more in some of the mediæval Christian mystics, I am a complete stranger to the thoughts and methods of modern theology.

I have never doubted that the very personal views which I have from time to time expressed in these pages had points of contact (though probably of hostile contact) with the conceptions of modern theology. To have ascertained precisely where these points of contact, or conflict, lay would have meant my going too far out of my way; for I regard myself primarily as a literary critic who has been forced by circumstances, both private and professional, to wander for a season in the debatable land wherein both literature and religion find their culmination. I have been involved, *invitâ Minervâ*, in a voyage of discovery, but not in a punitive expedition. The notion of making a *détour* in search of



## THE ADELPHI

enemies is to me fantastic : I have found quite enough, unsought, on my own road and in my own profession.

But now that an able modern theologian has planted himself squarely in my path, I have no choice but to deal with him to the best of my ability, just as I should try to deal with any literary critic who seriously opposed my views.

My critic begins his article by admitting the difficulties and ambiguities which surround the conception of "immortality." "From time to time, therefore, it becomes a duty to face the difficulties and examine with care the nature of the doctrine peculiar to the Church."

What could be more admirable? I am filled with hope and expectation. It seems to me almost a matter for regret that I should at this moment appear to interrupt the exposition. Nevertheless, I do appear with my statement that there is no paradox in "the simultaneous assertion of a disbelief in personal immortality and a disbelief in annihilation." To this my critic replies that "the thought of an immortality less than personal is both ancient and various in form." There is, for example, the "attenuated immortality of fame" (excellent phrase !), the immortality of the species, and the immortality which "consists in reabsorption into the one Eternal Mind."

At this point I must demur. My statement that I find no paradox in simultaneously disbelieving both in personal immortality and in annihilation has been quite arbitrarily interpreted. Did I say that I believed in an immortality "*less than personal*"? Might it not be, did not my own article persistently imply, that I believed in an immortality that is *more* than personal? Did I not maintain that "personality," in any current and intelligible use of the word, is a limitation which at various moments of our mortal lives we do in fact transcend, and thereby make contact with a deeper and a truer self? Did I not assert that these momentary

## A THEOLOGICAL ENCOUNTER

and profound experiences of a self beyond, and greater than, "personality" are indeed our "intimations of immortality," and the only ones we have? I tried to make this clear; I believe I did make it clear. Why then am I straightway represented as saying that I believed in an immortality *less* than personal?

I am convinced that this serious and to me crucial misrepresentation of my statements was not deliberate. The internal evidence proves that my critic is an honourable man. Therefore I conclude that this misrepresentation was instinctive: for him an immortality which is other than personal *must* be *less* than personal. By what necessity, save one of his own temperament?

Henceforward, he is incapacitated from criticizing my belief. He is not controverting me, but some imaginary disputant whom he endows with my name. All that I can conclude from his inability to grasp what I did say is that my conception of immortality is not that of the Church. I never supposed it was. What I do know is that some of the greatest sons of the Church have held a belief that is not, in essence, unlike my own. But of the doctrine of the Church itself I know nothing, for the simple reason that I have never been able to understand it when well-meaning people have tried to present it to me.

Fortunately, it is precisely on this point of the Church doctrine of immortality that my critic proposes to instruct me. "Christianity, it is needless to add," he goes on, "can be satisfied with none of these," that is to say, these doctrines of an immortality less than personal. "Moreover, we cannot remind ourselves too often that faith in 'the resurrection of the body' is radically distinct from the pagan belief in the immortality of the soul." Here, I fancy, "should be" is more appropriate than "is." Otherwise, what need to remind yourself so often? And, as a matter of history, that "pagan" doctrine of the immortality of the soul

## THE ADELPHI

had a very potent influence in softening the asperities of the primitive Christian belief in "the resurrection of the body."

Still, my critic is right in insisting that the distinctively Christian belief is in the resurrection, and the immortality, of the body. What I should like to know is whether he *believes* in it? Whether, indeed, any theologian who is not content with the vain repetition of a dogmatic clause, does believe in it. I understand Saint Paul when he declares: "We know not yet what we shall be"; I can attach no meaning to a vague and general declaration of faith in "the resurrection of the body." I am not saying that those who make that declaration are insincere or perfunctory: I do not know what other men can believe. I merely insist that the mind of a man who can honestly declare that he believes in "the resurrection of the body" is utterly different from my own. I take it for granted that my critic does believe it, simply, literally, without reservations or symbolic interpretations. He must, for he says, and I agree, that it is the central and distinctive doctrine of the Christian Church. Yet his next paragraph, the substance of which I have met before in Christian apologetic, would make me doubtful.

We venture to say that "the resurrection of the body" represents, in a philosophical sense, an immense advance upon the older doctrine of the soul's escape from its material prison or tomb. The Christian view is the one effective protest against a dualism which can only end in intellectual disaster. Thus alone does "the body" cease to be a disparate and inimical substance, and thus does the "resurrection of the body" come to signify the survival or restoration of personality in the eternal life.

On that paragraph one could write volumes. Let me simply ask one or two questions. Was Plato's fate really intellectual disaster? Is "the resurrection of the body" a philosophical doctrine at all? Does belief in it make the body cease to be a disparate and inimical



## A THEOLOGICAL ENCOUNTER

substance? Did it have that effect on Saint Paul, or on countless Christian ascetics who have followed his noble and vertiginous example? How does "the resurrection of the body" *come to signify* (dangerous phrase!) anything at all but what it says? If it is become simply a symbol of some ineffable condition, as Jesus' answer to the Sadducees indicates that he held it to be, then why not proclaim it openly?

At this point, however, I re-enter the debate.

Mr. Murry appears to argue, strangely enough, that because "this personality" is mortal, it cannot be this same personality which is to pass into the immortal condition. As well almost might one argue that the identity of a human being could not survive the cutting of his wisdom teeth. Outside abstractions like the mathematical unit, there is no identity which does not endure in spite of—nay rather, because of—perpetual development and change. Were human personality—the most complex of all things known to us—exempt from this law, it would indeed be strange.

Such reasoning, I confess, seems to me disingenuous. The *conception* of "personality" is difficult, so is the *conception* of life; but the fact of personality is capable of being apprehended as simply as the fact of life. We know what we mean when we speak of personal possessions or personal charm; we know what men are asking for when they ask for personal immortality, and what they think they are getting when the theologian tells them that Christianity offers it to them. They ask to be reunited with their loved ones, or to be given some share of the earthly felicity that was denied them. The theologian who promises personal immortality promises men that they shall have such things as these. If he were to say to them: "No, the life everlasting is something infinitely better, an ineffable condition, wherein they are neither married nor given in marriage, and all mundane conceptions, including that of personality itself, are meaningless, a condition which transcends the



## THE ADELPHI

human existence that we know as far as human existence itself transcends the existence of the brute creation," they would reply : " That is not what we want, that is not what you promised." Nor would they be satisfied if they were told : " But, my friends, I promised you personality. The conception of personality is fraught with difficulties. But, in general, I may inform you there is no personality which does not endure in spite of—nay, rather because of—perpetual development and change."

On any hypothesis, pagan or Christian (my critic proceeds), the philosophy of body and soul is infinitely difficult. . . . It scarcely follows, however, that the whole problem is beyond the range of rational discussion. " If we put resolutely aside the dogmas of theologians," says Mr. Murry, " and refuse to accept anything but the immediate experience of mankind . . . it is to these ' intimations of immortality ' that we are reduced for the basis of a faith concerning the spiritual reality of man." On the same principle, we might offer to put aside the dogmas of scientists, and to stick to " the immediate experience of mankind " as the basis of our faith concerning the nature of matter. The two proposals are, in fact, about equally intelligent. Wordsworthian intimations, chorus-endings from Euripides, and so forth, are challenges to the intelligence, not substitutes for thought. The poet's vision, no doubt, is untranslatable into argument, but so is a pain in one's finger. Theologians attempt to explain one kind of experience, physiologists another. The best of their theories or " dogmas " may be no more than shadows; but, as long as men are afflicted with rationality, so long will such theories continue to appear.

Let me pause at this paragraph : it needs some unravelling. Suddenly we find that the dogmas of theologians concerning immortality are on the same footing as the dogmas of scientists concerning matter. If my critic were a stupid man, I should pass this by as a mere stupidity. Since he is clever, I must suspect him of trying to throw dust in his readers' eyes. For surely this is a travesty of argument.

## A THEOLOGICAL ENCOUNTER

A scientist, *quâ* scientist, has no dogmas. He has hypotheses which he propounds as an explanation of certain facts; the moment a new fact is discovered that is outside the scope of his hypothesis, the hypothesis is discarded and a new one sought. Science is, by nature, completely undogmatic. Therefore, to declare that my proposal to put aside the dogmas of theologians concerning immortality is equivalent or analogous to putting aside the dogmas of scientists concerning matter is either to be nonsensical, or to imply that the dogmas of theologians are merely hypotheses. That, I gather from the concluding sentence, is what my critic means to imply. Or does he merely mean to seem to imply it? He cannot seriously suggest that the theological dogma of "the resurrection of the body" is a hypothesis? That is a simple fact, for the simple Christian; not a fact at all, for the sceptic. Therefore, I presume that he means that the explanations given by theology of this "fact" are merely hypothetical. I can well believe it.

But the incidental definition of theology interests me. "Theology explains one kind of experience; physiology another." Let us, for clarity's sake, stick to one particular question: "the resurrection of the body." Two things are really combined in that phrase. One is a belief in the reality of the resurrection of Jesus in the body; the other is a declaration of belief that all men will be resurrected in the body. One is therefore a belief in the reality of a certain event in history, the other a belief in a certain future event. These are, I presume, the experiences which theology explains. How does it explain them? For the first, I suppose, no explanation is possible or necessary. If you believe that Jesus did indeed rise bodily from the dead. You simply believe that the Gospel narratives of the resurrection, with all their insuperable discrepancies, are true: the event really happened, and hap-

## THE ADELPHI

pened in several different ways at the same time. I do not see what theology can explain in this ; history, psychology, or anthropology might attempt an explanation of the discrepancy of those narratives, on the assumption that the event did not really happen, but was sincerely believed to have happened. But I cannot see what explanation theology can give, or needs to give. The fact was a fact.

And, if this fact was indeed a fact, what necessity is there for theology to seek or give an explanation of the future resurrection of all men bodily from the dead? If the past fact was a fact, there is no difficulty in believing in the future fact. Yet apparently there are difficulties ; hypotheses have to be framed and theories propounded, "so long as mankind is afflicted with rationality." This is the task and function of theology—to supply rational explanations of matters of faith. It strikes me as a chimerical and fantastic occupation. It was all very well in the Middle Ages, when theological conceptions were the only intellectual conceptions which men possessed, and, for example, substance or matter could be easily and naturally identified with God. Then the theological and the rational activity were one. But now they are separated ; and theology (as distinct from the history of theology) presents the pathetic spectacle of trying to find scientific support for beliefs and facts which science cannot recognize.

My critic's next paragraph supplies me with an illuminating example :—

Annihilation is a doctrine repudiated by natural philosophy in the very hour of its birth. In the lower grades of Nature, where the corruption of one thing is the origin of another, the thread of individuality does indeed appear to be broken at every transition. Yet it has to be remembered that individuality itself, vague and hazy at the lower levels, is for ever advancing towards clearer definition in the long evolutionary process towards human personality. Analogy in such a case, though it must fall



## A THEOLOGICAL ENCOUNTER

far short of proof, is strong enough to authorize the suggestion that the virtual immortality of the germ-plasm may be an anticipation or symbol of the real immortality of the individual soul.

What on earth has the continuity of the germ-plasm to do with the resurrection of the body or personal immortality? Nothing at all. Moreover, it seems a little—let me speak softly—inconsistent, first to reproach me (falsely) with believing in a “less than personal” immortality, and then to offer me as “a symbol” of the true doctrine the least personal kind of immortality my mind can conceive. Is that what theology calls “explaining an experience”? I should call it whittling away an article of faith, in order that some people who are slightly afflicted with rationality may be able to say, “I believe in the continuity of the germ-plasm,” but to pronounce it, “I believe in the resurrection of the body and the life everlasting.” To my non-theological mind there is a difference between these things, and I infinitely prefer the attitude of old Tertullian: *Credo quia impossibile est*. Then I know where I am; I am bewildered by a science which makes its business to demonstrate (by analogy) that the impossible is possible.

At this point, however, my critic returns, takes his foot off the scientific stool, and plants it, rather circumspectly, on the religious.

The Christian faith in resurrection rests, however, on no analogies [Why, then, I cannot refrain from asking, make use of them?], but primarily upon belief in the resurrection of Christ as a historical fact. Of those who deny the reality of that alleged event [curious phrase!], something like one hundred per cent. deny it not (as they suppose) for purely historical reasons, but upon some *a priori* ground.

What is a *purely* historical reason, I wonder, in the view of my critic? Does the fact that the narratives of that “alleged event” are hopelessly contradictory



## THE ADELPHI

constitute a purely historical reason for rejecting them? If it does (and I think of none purer), then the purely historical objection is overwhelming. But it may be said there is the same, or at least a similar, purely historical reason for rejecting all the Gospel narratives of the life of Jesus. If we deny that he rose from the dead on purely historical grounds, then we must be consistent and deny that he ever lived at all. Very few people are foolish enough to deny that. To this extent, therefore, my critic is correct in saying that the great majority of those who deny the fact of the resurrection do not deny it on purely historical grounds.

But that does not mean that the reasons for which they deny it are *a priori* reasons. They have to deal, in the case of the Gospel narratives of the resurrection of Jesus, with four utterly discrepant narratives of an event which is unparalleled in human experience. Still, it is true that even if those narratives were concordant in every detail, they would reject them. But still not on *a priori* grounds. The *a priorism* is to be imputed to those who maintain that a miracle did, in fact, occur, not to those who deny the possibility of miracle. They reject the Gospel narratives of the resurrection of Jesus in the body, on precisely the same grounds that they reject Livy's prodigies, or the mediæval accounts of men with eyes in their stomachs ; and so do I.

But in absolutely rejecting these narratives I am far from denying that Mary of Magdala, or Peter, or Paul, had a real experience of the existence of Jesus after his mortal death. There may well be, and I for my own part believe that there are, conditions —“ whether in the body or out of the body ”—in which soul may make contact with soul ; that men have moments of exaltation when they for an instant possess faculties and acquire knowledge which are quite incommensurable with their ordinary faculties and ordinary knowledge, and cannot be translated into their terms. And I believe that men

## A THEOLOGICAL ENCOUNTER

and women who loved such a man as Jesus was as passionately as his followers loved him certainly did have such moments of exaltation and communion. They described their experiences according to their conceptions and their powers ; if they had been educated men of the twentieth century they would have described them differently : that is all.

And here, I think, I touch the root of my dissatisfaction with my critic's attitude, which is, I presume, typical of contemporary theology. It seems to me an attitude that is half of this century and half of rustic Palestine in the first century. It wants to sit on two stools at once, and has acquired the art of transferring itself from one to the other with such rapidity that a momentary illusion is created. Sober reflection tells me that the theologian *cannot* be sitting on both at the same moment ; but there is a whirl, a commotion, and a glitter, my eyes are dazzled, and it seems for one incredible second that the two positions have coalesced. It is acrobatics or prestidigitation. Hence comes the general distrust of modern theology and the general disrepute into which it is fallen.

Is it presumptuous to suggest that the only way for modern theology to rehabilitate itself is for it to become truly modern. By that I mean that it should base itself squarely on a critical attitude (which is not a merely sceptical attitude) to the Gospel narratives and the New Testament as a whole. The religious substance that is contained in them, the personality, the teaching, the heroism, the influence of Jesus, the story of the greatest of all human tragedies and the greatest of all human victories, would suffer no diminution. The religious experience exists ; it has been and always will be the most universal means of communion with the reality that eludes all intellectual search. There would still be a God, still a devoted and heroic Mediator and Saviour, of whom it would still be true that

## THE ADELPHI

where two or three are gathered together in his name, there is he in the midst of them. The choice in these modern times is not between dogmatic Christianity and no Christianity, as perhaps it was two hundred or a hundred years ago ; nor, again, is it a choice between dogmatic Christianity and a kind of ethical humanitarianism. The personality, the teaching, and the heroism of Jesus were not made of benevolence and uplift ; he did not preach what Renan called " *la délicieuse théologie de l'amour.*" As we see him, and we can see him plainly enough if we look hard enough, he was the man who had the fullest religious experience in human history, and who lived and died completely in accordance with the fullness of his knowledge. For every gentle saying the humanitarians would anthologize there is a hard and terrible one which a truly modern theology would not even desire to extenuate. This harmony in a living man of complete joy in life and complete rejection of it, of extreme love and extreme anger, made Jesus what he believed he was, the Messiah indeed, the prophetic type of perfect man.

There has lived but one man whose life and words and works and death were such that countless generations of men have felt that he who conquered life *must* have conquered also the last enemy, death. The essential Christian faith in the resurrection of the body rests not on the fact of resurrection of Jesus from the dead, which is no fact at all, but on the fact, which is a fact, that no one who knows him (and we can know him as well as the men who saw him) has ever been able to believe that he died. Somehow or other they have created an immortality for him, and always the highest immortality that they could truly conceive. Let modern theology do the same ; then it will not need to call " the virtual immortality of the germ-plasm " to its aid.



# ESTHER'S DAUGHTER

By Sarah Gertrude Millin

## I.

ONE thing that used to annoy our cook Alita very much was the fact that Esther, the cook next door, being coloured, could ride in a tram, while she, Alita, being black, could not.

"In Bloemfontein," she said, "they don't make this nonsense. In Bloemfontein it is not as here, in Johannesburg. The first thing is they don't let the Indians or the Chinamen live there at all. And the second thing is that there a Bastaard is a black person and not a white person, and we don't any of us ride in the tram. Black or brown or yellow, it is all the same. And so it should be."

But, of course, Alita never let Esther know that she had heart-burnings over the social distinctions which exist in Johannesburg between black and brown. Indeed, she even went so far as to tell her that she would much rather walk the two miles to town than be grudgingly accommodated, as is Esther, on top of a tram.

"I am my master's and my missis's Kaffir," she said to her, "but not everybody's Kaffir."

Whether Esther really believed, as she self-consciously stepped on the tram, and rode past poor, trudging Alita, that Alita did not envy her her privilege, I should not like to say.

But, in any case, Alita has had her revenge.



## THE ADELPHI

### II.

It was not only the matter of tram-riding that troubled Alita in her relationship with Esther. It was that Esther generally put on airs with Alita.

Quite soon after Esther arrived next door, Alita went to see her. She pressed her white apron very carefully, and she put on her Sunday head-cloth, and she brought as an offering a pumpkin of her own growing and some mint, which we are unsuccessfully trying to eradicate from the flower-beds.

Esther accepted the pumpkin and the mint, and Alita stayed for about half-an-hour gallantly making formal conversation about the Church and the rain and things like that. I say "gallantly" because, from what I could gather, Esther did not give Alita much encouragement. "I think, missis," Alita explained wistfully, "I think Esther is going to keep herself high with me."

That was not treatment to which Alita is accustomed. Even the white nurse-girls stop their perambulators while Alita leans over to comment on the beauty of their charges, and the bigger children who walk with the nurses have learnt to expect that Alita will give them the sweets she buys with the money she makes by the sale of bones and bottles. They even come, the nurses and children, to play in our back garden.

Esther apparently did not realize that Alita was a privileged person in our street.

"Perhaps she feels strange," I comforted Alita. "Perhaps she will behave differently when she comes to see you."

"*Will* she come to see me?" said Alita.

We both awaited with anxiety the return call of Esther.

### III.

But the weeks passed and Esther did not come. She sent the house boy sometimes to borrow house-

## ESTHER'S DAUGHTER

hold things, she spoke a chance word or two over the garden wall, but she never herself walked into our kitchen to have a little friendly chat with Alita.

In a way, I did not exactly blame Esther. It was not as if, like the nursemaids, she was so safe about her colour that there could be no question of equality between her and Alita. After all, even white people are like that. They are less friendly with oncoming potential associates than they are with their unquestionable inferiors.

And then Esther was, in other ways too, in a difficult position. She really had to hold on most desperately to what was hers. The trouble with Esther was that she had once had a white husband, and that her child had inherited his white skin. What would Esther's daughter say if she saw her mother hobnobbing with Alita?

Alita pointed Elizabeth out to me one day as she was walking past our house to see her mother.

"Missis! Quick! Make as if you are not looking. It is the daughter of Esther. It is Elizabeth."

"That white girl!"

Alita nodded. She had created the sensation she wanted to create. I really was surprised. For I have seen colour manifesting itself in many ways, but I have not seen anything stranger than that a thoroughly brown woman like Esther should have a child as fair as Elizabeth.

"The nursemaid that comes here with the twins," Alita went on, "tells me that this Elizabeth has got a young man, and he works on one of the mines. His name is Mr. Periguano."

I noted how Alita gave to the man his courtesy title, but not to the girl who was the daughter of Esther.

"He must be an Italian," I commented, and it ran quickly through my mind that if Elizabeth should, by an unlucky chance, have very dark children, it could

## THE ADELPHI

always be pointed out that they were of Italian descent. I was relieved to think that Elizabeth was going to marry an Italian.

But Alita denied Elizabeth's young man the grandeur that was Rome.

"He is not an Italian, missis. They say he is English, or perhaps Irish, and that his hair is red."

"Periguano is not an English or Irish name, Alita," I said.

Alita yielded politely.

"Missis knows, of course. But still that is what he is called. I have heard it with my own ears. Mr. Periguano."

"You have not seen him yourself?" I asked.

Alita shook her head.

"He does not visit Esther," she said very pleasantly.

### IV.

And why was that, I wondered. Why did not Mr. Periguano visit his future mother-in-law? . . .

Esther was always going about these days with sewing in her hand. So Alita told me. "She is making things for her daughter like the white people have. In two months' time they are going to marry. It will be a grand wedding, I hear, with flower-girls and what-not, and Esther is putting all her money in the post-office for the wedding-dress. Missis, I would like very much to see that wedding."

"Well, you can go if you want to," I told her.

"I would not give Esther the pleasure," said Alita, "to stand like a dog outside the church making 'Aie-e' when her daughter walks in to get married."

Nevertheless, in the end, she did go. "I will stand behind the crowd," she said. "As long as Esther does not see me, that is all that matters."

She returned after an hour, and I asked her how it had been.

## ESTHER'S DAUGHTER

There was, I thought, a curiously charged expression on Alita's face, as if she were primed to the very edge with excitement. Although she spoke equably, it was only, I could see, from the surface.

"Well, and so the people came, missis, and there were three motor-cars. In one was Mr. Periguano with a friend, and it is true he has red hair. And in another was Elizabeth with a man, and the flower girls, and in another were folk I don't know. Then some came in carriages, and some came walking. And everyone was really white, missis."

And did the bride look beautiful?"

Alita made a sound signifying the very absolute in appreciation. "Missis should have seen her. The veil and the lace and the dress all full of beads. I can swear that dress must have cost Esther more than a little money. Perhaps five pounds. No, what do I say? Five pounds? Six or seven pounds even!"

I expressed my overwhelmed astonishment.

"And Esther?" I asked. "What was she wearing? Had she a nice dress, too?"

Alita did not reply. It was the dramatic pause. I had leapt to the very heart of Alita's story.

"Esther?" she said, tasting privately her thrilling climax.

"Yes. How did she look?"

"Esther?" Alita repeated in a quiet, demure voice. "No, she was not looking very wonderful. She came just as missis can see her every day."

I certainly was surprised.

"But why was that? Was it because all her money was spent on Elizabeth's clothes?"

Alita shook her head.

"No, missis."

She spread out her arms, and delivered herself of her news. "No, it was not for that. It was because it did not matter how Esther looked. Esther, my missis,



## THE ADELPHI

was not in the motor cars. She was not in the carriages. She was not in the church. Esther . . . . Esther was standing at the back of the crowd where Alita was standing. And when Elizabeth drives past, she puts out her head, and she makes a little noise in her throat, and then she quickly hides herself that Elizabeth shall not see her. And I too—that she may not be shamed more—I look too as if I don't see Esther. And that, missis, is how Esther went to her child's wedding."

It was not necessary that Alita should speak further. We both understood what had happened between Esther and Elizabeth. Elizabeth had married white, and was done with her mother. Quite probably Mr. Periguano had never even seen his mother-in-law, and knew nothing of Elizabeth's African blood.

"Are you not sorry for Esther, Alita?" I asked, after a few moments.

"Yes, I am sorry," said Alita. "I hoped evil would happen to Esther because she kept herself proud with me. I said, in my heart, 'Let the Old Man on High show Esther what it is to feel as she makes Alita feel.' But now I wish He had not listened to me."

### V.

In the newspaper next morning I saw the announcement of a marriage between Joseph Baragwanath and Elizabeth Twentyman. For a second it conveyed nothing to me. Then I realized that Joseph Baragwanath must be Alita's Mr. Periguano; and I thought to myself how, if Elizabeth's children were not white, she would not, after all, be able to excuse their colour by an Italian ancestry.

# THE LOVE-STORY OF LADY MARY MONTAGUE

*By* G. H. Stevenson

THE story of Lady Mary Wortley Montague's marriage is well known. No match could have been more romantic or have ended so strangely.

A daughter of Evelyn Pierrepont, afterwards Duke of Kingston, she was born in May, 1689, and was fourteen ("I came young into the hurry of the world," so on one occasion she writes pathetically to her lover) when she first attracted the notice of Mr. Edward Wortley. Six years later we find her in intimate correspondence with his sister. Girlish, gushing effusions are those "long scrawls," as she calls them, though even they are not without their shrewd humour and salt of wit. Only hearken to these scraps of wisdom that the sweating postboy carried from Thoresby that summer of 1709. "I believe more follies are committed out of complaisance to the world than in following our own inclinations! . . ." "Nature is seldom in the wrong—custom always. . . ." "All people who fall in love with furniture, clothes, equipage . . . I look upon no less in the wrong than when they were five years old, and doated on shells, pebbles, and hobby-horses."

Mrs. Anne Wortley twits her young friend with being in love. "I passed the days of Nottingham Races," protests the lady, "without seeing or wishing to see one of the sex. . . . Pray, tell me the name of him I love that I may sigh to the woods and groves hereabouts and teach it to the echo. . . . You see, being

## THE ADELPHI

in love, I am willing to be so in order and rule." And then : " What do you mean by this reproach of inconstancy? . . . To be capable of preferring the despicable wretch you mention to Mr. Wortley is as ridiculous if not as criminal as forsaking the Deity to worship a calf ! "

Her first letter to the brother of " the woman I tenderly loved " (for " my dear, dear Mrs. Wortley is dead ") is dated March 28th, 1710, and is a note, " the 'first I ever writ to one of your sex and shall be the last " thanking him for some copies of the *Tatler*. That Mr. Wortley had slipped some communication of a tender sort between the pages of the *Tatler* is obvious from her warning " to think otherwise of me or not at all." And by April the affair had advanced apace.

It is common history how the then Marquis of Dorchester received Mr. Wortley's proposal for his daughter's hand. He insisted upon a deed of entail which Mr. Wortley refused to make. Lady Mary discusses the affair in many letters. " Since I am so unfortunate," she writes, " to have nothing in my own disposal, I do not think I have any hand in making settlements. People in my way are sold like slaves."

" If this breaks off I shall not complain of you . . . whatever happens, I shall still preserve the opinion you have behaved yourself well." And finally, with a confidence unshaken by one mean or paltry doubt, " I say nothing of my letters. I think them entirely safe in your hands."

Unfortunately a quarrel occurs. " Our aunts and grandmothers," writes Lady Mary tartly, " always tell us that men are a sort of animals, that, if ever they are constant, 'tis only when they are ill-used. 'Twas a kind of paradox, I could never believe, experience has taught me the truth of it." " I have resolved," she writes two months later, " to give over all thoughts of you. . . . While I foolishly fancied you loved me . . . there's no

## LOVE-STORY OF LADY MONTAGUE

condition of life I could not have been happy in with you, so very much I liked you. . . I may say loved, since it is the last thing I'll ever say to you . . . I pretend no tie but on your heart. If you do not love me I shall not be happy with you ; if you do I need add no further."

So bold a declaration, as she calls it, had its effect. To be secure of his mistress's heart, Mr. Wortley would even die. "That expression, perhaps the only insincere one in your whole letter," is her unfeeling comment, though she adds : "were this but true, what is there I would not do to secure you?"

A year later, on the fourth of July, 1712, we find her dispatching what she calls "a plain, long letter." Affairs have come to a crisis. Another suitor has appeared, more agreeable to the Marquis than Mr. Edward Wortley, with his obstinacy about entail. Not only is the engagement announced, the marriage fixed, but £400 have been spent upon "wedding cloathes." In vain, like Fielding's sweet Sophie Western, had Lady Mary offered never to marry at all ; the Marquis proved as obdurate as the Somerset squire. He advised his daughter to consult her relations, who told her "they were sorry I would ruin myself, but if I was so unreasonable, they could not blame my father whatever he inflicted on me. I objected I did not love him. They made answer they found no necessity of loving. It was in vain to dispute with such prudent people."

Sophie Western, we know, was shut up in her chamber ; the Marquis threatened to confine his daughter "where she might repent at leisure." "I retired," says Lady Mary, "where I writ a letter to let him know my aversion to the man proposed was too great to be overcome . . . but I was in his hands and he might dispose of me as he thought fit."

Unfortunately, the Marquis took his daughter at her word and proceeded "as if I had given a willing con-



## THE ADELPHI

sent." "I have told you all my affairs," concluded the distressed damsel, "with a plain sincerity. I have avoided to move your compassion, and I have said nothing of what I suffer, and I have not persuaded you to a treaty, which I am sure my family will never agree to. *I can have no fortune without an entire obedience.*"

Lady Mary's "plain long letter" was written in July; early in August their decision was made. If they could not marry with the Marquis's consent, they would marry without it.

"I am sorry I cannot do it," writes the lady (she means elope), "entirely as to Friday or Saturday." She wishes to take into confidence a sympathetic relation, but having stated her reason for delay she concludes dutifully enough, "in this minute I have no will that does not agree with yours . . . Sunday I shall see you, if you do not hear from me Monday."

But in spite of a sentiment so pleasing to a would-be husband, it is clear that by Saturday morning there have been scruples on Mr. Wortley's side, qualms on hers.

"I am afraid," she writes, "you flatter yourself my F. may at last be reconciled. I am convinced . . . he never will. Reflect now," she cautions him frankly, "for the last time in what manner you must take me. I shall come to you with only a night-gown and a petticoat, and that is all you will get with me."

Her friend has offered them her house. "I did not accept this," she writes, "till I had let you know it. If you think it more convenient to carry me to your lodgings, make no scruple of it. Let it be where it will if I am your wife. I shall think no place unfit for me where you are."

There is one more short letter, written on Friday night, the fifteenth of August, 1712. One can imagine her penning it in the fading summer dusk by the window giving on to the balcony ("she and I will be on the balcony that looks on the road; you have nothing

## LOVE-STORY OF LADY MONTAGUE

to do but stop under it and we will come to you"). Possibly as she wrote the chairmen were waiting below to carry her off to some drum or rout, as the fashionable parties were called in Queen Anne's days. Was the street quiet after the bustle of the long hot day, or noisy with the noises of her London—the cries of the link-boys, the swearing of the chairmen, the pad of cows being driven home from the parks?

Her agitation is manifest. "I tremble for what we are doing. Are you sure you will love me for ever? Shall we never repent? I fear and I hope." Her maid enters with a note, and again she takes up her scratching quill:

"Since I writ so far, I received your Friday letter. I will be only yours, and I will do what you please. You shall hear from me again to-morrow, not to contradict, but to give some directions. My resolution is taken. Love me and use me well."

They were married on August 16th, 1712; in October occurs their first separation.

"I don't know very well how to begin," writes the bride of two months, "I am perfectly unacquainted with a proper matrimonial stile (sic). After all, I think 'tis better to write as if we were not married at all. I lament your absence as if you was still my lover and I am impatient to hear . . . that you have fixed a time for your return."

The letter is headed in her graphic way: "Watling Wells, Oct. 22, 1712, which is the first post I could write; Monday night being so fatigued and sick I went straight to bed from the coach." It overflows with affection. Even "the impertinent picture" of the family with whom she is lodged, is but a peg on which to hang her own fond illusions about the future, "when the noise of a nursery may have more charms for us than the music of an opera."

Whimsically she writes, half laughing at herself, half

## THE ADELPHI

mocking him ; but the real thing is there so unmistakably that it seems almost a profanation to read her tender words, " I check myself when I grieve for your absence by remembering how much reason I have to rejoice in the hope of passing my whole life with you. . . . I assist every day at public prayers in this family and never forget . . . how much I owe to Heaven for making me yours." And then, laughing again, she thus adjures him, " Pray, my dear, begin at the top and read till you come to the bottom."

Now had Mr. Wortley replied to his wife's letter with the same celerity and lover-like warmth, I am ready almost to swear that there would have been no separation in later years. But he didn't even write at all.

" I sometimes imagine you are not well and sometimes that you think it of small importance to write. . . . You should remember I want to know you are safe at Durham. I shall imagine you have had some fall from your horse . . . there is nothing too extravagant for a woman's and a lover's fears."

Her next letter, dated December 6th, 1712, is from Hinchinbrook, the seat of her husband's family, so dear to Pepys. She amuses herself during the short winter days by exploring the old house and discovers an old trunk of papers, " which to my great diversion I found to be the letters of the first Earl of Sandwich, and am in hopes that those from his lady will tend to my eddification, being the most extraordinary lessons of economy that ever I read in my life." Her words recall Mr. Pepys's rueful entry : " Dined with my Lady, who, now my Lord is gone, is come to her poor house-keeping again."

Reading and walking on the terrace, perhaps that same " cloyster " Mr. Pepys once feared would be so dark, are, so she writes, " the most considerable events that have happened in your absence, excepting that a



## LOVE-STORY OF LADY MONTAGUE

good-natured robin redbreast kept me company almost all the afternoon, with so much good humour and humanity as gives me faith for the piece of charity ascribed to these little creatures in the 'Children in the Wood.'” And her letter ends, as letters should end between husbands and wives, with the hope that Mr. Wortley’s business will not detain him long from “her that cannot be happy without you.”

But Mr. Wortley Montague was no correspondent to relieve a lonely wife. “Your short letter,” she writes on the 11th, “came to me this morning, but I won’t quarrel with it, since it brought me good news of your health.” And she goes on to relate with spirit a scrap of local scandal. The forsaken first love of a Huntingdon burgher had forbidden his banns.

“The great prudes,” comments Lady Mary, “say the young woman should have suffered in silence, the pretenders to spirit and fire would have all false men so served . . . For my part, I never rejoiced at anything more in my life . . . it furnished discourse all the afternoon when I was visited by the young ladies of Huntingdon.”

And finally comes this little picture of her solitude : “I write and read till I can’t see and then I walk ; sleep succeeds, and thus my whole time is devoted . . . see nothing but I think of everything, and indulge my imagination which is chiefly employed upon you.” “I am alone,” she writes wistfully in another letter, “I am in circumstances in which melancholy is apt to prevail even over all amusements” (she was expecting the birth of her first child), “. . . Should I tell you” and her veiled reproach is significant), “that I am uneasy . . . should I see you half an hour sooner ? I believe you have kindness enough for me to be very sorry . . . and things remain in their primitive state.”

Her next letter, six months later, is from Yorkshire, where she is house-hunting. The quest even in those



## THE ADELPHI

days was not easy. "I sent for Mr. Banks," she writes, "and find by him the house you mentioned at Sheffield is entirely unfurnished and *he says he told you so*. He says there is a house five miles from York, extremely well furnished . . . but the gentleman is gone to France."

"I am in great perplexity," concluded the harassed lady, "I know not what to do, but I know I shall be unhappy till I see you again . . . I am afraid of everything . . . there wants little of my being afraid of the small-pox for you" (her brother had just died of it). "If I lose you, I cannot bear that 'if.'"

She is still, you see, the devoted wife, he her one thought, whilst he—well, he is certainly a very deliberate correspondent.

"You know where I am and I have not heard from you," is the burden of a letter from Watling Wells, indorsed July 25th, 1713, "I am tired of this place because I do not, and if you persist in your silence, I will return to Wharnccliffe. I had rather be quite alone and hear sometimes from you, than in any company and not have that satisfaction."

Though Mr. Wortley Montague was too decorous a character to cause his wife that sort of uneasiness, which makes Mrs. Ellison in "Amelia" declare herself "no stranger to the melancholy tone of the midnight clock," she must have watched for the postboy with the sickness of hope deferred. How gay, how responsive she could be when he did write, her letters prove again and again.

"I return you a thousand thanks, my dear, for so agreeable an entertainment," she writes from York in November, and then follows a stream of lively gossip about "our York lovers, love being as much forced up here as melons."

The summer finds her at Middlethorpe. Their boy is ill, and "my heart aches about him very often. The

## LOVE-STORY OF LADY MONTAGUE

house is in great disorder, and I want maids so much that I know not what to do till I have some." And then occurs the too familiar plaint, "I am concerned that I have not heard from you." And again on August 7th, "you made me cry for two hours last night. I cannot imagine why you use me so ill."

On August 9th, George the First was proclaimed King at York, and Lady Mary pens a lively picture of the ringing of bells, bonfires and illuminations and the mob crying "Liberty and Property," and "Long Live King George." But there was fear of a Jacobite rising and she judges it prudent to take refuge with Lord Wharnccliffe's daughters at Castle Howard. "'Tis the same thing," she adds with a touch of her native drollery, "as pensioning in a nunnery for no mortal man ever enters the door in the absence of their father."

The autumn is devoted to electioneering. Mr. Wortley is standing for a seat, and possible boroughs and shrewd advice fill his wife's letters. Whether he profited by her counsel I know not, that he answered her many letters with his usual deliberation we gather from her own pointed hint, "I wish you would learn of Mr. Steele to write to your wife."

Her patience if not her loyalty is at last exhausted. It is on November 24th, 1714, that we find the two at a parting of the ways which was probably even more real a separation than that which took place twenty-five years later. "I have taken up and laid down my pen several times, very much unresolved in what stile I ought to write to you." Thus she begins, and it seems almost a desecration that other eyes than his should ever read her words, so bleeding even now with hurt affection and yet so dignified and wise.

"I know very well," she writes, "that nobody was ever teized into a liking, and 'tis harder to revive a past one than to overcome an aversion, but I cannot forbear

## THE ADELPHI

any longer telling you. I think you use me very unkindly. . . . I parted with you in July and 'tis now the middle of November. . . . You write seldom and with so much indifference as shews you hardly think of me at all. I complain of ill health and you only say you hope 'tis not so bad as I make it. *You never enquire after your child.* . . . I am very sensible," she continues, "how far I ought to be contented when your affairs oblige you to be without me. . . . I do not bid you lose anything by hasting to see me, but I would have you think it a misfortune when we are asunder."

Poignant, pitiful words! But they are her last complaint. "I have concealed," she writes, "as long as I can the uneasiness—the *nothingness* of your letters has given me . . . but dissimulation always sits awkwardly upon me. . . . If your inclination is gone, I had rather never receive a letter from you, than one which, in lieu of comfort for your absence, gives me pain beyond it."

There is no knowing how Mr. Wortley replied. Whether, as she threatened, his next of the kind went back to him "enclosed in blank paper," or if he wrote off post-haste to make peace. That peace was made and held good, so long as she considered herself of use to him in his public life, we know. Scandal at this period would have been disastrous to them both, but when twenty-five years later she left him to live abroad, only fools could prate of infidelity or the ribald cast a slur upon them.

And how did she herself look back upon her marriage? Did disillusion sour her? Not in the least. Tolerant and humorous she remained to the last; loyal to her husband to the last. "I know him to be more capable of a generous action," she tells their daughter, "than any man I know."

"When are people matched?" she writes to her sister, the Countess of Mar, "I suppose we shall all

## LOVE-STORY OF LADY MONTAGUE

come right in Heaven, as in a country dance the hands are strangely given and taken while they are in motion, at last all meet their partners when the jig is done." And in another letter to the same sister, "Don't you remember how miserable we were in the little parlour at Thoresby? We then thought marrying would put us at once into possession of all we wanted. . . . Though after all I am still of opinion that it is extremely silly to submit to ill-fortune. One should pluck up spirit and live upon cordials when one can have no other nourishment."

We know the end of her story. Her husband was taken ill and her impulse was at once to return. "I am dragging," she writes from Rotterdam to her grandson in November, 1761, "my ragged remnant of life to England. The wind and the tide are against me."

She arrived too late to see him, and she survived him hardly a year.

### *Return*

SILENT I seek familiar vales  
And slow, familiar streams,  
My homing eyes on Attic sails  
And stately quinqueremes,  
Flaking the blue Myrtoan seas  
Past Melos and the Cyclades.

Hence had I sped an Argonaut  
In vagrant pride of youth,  
Questing far treasuries of thought  
For dragon-guarded Truth,  
And under quiet stars I come  
Bearing my broken armour home.

WILLIAM SOUTAR.



# ADVERTISING AND JOURNALISM

By Henry King

APPROPRIATELY enough in a large advertisement, in *The Times* of May 23rd, Lord Beaverbrook, the owner of the *Daily Express*, gave the following candid and instructive account of the formation and achievement of his ideal as a newspaper-proprietor :—

Before I had any practical knowledge of journalism, Mr. Lloyd George asked me to go and see Lord Northcliffe on his behalf. I have forgotten the particular occasion, for I often acted as intermediary between the two most interesting personalities I have ever come across—but I have never forgotten that morning. I found Lord Northcliffe in a little house overlooking the green of St. James's Park. The position was so beautiful that I vowed on the spot that some time I would have a house in London with the same sort of outlook. And this year I have one.

But it was the second episode which determined years afterwards the existing relations between the great Drapers, the Public and the *Daily Express*. Lord Northcliffe was called to the telephone while we were talking, and of necessity I heard what he was saying. It was the late Sir Richard Burbidge (of Harrod's Stores) who was ringing him up to suggest that he should call on Lord Northcliffe to discuss some business point. Northcliffe immediately replied: "No, I will come round and see you."

I was immensely surprised and not a little intrigued. Finally, I determined to solve the mystery, and I put this question to Lord Northcliffe—"How is that while all the great statesmen and politicians and diplomats are ready to come and see you, you are ready to go round and see the head of a big store?" He answered at once—"Because, as a journalist, it is imperative that I should understand

## ADVERTISING AND JOURNALISM

the character and scope of the Big Stores, and my relations with the drapery business are closer and more important than with any other class of business. The great drapers are my big advertisers. It is through my columns that they reach their public of buyers. They are essential to me and I am essential to them."

The episode remained so vividly in my memory that when ultimately I came to the *Daily Express*, I was determined that the kind of relationship Lord Northcliffe had indicated should subsist between that newspaper and the great shopping centres of London—the organisations which draw their purchasers through their advertisements and dispatch many of their goods outwards in answer to the letters of those who order from advertisement pages. That is why the *Daily Express* carries more drapery and store advertising than any other penny Morning Newspaper. . . .

When Lord Northcliffe spoke to me on this matter, I only saw in an intuitive kind of way that he was right. I did not reason about the matter or really understand it. I did not see, as I do now, what a great service was rendered to the public by means of these advertisements, and how the Press and the great high-class advertising houses are really performing an identical task, that of giving out the news.

For the advertisements of great Drapers are news. They are a complete and, indeed, a necessary supplement to the Woman's page. They are a guide as much as the City columns to current prices, or as the Social columns to women's fashions. Above all, they give to men and women alike a chance to study comparative prices, and to see where their money will reap the greatest return.

It would be foolish to waste time and paper in a lament over conditions in which a Prime Minister of England, in time of war, has humbly to send an envoy to a great newspaper-proprietor, who regards only the head of a great department-store as his equal. That is one of the penalties of modern democracy. Nor need we wonder that the discovery came as flash of revelation to Lord Beaverbrook, very much as the light came to Paul on the road to Damascus. Before that moment Lord Beaverbrook had no doubt desired to become a

## THE ADELPHI

second Lord Northcliffe. After all, that is the supreme position in modern democracy, and Lord Beaverbrook naturally aspired to it. Suddenly, by a stroke of fortune, he saw how it was done. "I only saw in an intuitive kind of way that he was right. I did not reason about the matter or really understand it." The phraseology, as well as the fact, is interesting. They show that our modern captains, like the old, have their moments of inspiration.

But the point of chief interest is that Lord Beaverbrook was right. Lord Northcliffe had discovered the secret; he was the original genius: but Lord Beaverbrook had the genius to recognize the secret of genius. The modern English circulation newspaper and the modern department-store are complementary to each other: neither could exist without the other. The next development would therefore seem to be that the department stores and the circulation newspapers should be amalgamated. Perhaps that is already happening. One might describe the next phase as one in which the public will pay a penny a day for the catalogues of the great stores.

"For the advertisements of the great drapers are news," as Lord Beaverbrook says. That is not a high-sounding pretence; it is a fact. Let anyone who lives in a country village inquire at the newspaper shop which newspaper sells most copies. He will find that it is the newspaper with the most advertisements. From them the country woman (and the country man) learns the price of commodities, and can determine whether things sold locally are dear or cheap. "They are a guide as much as the City columns to current prices": the analogy is exact. What the record of the previous day's dealings on 'Change is to the man of investments on affairs, the advertisement pages of the circulation press are to the vast majority of ordinary men and women.

Therefore, the primary object of a circulation news-



## ADVERTISING AND JOURNALISM

paper is to obtain the greatest possible number of pages of advertisements of the kind that has the attractiveness of news. At this point in his account Lord Beaverbrook is a little confused, when he says "it must not be supposed that the main object of *The Daily Express* is to secure" such advertisements. He is not, I think, being disingenuous; he is merely in a tangle; not unnaturally, for the subject is complicated. However, the main object is to secure news-advertisements, and the main problem is *how* to secure them. Lord Beaverbrook is not talking bunkum, though he is using words strangely, when he says—"Advertisements of this class only come to newspapers which have courage and character and make a wide and honourable appeal to the public on quite other grounds." For it is true that though circulation is immensely important, it is not *all-important*. *The News of the World*, for example, has a much larger circulation than either *The Daily Mail* or *The Daily Express*; but it does not thereby secure the same amount of news-advertising as they do. The big stores know their business: *The News of the World* is *low*; it does not give them the kind of circulation they need.

But "courage and character"—hardly. "Courage and character" is not what is needed, in any ordinary sense of those words. And Lord Beaverbrook unconsciously admits it, for he gives as the supreme instance of "courage" the fact that *The Daily Express* now keeps its front page for news. That was a good move, and it probably seemed a bold one to Lord Beaverbrook: its real object was (1) to differentiate *The Daily Express* from *The Daily Mail*, and (2) to justify a particular appeal to the great advertising houses on the ground that the people who preferred a newspaper without advertisements on its front page would be more likely to be the kind of people the drapery houses wished to reach with their advertisements.

But see how subtle and profound a change has come



## THE ADELPHI

over the meanings of the commonest terms in journalism. Lord Beaverbrook claims, quite sincerely, that the "policy" of his newspaper is "courageous." The policy of a newspaper not so long ago meant its attitude to the political affairs of the nation : now it means simply the methods it adopts to obtain the maximum of news-advertising. The courage of a newspaper not long ago meant its boldness in criticising a popular or championing an unpopular cause ; now it means simply its boldness in departing from the average methods of obtaining news-advertisements. And, I verily believe, Lord Beaverbrook imagines that in speaking of "courage" and "policy" in journalism he is speaking of the things that a Morley, a Massingham, a Spender, a Garvin, or a Geoffrey Robinson would mean by the words.

As I say, it is a waste of time to lament over an evolution that was inevitable. Lord Northcliffe saw the opening and took it ; Lord Beaverbrook is more truly his successor than Lord Rothermere, and he will deserve his success. It is an absolutely legitimate form of commerce, with the traditional English reward for commercial success—a peerage—at the end of it. But the mention of some of the famous independent editors of recent times makes one aware of one typical change which is become so familiar that I had forgotten it. It is no longer the editor, but the proprietor who speaks for the newspaper.

I do not believe that the position will change essentially for many years to come. The perfunctory optimist says that the public will lose faith in the circulation-press. The public will not do anything of the kind, because the public has not got faith of this kind in the circulation-press. Its opinions and judgments are not governed by it. They may be to a certain extent influenced by it ; but the nature of the influence is far from clear. Consider these three facts : (1) Probably

## ADVERTISING AND JOURNALISM

one-half at least of the readers of *The Daily Mail* and *The Daily Express* vote Labour ; (2) *The Daily Mail* made every effort to crab the German Loan : it failed utterly ; (3) *The Daily Mail* employed physicians and chemists of authority to expose "Yadil" ; it stopped the enormous sale of that product in a week. Those facts do not warrant a generalization, but they indicate that the influence of the circulation-press upon opinion is of a very peculiar and restricted kind. The circulation newspaper is becoming more and more an interesting and variously attractive catalogue of the news which chiefly interest the great public—sport, *causes célèbres*, stores advertisements, and the Prince of Wales.

Meanwhile the future of independent journalism seems to depend on the ability of independent journalists to see that independent journalism can exist by the side, and in the shadow, of the circulation-press. The independent journal of opinion can gradually gain a small foothold : the slow but sure progress of *The New Statesman* in a time of great difficulty proves it. But the independent journalist must be prepared to make sacrifices : he must not expect to have a comfortable salary, or a discreet home in Mayfair. He must be prepared to pay the price for the independence he professes to value. After all, to speak frankly, it is preposterous that he should expect rich proprietors to pay the piper without calling the tune. What right has he to expect a greater disinterestedness from them than he himself displays? When he is prepared to go into the wilderness and work for five instead of fifty pounds a week, then he may accomplish something. To expect to be subsidized for obeying one's conscience is childish.

# A NIGHT ON PICQUET

*By Ian Mars*

NIGHT ! Here and there a lonely star gleaming faintly but resolutely in the cold blue-black depths of the vaulted heavens, as if defiant of the effort of the ominous clouds to cast a veil of melancholy over all the land beneath.

On the summit of a bare wind-swept hill, a quaintly rugged outline ; a sentinel of Empire—a picquet. In the picquet all is darkness. Not even a flicker of light strays through the chinks of the rough wall of loose stones from the inner chamber. In the passage between the inner chamber and the outer wall all is deadly silent, immobile. The wind moans eerily round the picquet, searching with tentative feelers for cracks and crevices through which to pour its chill breath on the humans huddled inside those crazy walls. On the top of the outer wall the outline is broken here and there by formless blobs rising to a height of about eighteen inches. Man's subterfuge to speed uncertainty into the mind of the sniper.

Of a sudden, there comes a soft sibilant rustle, an accidental click of steel on stone and one of the mysterious blobs moves, ever so little, almost indistinguishably. To a watcher in the picquet it seems that the subtle movement is sensed rather than seen. Realization comes that one of the sandbags looming grotesquely skywards, is indeed no sack of gravelly soil but a human head muffled in the folds of a turban. The watcher moves silently along the narrow trench towards the sentry and immediately, without any corresponding



## A NIGHT ON PICQUET

movement of the head or form, there comes a sharp whispering hiss, "Halt! Who goes there?" "Picquet-commander Sahib." The whispered reply steals across the intervening two yards and just reaches the sentry's ears, only just—as it was meant to do. "Pass friend. All's well." The time-honoured phrase wings itself across the separating space, spoken with a quaint accent. And the watcher marvels to himself at the might of that Britain who can teach these lawless children of another land something of her customs, her discipline, her inefficiency, and her glorious steadfastness. He glides on towards the solitary sentinel, feeling along the rough walls to make certain that bombs and flares, spare ammunition and verey-pistol are all in their appointed places.

Pausing beside the muffled figure leaning statuesquely against the outer wall, rifle tightly gripped in clenched hand, he whispers in the man's ear, "All is correct?" "Correct, Sahib," the man answers stolidly, reassuringly. The picquet-commander thanks his god that his men, poor superstitious children, have at least no imagination clawing frenziedly at their hearts, turning flaming courage to ice-cold fear. "What is that?" he snaps, suddenly on the alert, his reverie forgotten, every nerve and sinew of brain and body strung to breaking pitch as he points carefully at a black object some fifty yards away. Then sentry peers into the blackness, a little excitedly, a little nervously. Then, an almost reluctant reassurance in his voice, replies: "It is a small bush." Almost he could have wished it were an enemy. His fingers are twitching to press the trigger. Still gazing at the blurred object he fancies it has moved slightly. For a moment his soul has been fired by a spark of imagination. Then the peering eyes relax their strained intensity. A calm stolid Oriental smile flits across his grave face and, like a good soldier, he releases the trigger and places his forefinger behind the trigger-



## THE ADELPHI

guard. Years of training, discipline, and mountain warfare have indelibly impressed on his mind the utter stupidity of firing at a dubious target.

He has seen his brother tempted sorely and to breaking-point, fire at one of those bushes which at night seem to be endowed with a miraculous gift of assuming human identity and movement. It was only a bush, sinister in the blackness of night, innocent enough in daylight. The flash of a rifle, a shattering report ringing with dull reverberations through the echoes—and even before the last of these had died down, phut! crack!—the noise of a bullet hitting its mark, followed seconds after by the crack of the charge that had sped it on its death-dealing way and his brother quietly crumpled up and slid to the ground. His skull had been neatly drilled by a bullet, a sniper's bullet from the right. The bush he had fired at had been to the left. His train of thought snapped abruptly. His officer was questioning him. "What are your orders in the event of——?" Mechanically he grappled with the question, realized the sense and meaning of it, and replied with the correct answer, an answer he had learnt, parrot-wise, by heart. The officer moved away. The sentry wondered for a moment how long it would be before his relief, and then settled down in his old position, a machine, a human automaton with one purpose and only one—the protection of his picquet.

The sentry's lonely vigil was drawing to a close. He himself, numb with cold, lashed by the biting wind, was beginning to suffer from the overpowering pangs of drowsiness. He eased his cramped fingers in their mitten-gloves. His overcoat and Gilgit boots had almost ceased to be blessed containers of warmth and become merely odiously heavy weights, dragging on his tired shoulders and sagging knees. His hands strayed to his equipment to ease the webbing straps which were burning their way into his aching shoulders, and, sud-

## A NIGHT ON PICQUET

denly ceasing to fumble, clenched the straps in tense alertness. A stone started to rattle down the steep hillside, rapidly gained momentum as it bounded downwards until its progress was arrested by a small shrub, and silence once more ensued.

But now a subtle sinister silence, fraught with danger, full of evil forebodings. Like a flash, the thoughts chased through the sentry's rapidly clearing brain. "Was it a sniper? Or an attacking force? Those Mahsuds, sons of pigs, were so stealthy, so quick to strike. Or was it just a pebble loosed by some crumbling earth?" He knew that to wake up the entire garrison of the picquet for a false alarm would bring, if not punishment, at least dire unpopularity on his head. The leather thong\* which was fastened round his wrist and led to the wrist of the picquet-commander drew taut as he stiffened into a crouching position, rifle fiercely clutched, eyes peering into the non-committal darkness, ears strained to their uttermost. Suddenly his gaze wavered, paused, and concentrated on a small dark object distant from the picquet by some thirty yards. A bush? Surely not! He was certain there had been no bush in that place half an hour since. Scarcely daring to breathe, he gazed at it fascinated. Yet he had seen that very self-same bush only a few minutes before. But had it not seemed a trifle farther away? His eyes rivetted on the suspicious object, his brain thrashed out the question, stumbled, and paused uncertain. And then—the bush moved, ever so slightly, but move it did. Gone was indecision, banished all ill-forebodings. In their place reigned an intense excitement. The thong attached to his wrist tightened. Quickly he jerked his arm once, twice, thrice.

---

\* A device used on the Frontier whereby a sentry can rouse the picquet-commander without any noise and without leaving his post.

## THE ADELPHI

No sound answered him, but there came back one single tug of the leather thong. Satisfied that the Picquet-commander Sahib was awake the man remained mute and immobile, never taking his eyes off that eccentric bush. In less than thirty seconds a burly, indistinct form was beside him, eager lips touched his ear, and a keen, sharp voice whispered, "What is it?" "The enemy, sahib," he breathed softly and described the situation and the position of the pseudo-bush. The picquet-commander gazed intently at the mysterious shadow. He could see nothing unusual, and he knew that a futile expenditure of verey-lights, bombs, or ammunition, would only bring censure on his head. But he knew also that the Indian could see and hear things clearly that were as in a fog to himself. He hesitated, and then fancying he too saw a slight movement, made up his mind on the spur of the moment.

The garrison had already flitted, each to his appointed post like so many ghosts. The officer passed round a whispered message. They had been drilled for this occasion for weeks. And each man knew exactly what the first few steps to be taken would be. After that, naturally it depended on the enemy. The officer crouched slightly lower down, his arm pivoted back slowly from the shoulder, then with a jerk it swung up in a semi-circle, something black and oval sped from his hand rising and falling in a clumsy arc. Bang! Zip-zip-ping-ee! As the bomb exploded, the Havildar fired a verey-light. In the glaring whiteness several things happened suddenly and almost simultaneously. The bush metamorphosed itself into a human body. The body hurtled into the air, a convulsed mass of struggling limbs, crashed back to earth and started to roll down the steep incline. For a few yards it rolled on, an ungainly bundle of seared and torn flesh intermingled with filthy rags. Then it slithered over a precipitous edge, and after seconds that seemed an eternity



## A NIGHT ON PICQUET

there echoed up from the rocks below a dull thud. A rattle of rifle fire broke out from the picquet and over-aweing that sounded the harsh, strident chatter of a Lewis gun. Immediately an answering fusillade broke out from all around the picquet. Every rock and shrub, each hollow and patch of shadow seemed to harbour and conceal an enemy.

Flashes of flame leapt out of the darkness and occasionally a hoarse shriek or muffled curse rent the medley of mechanical sounds. A man in the picquet, next to the officer, exposed himself rashly to hurl a bomb, shuddered abruptly, swayed back and crumpled up in a limp heap. The officer, acting mechanically, stooped, seized the fallen bomb and flung it outside the picquet just in time. And then as suddenly as it had all started there came an absolute cessation of the furious hail of death, a lull more ghastly than the actual noise had been.

The officer stumbled into the inner chamber bearing the body of the erstwhile bomber in his arms. There, a dim form showed faintly in a corner whence came the unmistakable sound of a field telephone buzzing away feverishly. The man obtained communication and called softly "Sahib, the Adjutant-Sahib is speaking." The officer laid his pathetic burden on the ground and groped his way across the uneven floor, over a tangled mass of hurriedly discarded blankets and camp paraphernalia, to the instrument. Picking up the receiver he spoke, sharp staccato sentences. "Hallo! hallo! Is that the camp?" "Yes," slanged back the excited reply, "Is that X picquet? B speaking."

"Oh! it's you, Rupert, is it? Well, look here, we are having a regular picnic. It's D—— speaking. The devils are all round the picquet fairly thirsting for our blood. Can't signal by lamp yet—too dangerous. Most of the telephone lines to the other picquets have been cut. I'm trying to get communication with them,



## THE ADELPHI

but I've only got A. However, they'll signal the others for us. No, guns can't help us yet, the blighters are too near. They are thinking things over just at present. We've had one man badly hit—he's dead, I think, and I've had a scratch. No, thanks, nothing much. It's too beastly quiet, I don't like—Ah! There they go like all the fiends in hell let loose. Must crash off. The signaller will stay at the 'phone. Cheerio!"

The subaltern relinquished the instruments with a few curt words of instruction and lurched out into the outer passage.

The din that assailed the Englishman's ears as he reached the outer breastwork was indescribably fiendish. The mechanical noises peculiar to modern warfare were now reinforced by blood-curdling yells from the Mahsuds and hoarse curses from the garrison of the picquet. The enemy swarmed up to the encircling belt of fire and miraculously through it. In a few seconds they were tearing frenziedly at the stones of the outer breastwork. The officer thrust the muzzle of his revolver into a yelling face and blew its head to bits. The sepoy on his right jabbed viciously with his bayonet at the stomach of a man who was kneeling on the parapet. On his left the naik was reeling back dizzily, a cruel knife sticking out of his ribs. He suddenly became aware of the fact that he was pulling the trigger of his revolver without any answering reports. There was no time to reload. He struck out shrewdly at a blurred silhouette scrambling over the sandbags and laughed exultantly as he felt the blow go home. A hand and arm appeared clawing at a large stone and he brought the barrel of the revolver down on the wrist with all his might. And then, just as he was wondering how long this hell would last, he saw indistinct figures stumbling, running away from the picquet and a ragged cheer broke out all round him. He leaned against the para-

## A NIGHT ON PICQUET

pet feeling deadly sick and faint. Vaguely he heard a shout of "Khabadar!"\* from the Havildar; there was a scurry of slipping feet followed by an ear-splitting explosion and a medley of groaning cries. A great blackness enveloped him. He felt himself gradually slipping until he was falling through space.

After an eternity came a jarring crash and he recovered consciousness to find the Havildar and his orderly laying him on the floor of the inner chamber. He tried to speak, but for some seconds no words came. His orderly who had been rummaging in his kit crept back and held a flask to his lips. As he drank he suddenly became aware of ghastly pains in his abdomen, shoulder, and both legs. "What happened?" he asked, glaring round wildly. "Your honour has eaten a wound," the Havildar answered, tears in his eyes. "The enemy, where is he?" gasped the wounded man. "Having run, they are gone, Hero-Sahib," came the reassuring reply.

Occasionally a shot rang out. He knew what that meant. The Mahsuds were trying to steal away the bodies of their dead and wounded according to their invariable custom. Sharply he gave orders for a vigilant watch to be kept on all bodies lying round the picquet; the Lewis gun to be trained on a favourable mark; the entire picquet to stand-to till dawn. The Havildar straightened himself. "It is a good word, O Presence," he acknowledged, saluting, and went to see the orders carried out.

The orderly remained crouching by D——. "Sundar Singh," spoke D——. "Protector of the Poor," answered the orderly. "How many dead and wounded are there?" "Three dead and five wounded, Sahib, of whom two will surely die," he answered phlegmatically. "Have the wounded been dressed?" "No,

---

\* Khabadar = look-out!

## THE ADELPHI

Sahib." "Then go and bandage them and afterwards return to me." "Very good, Sahib." The man moved away languidly, apathetically. What did these others matter? They could be easily replaced. How could he tend them when his Sahib was dying? The wounded man was aching for the solace of a cigarette but he knew it was unsafe to light one. As far as he could make out he was wounded in the shoulder and both legs beside the stomach. He thought to himself that recovery was scarcely to be expected.

Dreamily his thoughts turned to England; to a quaint old gabled house in the heart of Somersetshire; to his father and mother, his sisters and brother. He sighed as illusive memories of galloping after hounds through the crisp air, mounted on his favourite hunter, surged across his fogged mental vision. With a jerk he recalled his mind to the present and all its responsibilities.

"Sundar Singh," he called in a faint voice, "give me wine." The orderly knelt down and raised his shoulders carefully while he eagerly sipped the spirit. "Who is that groaning?" D—— presently asked in stronger tones. "Ram Chand, Sahib," the man answered. "He is hit in the stomach." "Double his legs up over his stomach, bind them so and give him nothing to drink, do you understand?" "Very good, Sahib." He thought whimsically how he himself had drunk although he too was similarly wounded. But he knew he must have stimulant to carry him through to dawn. And if the enemy were to attack again it was essential that he should be able to conduct operations, give orders, think of all the hundred and one necessary details to be complied with. What he was aching for was a long drink of cool water. Such a draught as he had been wont to refresh himself with from sparkling moorland springs when beagling.

The Havildar came in and reported that the Mahsuds were surely born of the devil for they had already suc-



## A NIGHT ON PICQUET

ceeded in withdrawing many of the shadowy bodies from the vicinity of the wire despite the vigilance of the sepoys. The subaltern called the signaller. "Ask the Adjutant Sahib to get the topkhana\* to fire as near the picquet as they can," he ordered. The man squatted down on the earthen floor by the telephone and began buzzing. Then his droning voice became audible, apparently in argumentative converse with a sleepy office orderly in the camp. A silence followed, then a further one-sided conversation in the same monotonous tones, deferential this time, however. The man came across and reported that the "Ajitan-sahib" had said he would tell the topkhana sahib. The picquet-commander, suffering agonies, wondered how he could possibly stick it out till dawn. How interminably long the minutes were. From round about came the desultory fire of Lewis guns and the muffled roar of occasional rifle grenades from anxious picquets desirous of helping, but uncertain where to fire. Of a sudden, there was a droning noise in the air, a loud explosion, succeeded by a faint report and the echo rumbled like thunder. The guns were at work.

He dozed fitfully, giving orders in his brief periods of consciousness but for the most part struggling in silence with his pain. As time progressed, the lucid intervals became fewer and farther apart. Once he thought vaguely that this agony was his Gethsemane but his tired mind refused to follow the comparison. After what seemed to be hours, the first silver streak of dawn crept tentatively across the sky. After that, every minute the light increased in strength with a rapidity peculiar to the East.

He was much weaker now. He whispered to the Havildar, who had come to look at him, that a double tot of rum should be served to every man, and then

---

\* Topkhana = artillery.



## THE ADELPHI

relapsed into a vague phantom world peopled by the ghosts of long ago years spent in England. He awoke from this trance-like state to hear the Havildar speaking to him. A relief column from camp was nearing. They were already in flag communication. The Colonel Sahib had sent a message, "Well done D Company." The young man smiled the contented smile of a child. Hours later it seemed he heard footsteps outside the picquet and a moment after there entered the C.O., Adjutant, and the M.O. "Why D——, what's up, old man?" asked the C.O. with gruff kindness, as he came across to the recumbent figure. "I'm done for, sir, I'm afraid," said the subaltern. "Nonsense," replied the C.O. "You'll be as right as rain as soon as Mac here has had a look at you."

The doctor stepped forward, knelt down, and began his examination. "It's no use looking at me, Mac," D—— said. "But there is a poor devil over there hit in the stomach. You might be able to save him." "He'll be all right for a minute or two, old chap," said the M.O. soothingly, and continued his examination with deft fingers. Presently he got up grave of face, crossed to where the C.O. was standing, and conversed with him in whispered undertones.

D—— smiled grimly. He knew what that meant. Well, he had had a run for his money and it was the best way to go out anyhow. There only remained to go out game despite the gnawing pains.

The doctor came back, produced a syringe and inserted the needle in the patient's right thigh. "Morphia?" whispered D——. The M.O. nodded. He couldn't have trusted himself to speak at that moment. "Tell me straight, Mac, I haven't a hope, have I?" asked D——. The doctor clasped his hand. "Old man, you've run your race," he answered. "How long?" D—— queried calmly. "Twenty minutes at most. Has the morphia stopped the pain, old chap?"

## A NIGHT ON PICQUET

"Yes, thanks, Mac. I want to speak to the C.O."

The doctor called the C.O. and he came across, his eyes moist, and his voice was very husky as he spoke. "What is it, old boy?" "I haven't got long, sir," gasped D——, fighting for breath. "I want to make my last report." And he grinned, a ghastly replica of the dare-devil debonair smile he imagined it to be, a grin that tore at the elder man's heartstrings.

"I want to recommend Havildar Narain Singh for the I.O.M.\* for conspicuous gallantry and calm initiative in the defence of the picquet. And Sepoy Tulsi Ram for the I.D.S.M.† for setting a courageous example to the men." He paused and gulped. "The men were splendid, sir," he added, and closed his eyes.

Presently he became delirious. He mistook the C.O. for his own father, and clutched his hand with the instinct of a child seeking protection from vague horrors of nightmare. Then he thought the Havildar was the old groom who had taught him to ride as a boy. For a moment he became semi-conscious and was puzzled by the man's beard. "Your face seems all black, somehow," he murmured petulantly. He rambled on, half coherent words to his mother mixed up with a argon of jumbled English and Hindustani, for the most part senseless.

"For God's sake give him another dose of morphia, Mac," pleaded the C.O. The doctor searched for the syringe with a glance of sympathetic understanding. As he bent down by the boy the eyelids flickered and opened, revealing eyes completely sane at last, and he knew that the end was very near, that the drug was not needed. To the C.O. he seemed to have regained a little strength, but the M.O. knew it for a last flicker of the tired soul that was almost spent.

---

\* I.O.M. = Indian Order of Merit.

† I.D.M.S. = Indian Distinguished Service Medal.

## THE ADELPHI

He asked for the Havildar and his Orderly and said good-bye to both with a smile on his pain-wracked lips. Bravely he said his last words to the C.O. with a jest on his tongue. Then he sank down and asked in a weak voice for the Adjutant, who had gone outside, unable to stand seeing his friend tortured by suffering. He came in quickly to the call and gripped his hand. "I've got a favour to ask, Rupert," he heard the weak voice articulate with difficulty, "I'm going, old chap. Write to the people and tell them—tell them how I went out. Say I had no pain." He paused expectantly while his friend mumbled a reassuring reply. "The game's finished, old chap," he whispered faintly. "I'm off to —— the happy hunting-ground." A serene smile flitted across the wan, twisted features and the other softly releasing the hand of his dead comrade murmured, "Good hunting, old man."

The barbed-wire entanglement round the picquet had been repaired. The walls of the picquet itself had been rebuilt and the dead and wounded conveyed down the hillside on stretchers. The men had gleefully collected the few remaining bodies of the dead and wounded Mahsuds that still lay round the picquet. The picquet garrison had been made up to strength. The C.O. issued his final instructions to the new picquet-commander and the little headquarters party started down the hillside on its way back to camp.

The journey back was accomplished for the most part in strained silence. Just as they were nearing camp the Adjutant burst out, "Poor old chap! Good Lord, sir, isn't it damned futile—the whole blasted show. One of the very best, a pukka white man. Oh Christ!" Tears ran unashamed down his tanned cheeks. "God blast those damned Mahsuds," he raved impotently, and the C.O., who was a man of intimate understanding and pity, said never a word.



## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

“H. W. M.”—It is surprising how much of the elusive personality of H. W. Massingham is conveyed through the book of selections from his writings now published by his son, H. J. Massingham (Jonathan Cape : 12s. 6d. net) ; still more surprising how much he lives in the valedictory essays of Vaughan Nash, Bernard Shaw, J. L. Hammond, and H. M. Tomlinson (which appeared in these pages a year ago). Two of those four writers are writers with a touch or more of genius ; the other two are more than usually practised with the pen. But the cause of their success lies not in this, I fancy. They loved the man ; but again that is not all. They loved him in the only way he could be loved—with the half-whimsical, wholly affectionate detachment that the man feels towards the boy. They were grown up in their various ways ; H. W. M. was not. They saw his bounding outline, tenuous and delicate though it was, more completely than most men can see another man's.

It seems a fantastic thing to say that H. W. M. was a child. And yet I can think of no better word to express that queer petulant waywardness of his, or above all, that sense of inscrutable aloofness and complete autonomy which he produced. If he was not a child, he was as different from men and as concealed from them (even from those who loved and served him) as a child is different and concealed from a man. I have no claim to compare in knowledge of Massingham with the four men of whom I have spoken. I met him first only in 1917 : I worked in close personal contact with him only for two years. But since my impression of him agrees with that of greater authorities, it seems that I may trust it. If I insist on the “childishness” in him it is for the sake of more sharply defining a



## THE ADELPHI

quality which was, in the opinion of all competent witnesses, his peculiar possession.

One trick of Massingham's is graven on my memory. He was curiously fond of using the word "bloody." He would twitch his sensitive nose, hitch his gold spectacles, jump up nervously with a big blue pencil in his fingers, turn over the file of the *Times* on the high pulpit desk, point to a paragraph, "Did you see that? It's *bloody*!" Or he would suddenly say of his pet-aversion among latter-day politicians: "That *bloody* man!" Very many things, very many persons were "bloody" for Massingham. They are for most of us, and most of us have used the word as often as Massingham. It is so familiar and so necessary an epithet that I do not notice it. But, whenever Massingham used it, it came "sharp to my startled senses." No man I have ever known uttered that word in a way remotely resembling H. W. M.'s. How can I describe it?

He used the word as though it came awkwardly to him, as though he were somehow forcing himself to the utterance. Then there was a faint but perceptible tinge of delighted bravado, as who should say: "See I can do it with the best of you." But he could not: the word came always finicking, vehement, yet unnatural, from his lips.

Am I pressing a single clue too hard? Perhaps: but even while I heard him, week by week, say "Bloody!" in this strange way, I used to feel "There is the man. Squeeze that hard enough and you will have his essence."

I believe my instinct was right; as I read this memory-laden book I find, or seem to find, its truth confirmed on every page. In this coarse, sweating, luxuriant physical world, where "bloody" is the very fulcrum of man's natural speech, Massingham was always a stranger and changeling. Yet he forced himself to be of it with a kind of nervous gusto; he was con-

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

vivial, he could be Rabelaisian even, but his conviviality and his Rabelaisianism were not *de bon aloi*. Even his taste in red wine, which was a fine one, seemed to me detached and incorporeal, as though he were indulging an exacting *alter ego*. He smoked a cigarette like a girl. Beneath his resolute abandon to the carnal man was a fundamental and unmistakeable asceticism; at moments almost an austerity of saintliness. A pure, white flame, a devouring incandescence, was raging somewhere, as though some inviolable and unconquerable element in him believed that the Kingdom of Heaven would, but for the wickedness of men, be here on earth to-morrow. Not that he became gluttonous and a wine-bibber to call sinners to repentance. The war was within his own soul; he did not believe his own belief; and he furiously mortified his own austerity. Did he hope to exorcise it? Was he trying, by the strangest of hair-shirt methods, to cure himself of expecting the super-human from humanity, and from himself.

I think so. And I am sure it is no accident that Manichee, and Manicheism, strange and half-forgotten words, continually recur in his writings. Queer emphases in conversation that I remember make me think that he more than half believed in a real devil, to whom politician after politician sold himself. There is something childish in Manicheism, but also something apocalyptically swift and devouring. All truly passionate reformers, all fierce satirists, are Manichees at heart. Massingham, who knew himself well, was quick to detect the condition in another. Trust a heretic for hunting heresies. He adored Swift; and how certainly he transfixes his own heart with the arrow he let fly at Bernard Shaw.

Something incurably fastidious in his nature has always forbidden him to conceive a truly religious affection for the human being. For a killing, vivisection, flesh-eating,

## THE ADELPHI

coarsely love-making, woodenly selfish, and yet absurdly complacent animal like that, the best that Shaw could predict was a deliverance from the body of this death. That was as far as his thought would reach. His artist wings have never been quite strong enough to carry him into the mystic region where both the Christian and the humanist poet saw God as the centre of radiant energy, eternally renewed. Sick of materialism in life and thought, he has turned, he says, to metaphysics. In reality, he ends as a Christian heretic, a Manichee of the twentieth century.

*That* is criticism : masterly. But it is, also, the Puritan anatomising the Puritan. See how aptly, how naturally, comes in the Pauline phrase—"the body of this death."

*Que diable allait-il faire dans cette galère?* What was he doing in political journalism? In a world wherein the man after the flesh is the supreme reality? His penitential dissipations of speech were but a vain effort to persuade himself that in it he had an abiding city. Far from it. His politics were, after all, purely apocalyptic; he went out to see, and to cheer, one Messiah after another : he found him merely a man, and he cursed him. He could laugh at himself for it—he was a very modern apostle—but the habit of soul was ineradicable.

Therefore he was the most impossible of political journalists of his generation, and the greatest. There were good ones beside him : Spender and Garvin ; but not one with his touch of devouring eschatology. He had no policy : only an invincible suspicion that in the twinkling of an eye we should all be changed. He had no party. What did he say of his own? "The Liberal Party seems to me something that can't be either cursed or blessed. There's nothing really human about it as there is in Jingoism or Fisherism, or all the straightforward cults of hell. . . ." At last he joined the Labour Party. He would have slipped out of that in the same old way, for really he knew that all political



## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

parties, simply because they are political, are either straightforward or variously crooked "cults of hell," or "really human"—for it is the same thing for a Manichee.—J. M. MURRY.

"THE CHERRY ORCHARD."—Tchegov was aware of a purity which was far higher than a deliberate acceptance of life. That could be, as it was to Dostoevsky, a sincere, passionate loving acceptance in spite of God; a love tortured by the intellectual stresses which had conceived it, incomplete and agonizing compared with the transcendent freedom which Tchegov grew to understand. With the pains of labour and acceptance it was born in him, establishing above the intelligence and reasoned course of life a tranquil awareness of cosmic unity. It was perhaps an advaitistic knowledge, a belief in "not-twoness," rather than a definitely apparent monistic apprehension. Yet the enchantment which filled his mind, the bliss, the quietness of the spiritual life was certainly that of a deeply contemplative and coherent thinker.

There is a strong reason for believing that this is so. In his stories and plays there is not left in the reader's or spectator's thought any of the pain of the unfitness of the world. It is accepted, proportioned, presented so delicately, with such deep emotional intuition that the whole is inevitable. Each circumstance, each character is inevitable. The hurts, the weaknesses which these people portray do not wound by their intense humanity. There is no searing, gaping laceration of the heart such as Dmitri Karamazov or Ilia Luneff occasion. All is quiet, joyful, exacting a sympathy so profound that it is almost inexpressible except as an active desire for a new behaviour and conduct.

*The Cherry Orchard*, which Mr. Fagan has produced at the Lyric, Hammersmith, demonstrates most tenderly this essential sureness of Life. Tchegov seems



## THE ADELPHI

not merely to say "Here is the real Beauty, transient yet surely existing. Do not worry." Rather does he suggest that any mode of living which cannot identify this reality as in and of itself is intolerable, incomplete, and most deserving of help. The purchase of a beautiful estate for villa building plots from a weak, debt-smothered woman by a capitalist who was once a serf, is no new theme. The treatment of it, however, the seeming irrelevancies, the interjections, the queer introspective statements, the "strangeness" of the emotions of these people, is what bears it directly into a reality neither temporal nor illusory, but absolute. Perhaps Trofimov is the most concrete exposition of human endeavour. He is a "perpetual student," seeking truth, earnestly, with great loving-kindness in his heart, but seeking self-consciously and in vain. He is a pathetic figure, as inevitable in his failure as are the misfortunes of Epikhodov, the clerk. Yet his significance, his position as a fundamental of human consciousness is offered with such dignity that the tragedy of his life is lost in intense beauty. Even at the end, when everyone has left the old house in the orchard, the cold October sunlight striking through the shuttered room on to the servant Firs, disregarded and locked in the empty house, is pure and peaceful. To a mind fevered like Dostoevsky's such an incident would quiver with an awful barrenness of eternity.

The production is, on the whole, a creditable one, and Mr. Fagan is to be thanked for attempting to give Tchekhov a wider popularity. It is played a trifle too slowly perhaps, but during the new lease it is to have at the Royalty Theatre, this may be remedied.—ARNOLD GIBBONS.

THE COMPLAINT OF THE SCHOOLMISTRESS.—Are all teachers, then, just a little bitter, always lamenting? Dorothy Johnson's *Looking Back* is the sanest thing

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

I have read by a schoolmistress. And she had discarded teaching.

The laments published in *THE ADELPHI* make one feel not altogether sympathetic. They remind one of that very old remark, "Teachers are underfed and underpaid, but not understood."

It seems to me that these teachers are approaching teaching in a wrong spirit, with a false attitude. They want to find in teaching an outlet, a mode of self-expression. That cannot be. Miss Johnson truly said that for "the daily policing of the young" a conventional mind was needed. The school-room does not exist to afford an opportunity for the extension of the personality of the teacher.

"The shackles, both social and moral, so heavy on the wretched young teacher." But this is not peculiar to the teacher. None of us has freedom from social and moral restraints. "She must become a social hermit and an intellectual snob." It is an adventure which comes to how few of us—and then for how brief a time—to find perfect spiritual companionship. A glimpse of Paradise! And most never have that. Hilary West's complaint is that of every sensitive, thoughtful person. It is not a peculiarity of the schoolmistress that, alone, she must seek beauty and truth.

Undoubtedly teaching is dull, disheartening. Why? Because the schoolmistress expects too much from it. Do accountants write to *THE ADELPHI* bemoaning the dullness of their work, moaning because they cannot revolutionize book-keeping? They regard their work as a means to a living and look for an outlet, an expression of personality, elsewhere. Why cannot teachers admit frankly that they teach because they must—to support themselves? Surely the work is honourable and necessary. Why blush to work for hire? (This false attitude accounts in part at least for teachers' being

## THE ADELPHI

miserably paid. Teachers strike for a higher wage! Where are their ideals? What is to become of civilization?) If teaching is accepted as a means of livelihood, it is no more "appalling" than any other profession.

The young do not need their teachers to emancipate them, to help them to a glimpse over the "high walls of convention." The teacher is really outside their lives—a necessary obstacle to living. Dreams of a special school for the few? Those who are to find freedom will do so. They need no schools. It is the teacher who wants such a school for her own personal development.

Teaching is not creative work like writing, painting. It cannot make a life for the teacher. It must be incidental to her real life. Let it be well done, conscientiously done, and then let her find her own life where she must always find it—within herself. (Lack of time? We have time for that which we deeply crave. How much time had Lamb for his real life?)

These teachers do not complain that their work demands too much of them. Their sad story is that it does not demand enough. They want to immolate themselves, to find themselves completely in their work. They expect to give themselves up to teaching as to a lover, a husband, a baby. And later they will find that even these cannot make a life for them. Everything comes back to the same source—we must find our real life within ourselves. Nobody, nothing can make it for us.—VERA McCORMICK.

"THE FIND."—The bedroom was at once stuffy and bitterly cold. Fog hung about it like something one could touch, about the eloquent and active gas flame, about the bedclothes. Especially the bedclothes. She dreaded their touch. Nightly she dreaded



## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

tip-toeing across the icy, greasy carpet, having put out the jumping light, dreaded the feel of the clammy sheets.

A hot-water bottle was "a hextra," and there was no margin for extras.

Night after night she lay down and the room and the days were before her eyes. The room swept but dirty, with the dirt of peeled paint, of varnish entirely worn, of a carpet threadbare.

She had asked her landlady in the early days if she might "do" the room herself, and the woman with a rather contemptuous smile had accepted this tentative claim for cleanliness. In winter the cold of the room was a horror. It was like something living which waited behind the door ready to seize upon you. In summer its heat was torture.

She could see when she closed her eyes the sagging blue blind, the curtained row of pegs where her clothes were hanging, the blotchy mirror over its stand of useless drawers.

Her days were a little like the furniture, she thought, of not much use and of no beauty. Anyone could do her job. No one would wish to do it. From nine in the morning to six at night to type-type. A fight for a 'bus going Citywards in the morning, a fight for a 'bus coming Hammersmith way at night. Tea and bun for lunch, endless vista of tea and bun, endless avenue of insipid "dinners," those dinners of which the landlady had spoken so loftily at the beginning, the tasteless mince, the milk puddings made with water, the dessert of frosted bananas.

She would pull the clothes over her face when she got into bed and ask herself wretchedly what it was for, what was anything for, why was one here, what use aimless, meaningless days spent in getting enough to live more days?

But to-night things felt different. She lay in bed



## THE ADELPHI

and saw visions that were not replicas of the furniture, were not rehearsals of days past.

She forgot the cold in wondering just how she should spend the money.

She knew that early in the spending she would have several real meals. She would go into a restaurant and for just once or twice would satisfy that sick longing for steak and chips, for boiling soup, for something hot and with a taste, that assailed her when she ordered her midday tea.

She buried her face in the pillow in a fury of hunger at the thought. She would spend pounds and pounds on food. She would spend it all on food. She thought of the twopennyworths of sweets she had bought sometimes to stay her faintness. Yes, she would spend it all on food. Nothing was desirable compared with two square meals a day.

She began to giggle to herself under the clothes. "I'm growing weak-minded on Mrs. Cocker's mince," she said. "What I really *will* buy . . ."

She could get a winter coat—boots—meals—her mind would stray sickeningly back to meals. She began to wonder what manner of man the owner of the wallet might be. A man who could carry seventy-five pounds about in notes, not to mention valuable papers, must be of a wealth undreamed. He must be able to eat when and what he chose.

She shook with cold under the thin coverings. She would buy a pair of blankets. No, perhaps she would go on this winter as she would have been obliged to do had the money not been coming to her, and put it all away for a holiday in the summer. She had never had a holiday that she had not shared with the nation, and these she had not been able to afford.

What *would* the reward be? Perhaps the loser of the wallet had himself been poor. It might be as much as ten pounds. If he were mean, or if he had never

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

known how awful things can be, it might only be five, but then it might be fifteen. He might send for her, might perhaps get her a better job. These delirious flights were doubtless due to a prolonged course of bun. Would there be a letter in the morning? She remembered how kindly the policeman had looked when he was talking to her, taking notes about her find. He had been very particular about her address.

Presently she slept.

The fog had not lifted when she wakened. It seemed to penetrate her bones. Her clothes felt icy as she dressed. But she felt happier than she remembered feeling for a long time. She heard the postman drop letters into the box. She told herself that she must not expect to hear by the first post. She assured herself that no word might come for days. She said she was not expecting a letter. She said she would not look at her plate for a letter. The moment she came round the door she looked. There was an envelope at her place. She swallowed her dubious egg without tasting it, and went quickly upstairs. She must read the letter without interruption.

She could scarcely see for the fog, and went to the window for more light. The single sheet of notepaper was stamped with a Richmond address.

She read :

"Mr. Jevons is grateful to Miss Merrivale for the speedy return of his wallet, and is extremely glad that it fell into honest hands."—H. BARDSLEY.

EPSTEIN IN THE PARK.—The nauseating thing about the Hudson Memorial uproar is the "publicity stunt" element behind it all. Words to the effect that "the great British art-loving public will not tolerate this affront to their sense of beauty," have been written by journalists on nearly all the dailies. Now this is

## THE ADELPHI

obviously all nonsense. Epstein's work is a small carved panel hidden away in the middle of Hyde Park set twenty-five yards back from the railings of the battery. Yet this is going to affront the British art-loving public, the same art-loving public that puts up with the huge Germanic memorial to Nurse Cavell in front of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields!

In view of this agitation one naturally hesitates to join the band of artistic tourists from the newspapers, waving their alpenstocks of "art terms" as they clamber about on this molehill in the park.

However, by the time this note appears they will have forgotten that there is a sculptor called Epstein, and so I dare to point out to the Hudson readers a point that *they* may have forgotten.

It is not fair to demand of a sculptor that his memorial should remind the public of the work of the man to whose memory it is set up, *i.e.*, that the sculptor chosen should be a good literary critic—if he is, so much the better, but the important thing is, that if he has to cut a carved panel and make it "carry" twenty-five yards, he should know how to do it. For all I know, the Peter Pan statue—to take another piece of sculpture in the Park—is excellent appreciation of literature. It may be so, but it is not sculpture.—EDWARD FAZACKERLY.

DEATH AS A SOLUTION.—Life, after all, can be neither as good nor as bad as we think, since death is a part of it. It cannot be as good, for putting aside hopes of immortality—and, judging quite plainly by the way people live, it would seem as if they expected to be immortal in this world rather than in the next, as if that were the natural instinct—a state of being which is bound up with decay and extermination must, on the whole, be regarded as a failure. Nor can it be as bad; for the alternative is seldom, on a reasoned consideration, adopted. It must be that death is the worst thing



## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

in the world, for there it is, quite accessible, and we prefer to it the distresses of life.

And there is not much difference in the contemplation of one death or a hundred thousand deaths. For, on the one hand, when the individual ends, the whole corporeal universe, as far as he is concerned, ends too; and, on the other hand, since no man can suffer more than it is possible for a man to suffer, the total of suffering is only one man's suffering.

Again, it cannot be said that death often solves the problems of existence. To scrap a thing is not to explain it. To be given a sum to do and to tear up in disgust the paper it is written on is not to have solved that sum. Death does not often come opportunely.

How far, then, is a writer of fiction entitled to avail himself, for the purposes of his story, of this most awful thing life holds? Is it not a betrayal of both life and art to use death cheaply? Is it not shameful to behave like a lazy servant and, stealing Azrael's broom, to sweep a mess into a dark corner instead of decently disposing of it?

It is not suggested, of course, that death has not its due place in a work of imagination. It is as much entitled to take its part in fiction as in life. It may even—since fiction is selected, and life is not—have a larger part in fiction than in life. But, to be justified, it must give an impression of inevitability. The reader must feel that if this character did not die it would be actually unnatural. He may be induced to such a state of mind by the light of his own common sense or by the essential atmosphere of the book; but he must not be left with the uneasy feeling that this wasn't really a fair culmination; and that, in short, the author has cheated him.—SARAH GERTRUDE MILLIN.



# ON WIRELESS AND NIGHTINGALES

*By The Journeyman*

IN this respect, I am one of the "die-hards," for I cannot imagine many who, like me, have never listened in. I have never yet felt even the faint stirring of a desire to do so ; on the contrary, I find in myself an instinctive aversion from wireless and all its ways. I do not want to have anything to do with it. The feeling is so deeply rooted that I can hardly render to myself an intelligible account of it.

I have, it is true, a dislike of mechanisms. To speak over the telephone is an ordeal for which I have to brace myself almost by fasting and prayer. I cannot explain the inhibition. The explanations which I give to myself leave me quite unconvinced. It is not enough to put it down to the utter incapability of understanding a mechanism with which I am afflicted. That is strange enough. I have a very small motor-car which I have learned to drive. Sometimes, quite often, it stops when it is not required to stop. That recurrent catastrophe seems to me always like an act of God. Of my own self I can do nothing against it. I know that any other man would give a turn with the spanner here and a touch with the screwdriver there and the trouble would be over. That I should be able to apply such a remedy is inconceivable. Other men may do these things, but not I. I have but two solutions : the first is to walk resolutely away from the car as though it did not belong to me. After the space of about an hour, I return to it, jump in with a show of confidence, pull up the handle with a sort of airy insouciance, and three

## ON WIRELESS AND NIGHTINGALES

times out of four, it really does start again. It sounds incredible, but it really is so. No doubt there are sound mechanical reasons for this apparent miracle. To me it is just a miracle, for I am, in regard to my motor-car, in the mental condition of the savage. I have bluffed the demon of the machinery ; I have deceived him into thinking it was not me. Had he had time to realize that it was only me, after all, he would never have begun to work again. Sometimes I do not act my part confidently enough : he sees through my deception. Then there is nothing to do but turn to my second solution, which is to wait for the other man. He is the medicine-man ; I am the savage.

A complicated mechanism is completely beyond my understanding. My upward limits in this regard are push-bicycles and lawn-mowers. In them I can *see* what is happening. My eyes understand. When the processes are hidden from view, above all, when electricity plays a part in them, I am utterly bewildered. No doubt that counts for much in my deep distrust of wireless ; but it will not account for it all. Nor is the difference merely the difference between incomprehensible mechanisms which I sometimes have to use, and an incomprehensible mechanism which I do not have to use. If I did not use a motor-car once a week I should starve, so remote is my home from the places where things are bought and sold. There is no such compulsion upon me to listen in. I can quite happily live in complete detachment from wireless.

Yet the thought of it irritates and disturbs me. I wish it had never been invented, just as I wish motor-cars had never been invented. If motor-cars had not been invented, I should not starve, I should simply use a horse and cart. Then why not have a horse and cart now ? It is a silly question. It was all very well to use a horse and cart when there was nothing but horses and carts on the road : but things have changed. What

## THE ADELPHI

was once a comfort and a necessity is now become an unnecessary discomfort. The moment always comes when you are bound to yield to the march of progress. No sane man is a die-hard for the mere sake of dying hard. It is for the sake of some end which he values. I value remoteness ; more precious to me than pearls is the possibility of living free from trivial disturbance by my fellow-men. If I were now to change my motor-car for a horse and cart I should not be exchanging more disturbance for less, but less for more. I do not value the being able to do the journey to my market town in a quarter of the time. That a two hours' amble with a horse and cart should be reduced to a half-hour's dash in a motor-car means in itself nothing to me. Fifteen years ago a two hours' drive behind a lazy horse was a heavenly experience ; to-day it is become a torture. To save what I can of my own peace I hoot and toot with the rest of mankind.

And, sooner or later, I feel, I shall be compelled to listen in, for the same reason, to save what I can of my own peace. In but a few years' time, I foresee, everyone will carry a portable telephone. People from miles away will insist on speaking to me, and I, to save myself the trouble that will come of disregarding their messages, will be forced to acquire and use yet another machine. I resent this coming compulsion. Wherever I turn I discover the same universal conspiracy, to rob me of my remoteness. Perhaps, if I had been born to remoteness, I should welcome these diminutions of solitude ; but I was not. I have had to work hard to gain it : I have to work hard to keep it. And it fills me with disquiet, even with dismay, to realize that the march of events is against me and my ideal.

How much against, I felt with a shock as I read this paragraph from the *Times* of May 30th :

A further attempt will be made to-night from 2LO to broadcast the song of the nightingale. It is hoped that



## ON WIRELESS AND NIGHTINGALES

listeners may hear the notes of the bird at about 11 o'clock. As recently stated in *The Times*, two microphones are being taken to Oxted to-day, and will be placed near a nest. Miss Beatrice Harrison will play her violoncello to induce the birds to sing. Suitable corrections will be applied in the amplifiers on the spot to reduce extraneous sounds as far as possible and to make the song of the birds stand out clearly.

That announcement fairly horrified me. In vain I tell myself that my horror is a mere sentimentality. What is sentimentality anyhow? Who will define it? Who will distinguish between sentimentality and sentiment?

There is, I suppose, in the notion of sentimentality the notion of some excess, or falsity in the feeling. Browning's famous line :

God's in his heaven : all's right with the world,

when it is taken, as it always is, apart from its context, is to me sentimental. Not that I deny that God is in his heaven, or that all is right with the world. It may be true ; but, if it is true, it cannot be truly said in those words or in that tone. That Pangloss chirpiness is generally to be found at the bottom of a beer-can. The emotion is not true. But to speak of the truth or falsity of an emotion lands us straightway in difficulties. It is hard to say that when Rachel wept for her daughters and would *not* be comforted, her emotion was untrue. She felt it. But that is not enough ; and the problem why it is not enough is the fundamental problem of literary criticism. (That shows, incidentally, how vastly important literary criticism is, for it touches immediately on the profoundest problems of human life and conduct.)

We may say that in an elementary sense all emotions, being felt, are true. One kind of sentimentality will appear when we have reason to suspect that the emotion is not really felt. I should not care to charge Browning with not having felt the emotion which he expressed.

## THE ADELPHI

In his line I find a sentimentality of a different kind, which is excessively difficult to define. It seems to consist in a surrender to a moment of *mere* emotion. Emotions, in order to be of the kind that one can judge true or false, have to have an element of thought in them. It is, after all, almost (perhaps quite) meaningless to say that an emotion because it is really felt is true. A toothache is neither true nor false ; so with all the primitive emotions that closely border on mere sensations. When the element of thought enters into them, however, they become amenable to the judgment : true or false ? But a thought-emotion is not necessarily true because the judgment contained in it is true. For all we know, the assertion contained in Browning's line may be true. But, if it is true, an apprehension of its truth would not arouse so blithe and chirpy an emotion. If all is right with the world, it is right with it in a mysterious way ; and we, if we could see the secret, would be inclined not to carol about it, but rather to chant a solemn *Nunc dimittis*.

A thought-emotion (that is, in itself, not an easy conception) seems to be true when there is a kind of correspondence (again mysterious) between the truth of the thought and the quality of the emotion that accompanies it. Dante's assertion,

Nessun maggior dolore  
Che ricordarsi del tempo felice  
Nella miseria,

somehow proves itself. Possibly there are greater griefs than remembering past happiness in a time of woe. But that Dante believed and felt the truth of what he said is guaranteed by his words. Dante, by the way, was one of the two mightiest masters of this communication of truth in thought-emotion. In this supreme poetic gift he is second to Shakespeare alone. Let me give another example : his invocation of Virgil :

## ON WIRELESS AND NIGHTINGALES

O anima cortese Mantovana  
Di cui la fama ancor nel mundo dura  
E durerà quanto il moto lontana.

the quality of those lines—the precise tone of their music—seems to prove the truth of Dante's faith concerning Virgil. And yet, of course, that is hardly possible. What has happened, I suppose, is that we have come up against an absolute limit to the capacity of language : here rational criticism is non-plussed. For the first of those lines is not merely a true description of Virgil, but it is the kind of true description of a great poet that another great poet alone can give. Virgil's very soul, the soul that is uttered in his poetry, and can only be uttered in poetry, is in those four words : "O anima cortese Mantovana." Ten thousand volumes could not say as much of the truth about Virgil as those four words. Deep speaks to deep in them ; yet they are perfectly simple. This is the *absolute* truth of poetry.

But I am wandering. In such fields I would gladly wander for ever, and satisfy my hunger for something more than the starve-crow criticism of poetry which we chiefly get to-day. It seems to me that people no longer know what pure poetry is : they do not understand the mysterious voice which makes truth and beauty one. They can judge truth, they can admire beauty ; but they have to separate them. In pure poetry the two are one and inseparable. The truth is the beauty, the beauty is the truth. It seems easy to understand, until you really try to understand it. Then it seems the hardest thing in the world. And, I verily believe, it is the hardest thing in the world, something that can be grasped only in moments of vision, and can never be explained. How can one *explain* that the single epithet *cortese* in Dante's line is poetry *in excelsis*? It is not simply beautiful nor simply true ; it has the quality of beauty-truth, of something other and higher



## THE ADELPHI

than either beauty or truth. Truth absolute, beauty absolute ; and they are absolute only at the point where they are one.

Keats said this long before me, and more.

“That is all ye know on earth, and all ye need to know.” All we know, the topmost pinnacle of our most piercing knowledge : all we need to know, could we not know it for more than a moment. How many men, I wonder, have understood even dimly what Keats meant? Even the elect fail utterly to comprehend. Have I not myself lately read in “Q’s” book—*Charles Dickens and Other Victorians*—those extraordinary lines quoted, with this astounding commentary :

But, of course, to put it solidly, what is vague observation—to anyone whom life has taught to face facts and define his terms—actually an *uneducated* conclusion, albeit most pardonable in one so young and ardent.

“An uneducated conclusion!” *Gott im Himmel!* The utmost term of human knowledge—the vision vouchsafed only to the captain-souls among men, that which Plato, Christ, Shakespeare, Dante, saw and could not speak, very god of very god, seen no longer through a glass darkly, but for a moment face to face.

Let me get back to my nightingale, or I shall say something of which I shall be ashamed, and once more for my pains be called an incoherent mystic. I am tired of that vain parrot-cry : mystic ! mystic ! mystic ! Let any critic of poetry who would avoid mysticism honestly face the simple fact of that one line, those four simple words of Dante :

O anima cortese Mantovana.

When he has faced it, lived with it, pondered it, brooded over it, then let him read the two lines of Keats and brood over them, and tell me whether they are true or not. If I am a mystic, it is simply because I am a critic. *Omnia abeunt in mysterium.*

## ON WIRELESS AND NIGHTINGALES

But back to my nightingale. "Miss Beatrice Harrison will play her violoncello to induce the bird to sing."

Thou wast not born for death, immortal bird,  
No hungry generations tread thee down,  
The voice I hear this passing night was heard  
In ancient days by emperor and clown :  
Perhaps the self-same song that found a path  
Through the sad heart of Ruth, when, sick for home,  
She stood in tears amid the alien corn ;  
The same that oft-times hath  
Charm'd magic casements, opening on the foam  
Of perilous seas, in faery lands forlorn.

Let me consider. Were it any other bird—if, for example, it were that cuckoo who has been swooping from one gate-rail to another round my house for the last six weeks, whose note was to be broadcast, should I care? Not in the least. Nor would Miss Harrison need to play her 'cello. It is simply because it is the nightingale that I am dismayed. And, to go one farther, it is simply because the song of the nightingale is what it is that I am perturbed. It is the most secret, the most thrilling, the most rapturous, the most inviolable voice of nature. Inviolable—that is the secret of my dismay. That is why the microphones, and Miss Harrison, and her 'cello seem to me a kind of elaborate sacrilege.

Yet why not? Why should not those many who have never heard the song of the nightingale have the chance of hearing it in the only way they can? I do not know. I have nothing to say. In what respect is broadcasting the nightingale's song worse than printing off Keats' letters to Fanny Brawne by the thousand on a Wharfedale machine? In none that I can see. The conclusion is unescapable : there is no correspondence between the quality of my emotion and the truth of my thought. Whether or not I am a mystic, I stand self-condemned as a sentimentalist, for though I can see that my regret is nonsensical, the regret remains.

## SIGNS OF THE TIMES

“TOWARDS THE STARS.”—*Mr. Dennis Bradley (as medium—soliloquizing)*, “I am surrounded by Ektoplasm. The spirits whenever they happen to be in my neighbourhood are compelled to draw near. They are attracted to me as to a magnet. I can compel them to speak to me—indeed they are only too delighted to do so. They are always craving to speak to humans on this sphere. I am one of the very few whom they can use. Oh that there were many more!

*(Darkened room—silver trumpets on table—lights appear here and there before the eyes—perhaps the result of biliousness—but taken as an effort on the part of spirits to make themselves manifest.)*

*Spirit of John Jones (hisses through trumpet and speaks)*, “You are a great man, Dennis Bradley—a very great man—a sort of revealer. You have a great work to do—to reveal to men a better revelation than that of the New Testament. You are to make men more sure of a life hereafter than Jesus Christ could. You are to revolutionize the ideas of the well-to-do of suburbia who are now afraid of the future because of self-indulgence and slums. You are to make them unafraid. There is no hell. The very worst that happens is that they go back to a lower state of development and take billions of years in getting up to what they were in the careless days of a born-with-a-silver-spoon-in-your-mouth youth. There is no heaven—or at any rate the ideas of heaven are all wrong. You will still smoke cigarettes and have your whiskeys and sodas in the other world—in heaven. You have a great revelation to make to mankind. There is a great work before you. I am always with you—at your elbow as you write your beautiful ideas of our perfect happiness in the other world, where we are content and understand things. Christianity is all wrong and will soon be played



## SIGNS OF THE TIMES

out, with the Archbishop of Canterbury and his £15,000 a year. When you have written your wonderful book millions will see that you are right. I, John Jones, who speak to you, lived in Ireland before the days of St. Patrick and I have been evolving and evolving, and hoping and hoping that some day I should come across a man like you, so filled with ectoplasm that he could compel me to make a revelation. You are that man. Proceed with your work. You are the great St. Paul of Spiritualism. Through you the twentieth century is to be entirely changed in its religious ideas. My half hour is up. Good-bye."—T. A. D.

MR. NOEL COWARD.—Thirty years ago there were nasty men who were stimulated into active sin by the sight of an ankle beneath a mass of frilled and embroidered white petticoats. The discreet revelation of a garter on a plump leg, or a wink from a sparkling eye fired these gentlemen into a wildness of passion. They drank champagne from slippers, smirked in an agony of carnal devotion, and went home early in the morning; whilst the ladies who owned the slippers, the garters and the ankles, and dressed in tight corsets, sequins and strange hats knew themselves to be successful exponents of an ancient trade. There were other women, and other men, whose tastes were less professional, less expensive, and less public, although their interests appear to have been basically the same.

Yet many of these persons, through the commercial ability of a contemporary are willing, at this hour, to exhibit their naughty behaviour for the absurdly modest sum of one halfpenny. This business man, who turned no profitable account his understanding of what may be called the "peep hole" complex in human mentality, designed the familiar stereoscopic slot-machine wherein a series of photographs is revolved into a semblance of lively movement by a handle. He chose diverse sub-

## THE ADELPHI

jects, giving titles calculated to attract those idle minds whose moral behaviour was either a wayward or carelessly stifled process ; " Fun in a Ballet Girl's Dressing-Room," " What the Husband saw at 3 a.m.," " A Joke in an Artist's Studio," &c., &c. His machines were made of cast iron. Whilst to the skill evinced by the display of photographs limited to suggestiveness must be credited thirty years' revenue.

The success of this exploitation is no curiosity. Neither is the complex on which it rests. It is the sense of shame following its exercise which promotes inquiry. For many people, peeping into a bedroom, or a bathing machine, or into the intimacies of the neighbour's house, ever holds a fascination. They may be honestly and genuinely amused, feeling perhaps that life, in its variety, is being made truly manifest there. But others may graduate from the pastime, learning that their weakness in peeping is greater than the weakness they observe ; and thereby, that knowledge so gained is too circumstantial, and almost useless evidence in life itself. They have not become ashamed of what they have seen, so much as of the atrophying of the reason by the senses which enabled them to peep.

To-day, for an outlay in proportion as a halfpenny is to a set of old photographs, Mr. Noel Coward exhibits peepshows containing real flesh and real blood. He has scenes representing two passionate, suppressed women becoming drunk whilst waiting for a lover whom they have both shared previously, two elderly women undressing for bed, a middle-aged woman attempting to seduce a schoolboy in a railway carriage, and the stresses between a decadent mother and a drug-taking son.

No one doubts that these incidents actually occur. They are pictures which are as true of weakness as the photographs of thirty years ago. Each is taken with a remarkably wide-angle lens, developed in the deep emotion of a young man and printed with a most skilful

## SIGNS OF THE TIMES

precocious wit. They are valuable to Mr. Coward as observations of a growing vision. Their realism cannot be doubted, but their reality is a tiny thing.—A. G.

POSTERS.—There is a form of competition current at the moment in which the competitors have to arrange in order of popular esteem a number of well-known posters. A friend of mine has won a prize in one of these competitions; and as he is a poster artist himself I was curious to know how he managed it. He was wise. He did not trust to his own judgment in the matter at all, nor even what he imagined to be the judgment of that person we all long to meet and perhaps talk to—"The Man in the Street." No, more for his own interest's sake than anything else, he made every person he met for a fortnight arrange in the order that pleased him a set of reproductions of the competition posters, and at the end of the fortnight he took the average arrangement. It was as he feared it would be. The nearest approach in his set to the kind of work that he was producing was well at the bottom of the list and at the top was a poster like "Boxo prevents that sinking feeling." There you are—you know that poster as well as I do. Can we escape it? No, we cannot. That one poster is undoubtedly worth more from the advertizing manager's point of view than the whole of Mr. McKnight Kauffer's beautiful work put together—as it is in Gower Street at the present moment. How Mr. Kauffer's work comes to be displayed on our hoardings at all is a mystery to me, because it seems that, however much we want our Kauffer's, the manufacturers, if they take the results of their competitions to heart, ought to want their "Feelings" still more. But, thank heaven, Kauffer's work is displayed and his Whitsuntide posters for the underground show more of his ingenuity and painstaking craftsmanship than ever.—E. F.



# BOOKS TO READ

**SIR WILLIAM OSLER.** By Harvey Cushing. (Oxford University Press.) 2 Vols. 37s. 6d. net. In 1 vol., on India Paper, £2 10s. net.

Professor Cushing's rather massive biography of one of the most eminent figures in modern medicine needs no recommendation to the profession, but it should interest laymen as well, for it is always human and only incidentally concerned with technical matters. The informal manner of the telling is apposite to its subject, who preferred "to vault a five-barred gate rather than to open it." Osler was a man of wide interests and genial character; and it is pleasant to be brought into such intimate acquaintance with him. His catholicity of artistic and religious feeling was conspicuous. He was one of the chief saviours of the Shakespeare First Folio for the Bodleian. His teaching and clinical work in Canada and America did much to promote international understanding in medicine. He radiated a humour and unselfishness not always to be found in scientific leaders. A commanding figure: yet *Ich Dien* were his most fitting epitaph.

**PLACES AND PERSONS.** By Margot Asquith (Countess of Oxford and Asquith). (Thornton Butterworth.) 21s. net.

Miss Margot Tennant journeying to Egypt in 1891, Mrs. Asquith touring America, Spain, and Italy two or three years ago, and Lady Oxford reflecting upon life, all show the same vivacity and unflagging zest for experience. Her judgment is sound and shrewd (that is, we agree with about four-fifths of her opinions!); and when we differ, about Prohibition for instance, we are—all the more—convinced that her heart is in the right place. She is among those few who have truly "drawn themselves with a pen," in Montaigne's phrase; and her very transparency, her downright-ness, her curious insensibility, make her record of society the more authentic. "There are disadvantages as well as advantages in being so sensitive to form and to beauty as I am. Want of grace influences my opinion of people, and nervous clumsiness makes me cold with impatience." After that, who could have any doubts?

**A TRAVELLER IN NEWS.** By Sir William Beach Thomas. (Chapman & Hall.) 15s. net.

The chief aim of these reminiscences is to cast a benign light upon Lord Northcliffe ("The Chief"), whose journals the author has served in many lands. The book as a whole makes little appeal to us; Sir William's adventures and anecdotes are not made very interesting. The part dealing with the status of War Correspondents on the Western Front is of documentary value.

**NAPLES THROUGH THE CENTURIES.** By Lacy Collison-Morley. Illustrated. (Methuen.) 10s. 6d. net.

The accomplished historian and critic of Italian letters gives us a lengthy and thorough account of the sinister, magnificent, and squalid town with its almost unsurpassed romantic appeal. Mr. Collison-Morley is not a typical descriptive or travel-writer, not highly *personal* in impression nor anecdote; but he is always satisfying with his stores of history, art, and legend. He leads us from the Greek period through the Middle Ages to the present day—in the last few years, one is glad to know, the untidiest streets in the world have become cleaner in every sense. His account of the Neapolitans, with a "dash of lava in the blood" is equally valuable. In fact, he is an almost impeccable authority—though, by the way, it was in 1571, not 1751, that Cervantes was in the neighbourhood.

**THE ACROPOLIS OF ATHENS.** By M. Schede. Translated from the German by H. T. Price. (Blackwell.) 11s. 6d.

The ordinary tourist or "amateur" of Hellas is offered, in this volume, a satisfactory résumé of the political and artistic history of the Acropolis. The author is particularly felicitous in his earlier detail. His feeling for the various tactile values of the marbles is sensitive and unusual. He is not quite so fortunate in his descriptions of the later, Parthenon, sculpture. His touch is heavy, his insistence on the sensual responses to "soft feminine lines" and so on is a little annoying, particularly when referring to the goddess herself or her carved Nikes. Mr. Price does not escape occasional awkwardness of rendering. The plates leave nothing to be desired. The reconstructive plans are excellent.

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
SCIENCE AND "THE CONTROL OF LIFE." By JOHN MIDDLETON MURRY ... ..	155
AS IT WAS. (I.) By H. T. ... ..	167
GOD'S WORD: POEM. By MARGARET RADFORD ...	179
WHERE MUSIC GOES. By HENRY CHESTER TRACY ...	180
PASCAL By LEO TOLSTOY. Translated by AYLMER MAUDE ... ..	184
THREE THOUGHTS OF PASCAL ... ..	193
THE COMFORT OF LITTLE THINGS: POEM. By RALPH BATES ... ..	194
A. E. HOUSMAN: A RETROSPECTIVE NOTE. By H. P. COLLINS ... ..	195
THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB	
Anthologies. By Edmund Blunden ... ..	203
Why Words? By R. Theobald ... ..	206
Beachcombing. By J. H. Clynes ... ..	208
Green Wounds. By A. S. Ryan ... ..	209
This is Africa. By R. S. Alexander ... ..	211
THE THEATRE	
"The Cherry Orchard." By Katherine Mansfield ... ..	214
"The Wild Duck." By Eric Middleton ... ..	216
"The New Morality." By Arnold Gibbons ... ..	220
IT IS TERRIBLE TO BE YOUNG. By THE JOURNEYMAN ... ..	222
BOOKS TO READ ... ..	227
NOTABLE NOVELS ... ..	229
[ALL RIGHTS RESERVED]	

**"Luvisca"**  
REGD  
**SHIRTS**  
**PYJAMAS & SOFT COLLARS**

are clean, cool, and comfortable. They have set a new standard of smartness and economy in Men's Wear.

Look for the  
"LUVISCA" TAB  
on every Gar-  
ment. None  
genuine without.

If any difficulty  
in obtaining write  
COURTAULDS,  
LTD. (Dept. 42M.),  
19, Alderman-  
bury, London.  
E.C.2, who will  
send you name of  
nearest retailer  
and descriptive  
booklet.

# P&O

## BRITISH INDIA & NEW ZEALAND LINES

### Mail, Freight & Passenger Services

P. & O. and B.I. Tickets interchangeable, also Tickets of P. & O., Orient and New Zealand Shipping and Union Companies. All sailings subject to change, with or without notice.

1. London and Marseilles to Bombay, Karachi and Persian Gulf.
2. London to Colombo, Madras & Calcutta.
3. London & Marseilles to Ceylon, China, Japan & Australia.
4. London & Marseilles to Port Sudan, East and South Africa.
5. London to Queensland.
6. London (cargo) & Southampton (passengers) to New Zealand & (by transhipment, passengers only) Australia (via Panama Canal).
7. United Kingdom (by any Atlantic line) via Vancouver or San Francisco to New Zealand, Australia & the South Sea Islands.
8. London (one class only, third-class rates) to Australia via Cape of Good Hope.

#### ADDRESS.

- Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4 & 5.—For Passage, P. & O. House (Manager, F. H. Grosvenor), 14-16, Cockspur St., S.W. 1; Freight or General Business, P. & O. and B.I. Offices, 122, Leadenhall St., London, E.C. 3.
- No. 6.—J. B. Westray & Co., Ltd., 138, Leadenhall St., London, E.C. 3, or P. & O. House (first floor)—General Passenger Agent, W. L. James, 14, Cockspur St., S.W. 1.
- No. 7.—Union S.S. Co., of New Zealand, Ltd., P. & O. House (first floor)—General Passenger Agent, W. L. James, 14, Cockspur St., S.W. 1, and for Vancouver Service, any office of Canadian Pacific Railway.
- No. 8. P. & O. Services, Australia via Cape, 32, Lime St., E.C. 3, or P. & O. House, as above.
- B.I. Agents, Gray, Dawes & Co., 122, Leadenhall St., London, E.C. 3.
- Paris (All Routes)—Société Française P. & O. 41, Boulevard des Capucines.

**ROUND-THE-WORLD TOURS**  
*Handbook on Application*

# By P&O

## AT HOLIDAY FARES

### Gibraltar, Marseilles or Egypt



**FOURTEEN DAYS**  
at a cost, at sea and ashore, of £18 to £23

#### Summer is the Time

for a run by sea to Gibraltar and Marseilles. The P. & O. Company's Weekly Mail Steamer (11,000 to 21,000 tons) leaves Tilbury every Friday; arrives Gibraltar Tuesday morning; and Marseilles Thursday morning. On Friday (occasionally Saturday) the homeward mail steamer leaves Marseilles for Gibraltar, Plymouth (Wednesday) and London (Thursday). Passengers can leave Plymouth by express train and be home from the trip within 14 days. Glorious climatic conditions, first-class table fare, smartly run ships, comfortable cabins, broad promenade decks and handsomely appointed saloons ensure complete enjoyment. People with only a week to spare can travel one way to or from Marseilles by the P. & O. Bombay Express and thus do the round trip in seven days. For those with more time, Summer on the Riviera, the real French holiday season, is uncommonly attractive.

A F. & O. Picture Programme of Summer facilities to Gibraltar, Marseilles and Egypt, and reduced Summer Hotel Tariffs will be sent on application as below:—

**Summer in Egypt at Holiday Fares**  
*Handbook on Application.*

**By P. & O. to INDIA OR CEYLON**  
**AT REDUCED FARES**

**December—January, 1925-26**

From London to Bombay or Colombo and back, All Sea, **100 Guineas**. By the Bombay Overland P. & O. Express London to and from Marseilles, thence by Sea to Bombay or Colombo and back, **£120**. The dates will admit of a month's stay in India or Ceylon. For schedule of special sailings apply as below:—

# P&O

## CHIEF PASSENGER OFFICE

(F. H. Grosvenor, Manager),  
P. & O. HOUSE, 14, COCKSPUR ST., LONDON, S.W.1.



# The Adelphi

VOL. III. NO. 3.

AUGUST, 1925

## SCIENCE AND "THE CONTROL OF LIFE"

By John Middleton Murry

I HAVE lately received two letters, criticising the attitude which I express in these pages. These letters seem to me valuable. I therefore print them first practically complete, with a few running comments on points of detail, and reply to the general objection common to them both.

The first letter comes from an Englishman living in Greece :

Might I beg a moment's consideration of what may be the merest ass's bray? Might not THE ADELPHI have got too deeply coloured in passing through the literary vat?

Each month I have torn out and kept the articles that interested me. It may be because I am busier than I was, but I have not seemed to find much to keep lately.

"William Archer," "The Two Joans," "Quo Warranto?" "Imagination in Art and Science" and, from an early number "Mr. Joiner and the Bible": these are a few that catch my eye as I browse randomly in my sheaf.

Sir (the ass scrapes up dust that it may fall upon his head), J. G. Simpson in his "Man and the Attainment of Immortality" tells of "some very complex labile inorganic colloid, taking up water and carbonic acid, absorbing radiant energy, building up still more complex structures through interaction with introgenous inorganic matter, and finally in the course of the ages acquiring the power to convert radiant into chemical energy, and lo! the birthday of life. . . ."

## THE ADELPHI

In the same book is Sir Arthur Keith's genealogical tree: Wells's "Short History" is published at 2s. 4d. by the Labour Publishing Co.: Troward tells us that "The effort of Nature has always been upwards from the time when only the lowest forms of life peopled the globe. . . ." "His evolution in the future must be by conscious participation in the great work. . . ."

Sir Oliver Lodge's little book, "The Making of Man," was first printed in April, 1924, and four more times by the end of the following June, presumably because Mr. Joiner wanted to read it. There is James Harvey Robinson's "Mind in the Making"—all are cheap, "popular" books, popular and cheap because I suppose cheap people want to read them, because they want to know what the books tell them.

Weekly, the ass gnaws something out of the *Manchester Guardian*, monthly a little from THE ADELPHI. He can know nothing, labouring, war and statesman-sickened, in his remote hut, but he wants to know and to know too if others want to know—about what may *possibly* be a dawn that seems about to break on him and his fellow beasts, that may be brighter and far *surer* than any previous one, because we have 2,000 years of history and experience behind us that we can draw on. "His evolution in the future must be by conscious participation in the great work. . . ."

Is there anyone really out to tell about it and to say this idea exists if we can but see it? I see more hints about it than I did five years ago, let alone fifteen, but is there any definite conscious effort to tell of it?

Perhaps no one feels sure enough—naturally nobody can be sure, but thought and talk—the printed page talking to millions—greatly turn men's thoughts—men now, able to think and talk like men—blind, brave, patient, goaded, groping, clambering beasts no longer.

Of course the whole question is vast and complicated. But suppose the conviction that man controls his destiny becomes as general as the belief in pilgrimage did in the Middle Ages, surely we should be nearer something worth living for and handing on life for.

Simply—Jesus can't have known what he was talking about when he hoped to set up a mode of life. Without immense material resources wireless telegraphy would never have been discovered. Must we therefore think that it was "created" merely that it might exist and not be used? If the teaching of Jesus had been strictly followed, should we not all have remained Bedouin goat-herds—utterly ignorant? What could

## SCIENCE AND " THE CONTROL OF LIFE "

he say to Evolution and eternal change? Of course he knew nothing of such things.

Can you not tell us something real about all this, by degrees?

The second letter comes from a reader in London :—

In the first number of *THE ADELPHI* you invited readers who did not like anything in the magazine to write to you about it. I do not know whether this invitation is still open, but I have had month by month a growing objection to what you write, and am now venturing to put my view before you.

The Freudian doctrine of the subconscious received a striking proof in your article " On Wireless and the Nightingales," when your long-suppressed and ignored scientific complex took a terrible revenge, making you publicly confess yourself a savage writing nonsense. It is only fair to add that it was aided in this by the irresistible impetus of your forceful, logical and sincere style. Consciously, of course, you did not believe you were writing nonsense. Self-respecting people do not write nonsense, and self-respecting people will not waste their time reading it. You probably thought that in some way it was one of the permissible kinds of nonsense such as humorous or inspired nonsense. But this is not so. What you wrote was simply nonsense.

To me it seems your great error is this ignoring of, and contempt for, science. It is as extreme and as unreasonable as the opposite materialistic attitude towards poetry. You are a specialist in the mystical aspect of life. You are expert in handling this material, and that is why you are read with pleasure. A man who can do anything with superlative skill is attractive, but what is so very wrong is that you want to give a supreme and sole importance to your speciality. This is understandable in a magazine devoted to, say, stamp-collecting, but for a magazine run on a belief in life it is absurd. [No, inevitable. See below.—J. M. M.]

Why do you complain of being called a mystic? You are a mystic. [This is true. I am: but not at all in the sense in which it is generally applied to me.—J. M. M.] Possibly the great element in poetry is mysticism, but poetry has not that exclusive importance you think it has. Science is of at least equal value to human life. This is, of course, rank heresy to you, but as everyone knows, and men like James and Jung have stated scientifically, a human mind tends to run to a type controlled by its strongest idea. You have so concentrated your attention on this mysticism in poetry that it seems in danger of becoming a fixed idea.



## THE ADELPHI

The Life Force, Holy Ghost, or whatever else you like to call it, which first entered dead matter on the earth millions of years ago has built up successively finer and finer structures until the present day when man stands as its latest and greatest work. I was thunderstruck to read in *THE ADELPHI* a few months ago that evolution had ceased. [I have no recollection of any such statement in these pages. I certainly did not make it.—J. M. M.] One felt inclined to ask the exact date for this change in the method of the universe. By all analogy and knowledge the process will go on until creatures are evolved who are as far above us as we are above the animals. Biologists can see that man as a creature is only at the beginning of his career. So far from the process of evolution stopping in man (the absurdity of it!) it is under our eyes being accelerated enormously by the fact that the creature is itself now getting into its own hands power over life and mind and is becoming conscious of its power to control its future course.

This view of life seems to me to be consistent with the fullest meaning of such religious ideas as the Word made Flesh, and Immortality. That sense of contact with one's larger self is to me obviously the reaching out of the soul to that larger life which science shows is within our power.

But evolution is, it seems to me, inconsistent with the narrow doctrines of the Christian Church and of your own particular one-sided creed.

The cause of the present decay of the Christian Church was its too early assumption of final and absolute value for its doctrines, with a consequent inability to adapt itself now to the expanding mind of man. But whilst the Church could not possibly know that it was acting erroneously, you have not this excuse in your assumption of finality because you live in a scientific age.

Even if Shakespeare was filled with the spirit of life in greater measure than other men, he was still unable to achieve a final truth such as you claim for him. [Why?—J. M. M.] When Shakespeare, as you say, ceased to strive, it was not for the reason you think. It was not because he had discovered that it was wrong to strive, but because he could not see how to strive effectively any more. He knew (the Holy Ghost informed him) that life must be better, but he knew that with all his power he lacked something essential and so he had to give up in that strange state of mingled confidence and despair which I believe is what you mean by the mystical acceptance of life and equal acceptance of death. [This is only half-true, because it is an attempt to translate a spiritual fact into intellectual terms.—J. M. M.]

## SCIENCE AND " THE CONTROL OF LIFE "

What Shakespeare lacked was science. Bernard Shaw is a more useful man to the human race (from the point of view of this important matter of salvation) because he does not despise science. But the Holy Ghost is becoming more powerful and articulate and Bernard Shaw will not last as many tens of years as Shakespeare has lasted hundreds, because he will be quickly superseded by a man with greater science, and so the pace accelerates.

We are constantly impressed in *THE ADELPHI* with the inferiority of science—mere science is said to be a very imperfect instrument for apprehending life. But is mysticism any more perfect? That ultimate truth of Keats about Beauty and Truth is no ultimate truth at all. It is the most elementary thing in mysticism, and, like the elementary things in science, is the most certain. As one goes further into mysticism the more misty and uncertain it becomes.

If you deny science and so thwart the working of the Word made Flesh as it seeks to control matter it is obvious that you have no remedy for the ills of life and must accept death. The thought of death is very sweet when one experiences disappointment or sickness (a pathetic case in point is in the poem "Broadcasting" in the June *ADELPHI*). But a healthy, educated man should suspect something wrong with his outlook if he finds himself driven to such an idea.

Consider the real belief in life which runs through *Back to Methuselah*. No feeble acceptance of death here. But Shakespeare could no more have written this than he could have ridden in an aeroplane. [This seems to me absolutely wrong. There is no *real* belief in life in *Back to Methuselah*: the very reverse—a complete denial of life.—J. M. M.]

Man feels the control of life coming into his own hands. The religion of the future is creative evolution. Can *THE ADELPHI* ignore this and live? The spirit of adventure, invention, and science, has lifted us literally from the mud. It can obviously lift us to heights which we cannot at present conceive. You know all this but you ignore it.

If I am wrong in what I have written above, the sooner I discover it the better for me. If I am right I shall have the pleasure of having been of service to you. When I think of how firmly you hold your present beliefs my hopes die, but when I think of your sincerity and courage they live again.

These letters, as I say, are important. They are sincere and serious, and their implications, if not their actual substance, are profound.

## THE ADELPHI

Their surface meaning is not so important. Both charge me with deliberately neglecting science; one with a contempt for science. The latter charge is, I think, unwarranted. Science is not motor-cars and wireless, and, even if it were, it would still be untrue to say that I have a contempt for them. But the fact that I am not at home with complicated mechanisms, and cannot understand them, is no evidence for my attitude to science. That science, as such, receives but little attention in these pages is true; but that is simply because I am incompetent to write about it myself, and because my various attempts to persuade men of science to write here have failed. I am not in the position of being able to go into the open market and buy (even if they were plentiful) scientific articles of the kind that I desire. I can only wait for them to come. They do not come.

To accuse me of "denying science" seems to me wide of the mark. I regard science as having the same importance for human life as literature. But I am, to all intents and purposes, utterly ignorant of science; I have some knowledge of literature. Since it would be directly opposed to my convictions to write of that which I do not know, it may appear that there is a certain anti-scientific bias in these pages; but in reality it does not exist, any more than the anti-literary bias with which I am also charged. For neither literature nor science as I understand them are one single thing. As among writers, there are great ones and little ones, so among scientists there are great ones and little ones. It is the great ones that interest me. I am concerned with what man may be, and with what man has been as an indication of what man may become; therefore I am interested not in writing but in writers, not in science, but in scientists.

But—and here we begin to go deeper—my correspondents say with one accord: "What man may



## SCIENCE AND " THE CONTROL OF LIFE "

become depends immediately upon that ' control of life ' which modern science appears to offer."

Let us not be hypnotized by a phrase. " Control of life " is a phrase. Science has not yet achieved any ' control of life.' Experimental biology may be excited and even confident that it will shortly achieve *something*. What that something may be the biologist himself does not know, and it may be that he is merely peering over the edge of a chasm that separates one kind of existence from another. But the point is not really whether science may, or may not, attain to something which it calls control of life ; but that, even if it does, life will be thereby no more really " controlled " than it is to-day. Suppose—the supposition is more fantastic to me than it is to some biologists—that biological science was in a position to determine beforehand not only the sex, but other and more detailed physical and intellectual aptitudes of the unborn human being. (How far this is even *thinkable* in respect to more than the primary attributes of human beings, to more than the mere raw stuff of the created individual, I leave to my correspondents to perpend.) But suppose that the life, the character, and the destiny of the unborn child could be determined beforehand. What then?

*Who* will determine it? Is it even thinkable that the scientist would be permitted to wield this colossal power? Is it not certain that men will immediately demand that the life-controllers themselves be rigorously controlled? Will not everything once more depend upon the character, the vision, and the faith of humanity at large? Will not everything, and above all the freedom of any single scientist to put any single one of his " life-controlling " discoveries into practice, depend upon what men believe is desirable in life, upon their conception of the purpose and the end of life. And so we are flung back straightway upon the main and fundamental question " Worauf es ankommt? "—the

## THE ADELPHI

meaning of things. That question you must answer : the scientist's hypothetical "control of life" yields to it absolutely. With that question THE ADELPHI has never ceased to be concerned. It undercuts all that "science" with the neglect of which my correspondents reproach me.

But suppose, to take a particular instance, human life could be considerably prolonged : suppose that, quite soon, men could be made to live for 300 instead of 70 years. That would be an improvement which most men would probably rush to secure for themselves : there would be queues at the surgeons' doors : there would be riots in Harley Street. The immediate change in human circumstances would be prodigious ; but its quality and its effects would be calculable. Those 300-year lives would be just as arduous, just as disappointing, just as chequered with vision and despair, and *just as short* as the 70-year lives of old. For the living length of a life is determined not by its years, but by its rhythm ; not by its duration, but by its content. The longing to know "Worauf es ankommt" would be just the same. And suppose yet further that death could be indefinitely postponed. What then ? Life would be changed into an unendurable monotony of torment. That is all. There would be queues at the surgeons' doors : there would be riots in Harley Street : not to have life given, but to have it taken away.

For—and here we begin to touch still deeper things—if death is to be abolished the whole quality of life must be changed, or life would be unendurable, a nightmare horror. A human life is born, it grows, it ripens, and it dies—that is the beauty and the rhythm of the life we know, expressed once for all by Shakespeare (who knew things of which Mr. Shaw has never yet even remotely touched the fringe) :—

We must endure  
Our going hence even as our coming hither :  
Ripeness is all.

## SCIENCE AND " THE CONTROL OF LIFE "

Once break that rhythm by the abolition of death, and it follows inexorably that, as there is no death, so there is no growth, and *so there is no birth*. Life itself is shattered. There is no more process in time.

It may be well (and I for one believe it is necessary and inevitable) that man should conquer " the last enemy, death." But let him realise what it means. To annihilate death is to annihilate life; it is to surrender time for the timeless. Between the prolongation of life and the annihilation of death a great gulf is fixed. To prolong life would change nothing, nothing whatever, of the deep things of life; to annihilate death would change everything, catastrophically: in a timeless moment all humanity would pass into another, utterly different condition. When " control of life " gets thus far then the end of this dispensation is upon us; while " control of life " stops short of this, nothing essential will be changed.

We begin to see where this conception of " control of life " is leading us—into a strange country, where the mystic and the prophet are more at home than the man of science as such: for this condition, wherein " the last enemy, death " is abolished is one which the great mystics have experienced and the great prophets foretold. It is an utterly new dispensation, and one that cannot be conceived as in any way partaking of, or united with, the process in time which is the life we know. It is because the former of my correspondents does not realise this that he says at random that " Jesus cannot have known what he was talking about when he hoped to set up a mode of life. . . . If his teaching had been strictly followed, should we not all have remained Bedouin goatherds—utterly ignorant?" If the teaching of Jesus had been strictly followed, if it were followed strictly by all Christians for one single minute of this very day, this world would be at an end, as Jesus longed for it to be. He came to destroy; to



## THE ADELPHI

annihilate life in time, and replace it by the timeless mode of being which he called the Kingdom of God.

It may be that in time this process will be slowly accomplished, and that science will accelerate it. If science were to achieve the abolition of death, the change would be here : but the change itself would not be gradual, it would be just as sudden and catastrophic as Jesus believed it would be. Men will not in the future glide gracefully and easily into immortality any more than they do to-day, for a change in kind can never be a change in degree. There will be the moment of death and disruption ; the annihilation of death will be a more tremendous moment of universal catastrophe—the ending once and for all of life—than was ever imagined by the most sombre of the Hebrew apocalyptists.

Since this then is the appointed end of all “ control of life,” if ever it should become real, what need have we to take this unaccomplished thing into our reckoning? It was allowed for, long ago. Science, in so far as it may touch the deep springs of life, can bring no surprises to those who have set themselves to learn from the seers and the poets. They, and perhaps they alone, are prepared for the change of kind which would be upon us if the imagined “ control of life ” by the scientist were ever to become actual. The scientists (and by the scientists I mean the persons who talk glibly of the coming “ control of life,” not the great man of science, who is as much a man of vision as the poet or the prophet) are not prepared for it. They have never stopped to think out what they mean by “ control of life ” ; very few of them, so far as I know, have reached the simple conclusion that control of life must mean control of death, and control of death must involve the annihilation of death, and annihilation of death is annihilation of life. At anything short of this point of *absolute change* control of life means nothing

## SCIENCE AND " THE CONTROL OF LIFE "

more radical than an alteration in the mechanisms of existence : the moral and spiritual quality of life will remain just as it is. And that is why Mr. Shaw's " Back to Methusaleh " is, for all its wit and cleverness, an astonishingly superficial work. Its problems are not real problems, nor its solutions real solutions. Mr. Shaw has gone as far as his thought will reach ; he has shown that his thought will not reach as far as a single verse of Corinthians or a single line of *The Tempest*.

Thus I find myself back with Shakespeare and the New Testament. I cannot help it : one is bound to return, ever and again, to the minds that have been able to conceive an *absolute change* in human life. This, in the simplest terms, is the crux of the whole problem. Those who can conceive, and habituate themselves to the thought of, an absolute change in human life, have already anticipated all that science can ever achieve in the way of " control of life." They have touched a timeless apprehension in time, and so they have conquered death. Of this mysterious truth my second correspondent has a dim apprehension, when, after saying that what Shakespeare lacked was science, which Mr. Shaw possesses, he is for some reason constrained to admit that Mr. Shaw will not last as many tens of years as Shakespeare has lasted hundreds. Why not? Because someone will arise, says my correspondent, with more science. That is only half-true. The whole truth is that men have already arrived with the knowledge that lies at the end of all science, and Shakespeare was one of them.

But for this, I am afraid, I shall be accused once more of despising science. I do nothing of the kind. Science, like literature, like any other spiritual activity of man, is composed of two things—of timeless apprehension, and of process in time—of the thoughts of big scientists and the thoughts of little ones. I accept them

## THE ADELPHI

both. I believe in both the timeless world and in the world in time ; just as I believe that I myself partake of both. Both are real ; both claim my loyalty and receive it. I aim to serve both God and Mammon. If the Galilean were to appear to-day and once more demand that I should follow him in his tremendous attempt to shatter the world in time, I would not follow him ; I *could* not follow him, simply because I believe in life. To believe in life means, for me, to believe both in the timeless One, and the Many in time ; to believe in the spirit and to believe in the flesh. And the only way I have found to reconcile those beliefs, to make them truly one, is to accept death. To accept death means to accept it for oneself. That done, and it is not easy to do, life is accepted ; and when life has been accepted, its rhythm, its beauty, and its meaning are manifest.

LOVE AND SECRETS.—For, whatever some lovers may sometimes say, love does not always abhor a secret, as Nature is said to abhor a vacuum. Love is built upon secrets, as lovely Venice upon invisible and incorruptible piles in the sea. Love's secrets, being mysteries, ever pertain to the transcendent and the infinite ; and so they are as airy bridges, by which our further shadows pass over into the regions of the golden mists and exhalations ; whence all poetical, lovely thoughts are engendered, and drop into us, as though pearls should drop from rainbows. — HERMAN MELVILLE.

ORIGINALITY.—“To be original means to have a thorough knowledge and a just estimate of the value of other men's work, and to avail ourselves of it in order to advance beyond it, and do something better that is our own. It would be strange indeed, if, in order to be original, we had to keep ourselves in a state of virginal ignorance.” (*Benedetto Croce.*)



# AS IT WAS

*By* H. T.

## I.

I remember so well that very first meeting. We lived then in a little new villa in a row, in a new road quite near Wandsworth Common. The front room was the dining-room, and the piano was there ; the back room at the end of the passage, looking on to the tiny garden, which was kept full of flowers, was my father's study. It was lined with books, and in the middle of the room was his knee-hole writing table. On the table were scattered papers, his tin of Three Castles cigarettes, and his small tumbler of weak whisky and water. As a child I used to marvel at the way he puffed the smoke out of his mouth after sipping his whisky and water. He smoked and sipped all day long, while he wrote with his thin, delicate hand his small, thick writing, or lay on the sofa by the window reading the three-volume novels which he reviewed for part of his living. My father had a name as an essayist and critic among a small public, but he had to eke out his means with reviewing and journalism, and we had just moved from Liverpool to London, so that he could be more in touch with literary affairs.

Our house was comfortable and pleasant and very cosy, with people always coming and going. My mother and father were both very sociable and hospitable, and, though there cannot have been much money, owing to my mother's wonderful management there was always everything we wanted, and the unexpected guests who often turned up were warmly welcomed. My father's study was the general sitting-room,

## THE ADELPHI

and here all visitors were invited. Nothing disturbed my father at his work so much as to be left alone. Often, when my mother thought we were getting too noisy for him, we would creep out unnoticed by him into the dining-room, but in a few minutes we would hear his strange, halting step in the passage, and his voice asking why we had left him, and back we would all have to troop, to read aloud, play games, talk and laugh, while he wrote an essay or reviewed a book.

Our life was very happy, very social, very united. We were unconventional, though in no startling way—just informal and unself-conscious. A good deal of freedom of movement was allowed to us children, and freedom of speech and thought, and so far we had all pulled together, interested in new movements, and “well up in things,” I think we should have said—mainly artistic; and especially, of course, literary, and with wide views on religious and social questions. I think we were rather typical Unitarians (to which denomination my father belonged), except that we were poorer than most Unitarians, and that as our income was very irregular our ways were not so bound by the conventions that seem to be set up by a regular flow of money. By the well-to-do of our type we should have been called Bohemians.

I think at this time we were all at home: that is, my eldest sister, Ruth; myself, seventeen and just left school; and my youngest sister, Carrie, still at school. Both my sisters were clever girls, and had carried all before them at school. I hated school, where my sisters' brilliance threw into sharp relief my own incapacity, and I had begged to leave and be at home with my father, whom I adored.

I remember that afternoon. We knew the strange boy was coming. Our Unitarian minister had asked my father to look at some of his work and see if it was any good, and father had thought so highly of it that

## AS IT WAS

we had already nicknamed the boy "The Genius". Perhaps we had been told he was shy ; anyway, we left the study and went into the dining-room, and when he came he was shown straight in to father, who was waiting for him. We girls were playing the *Mikado* on the piano, and singing, and between whiles laughing and talking of the boy and wondering what he'd be like, and I think feeling a slight, amused prejudice against him for being shy and serious and clever. Soon, when we thought father had had enough of him to himself, we thought we should like to see him, but my two sisters drew back at the door, and I went in alone. I opened the door feeling silly, and giggling, because of the rather extravagant things we had been saying about him ; and just inside the door, standing by the bookshelves with an open book in his hand, he stood, so that I came upon him sooner than I had expected. This made me laugh the more, or feel inclined to laugh, had not his face, into which I looked, immediately changed my mood. My father introduced us and our eyes met—the boy's solemn grey eyes rather overshadowed by drooping lids with long lashes. He did not smile, but just looked steadily at me and I at him, as he took my hand with a very hard and strong grip. I remember feeling pleasure in that first touch and thinking : " I like him, I like the way he shakes hands and the straight intense look in his eyes." After I came in, the talk lagged, my father doing his best to keep things going, but David too shy and constrained by my presence to be able to talk. And soon he went, refusing to stay to tea to meet my sisters. I can't remember if he dwelt much in my thoughts after the first meeting, but I remember that though I thought him shy and awkward and silent, I liked him and wanted to see him again.

David was tall—just six feet—and slight, with broad chest and shoulders, which he carried well ; loose-



## THE ADELPHI

limbed and athletic. He had a beautifully shaped head, with a fine brow, and his thick fair hair, worn rather long, curled a little over his forehead and ears. His nose was long and straight ; his mouth very sensitive, with the upper lip overhanging the lower. The chin was strong. The eyes were grey and dreamy and meditative, but fearless and steady, and as if trying to pierce to truth itself. A most striking face, at once recalling a portrait of Shelley in its sensitive, melancholy beauty. His hands were large and powerful, and he could do anything with them from the roughest work to the most delicate ; they symbolize for me his strength and his tenderness. It is his hands even more than his beautiful face that come to my vision when I think of him ; I shall never forget them.

He came often, and always Father liked to have him alone, but just before he went I used to slip in and try to talk to him. I have no recollection of how we got on, but I think not very well, because his shyness made me shy.

My father helped him a great deal with advice about writing and reading, and with Father he got on well and talked well, my father's genial kindness and interest slowly breaking down David's reserve. My father became very fond of him and used to call him Phil, because his first name was Philip, and my parents had had a little boy called Philip who had died as a baby ; by a strange coincidence David's features and general colouring were very like this baby boy's, and I believe my father felt that this was his boy—the boy of his heart, loving the things he loved, and seeking self-expression in the same way that my father had sought it. My mother, on the other hand, grew to dislike him. She was jealous. She could find in this quiet, reserved, clever boy no point of contact, though as a rule she got on splendidly with boys, and preferred them to girls, and many came to the house, but none like this one. The boys she

## AS IT WAS

liked were jolly, frank, well-mannered, easy creatures, intelligent enough most of them, though hardly ever speaking seriously of things, but genial and cheery, who found her a very congenial hostess.

At this time David talked almost exclusively of the books he was reading, buying when he could, or borrowing from my father ; and my appearance in the study stopped all talk except what could be dragged out of him by questions. I do not want to give the impression that his manners were those of a hobbledohoy, for though he was very shy and reserved he had a natural courtesy and distinction of manner, which, though perhaps stiff for a boy of his age, was always dignified.

His writing was almost entirely devoted to descriptions of nature, of clouds, sky, trees, and landscapes, and I had read and liked very much some of his essays. My father got several accepted by a weekly paper of which he was co-editor, and the *Globe* printed some, and Father was giving him all the encouragement he could with appreciation and advice and help. This time is all a little vague to me, for I was outside it and was conscious of no attraction towards him beyond the impression still very distinct made by that first surprisingly firm grip, and that straight look, which made me patient with his silence, his shyness, and his awkwardness.

I had always had a strong yearning for the country. Our life had been spent in towns in the north of England, and owing to my father's invalidism we were not, as so many children are, taken out long walks by our father, and our times in the country had been confined to our summer holidays in North Wales. But I loved the country, and David's knowledge of country things gave us a common interest and subject of conversation, so that slowly we got to easier, but even now, not very easy terms—until one day my father said to David : " Here's Jenny dying for the country, and

## THE ADELPHI

a good walker ; why don't you take her, and show her some of the places you know ? ”

Before this happened we had moved to a much bigger and nicer house in a better neighbourhood. It had a very pretty garden which had been part of an orchard, and had several fruit trees in it—one, a very beautiful old cherry tree, always lovely to look at, and full of fruit in the season. A forked branch made a comfortable seat, and I often sat up there reading, and I remember how David once found me with bare feet and legs eating cherries and reading, and his surprise and pleasure at finding me unembarrassed by his seeing me like that. The study in this house had French windows opening on to the garden, and so in summer time the garden became our general gathering place, and the cherry tree branches provided seats for several of the company. It was from this house that we set off for our first walk to Merton.

Merton was then a pretty rural place with fields and lanes and footpaths and woods. We walked to it through a wilderness of mean streets, and I cannot remember that we talked much. Now, it was I who was shy, and conscious of my intellectual inferiority, and I tried to talk “up” to him, and became more self-conscious and said stupid things. But it was on this first walk that I spoke of the picture of a titmouse in a natural history book David had showed me some time before. It was a coloured illustration, and I could not believe that the colours were natural, and that such a lovely bright bird was really a common English, even London bird. My short sight and lack of observation made me ignorant of even the most commonly known facts of natural history, and this picture impressed me very much, and I told David as we went along how I had dreamed of a titmouse, only it was gigantic in size, and the colours of its plumage very, very vivid. He was delighted and amused at this, and this simple



## AS IT WAS

incident put us quite at ease with each other. We spoke of poetry, too—of Wordsworth particularly. I told him I did not care for him because he was “sentimental,” which shocked David, and made me feel ashamed. Afterwards when I got home I read some of the poems he had spoken about, and from that talk my appreciation of poetry began.

I remember in that first walk how we scrambled about in a little roadside copse. It must have been winter or early spring, for the trees were bare, and David showed me many old nests, telling me the names of the birds which had made them, and pointing out to me their special characteristics. Later on he brought me as a present a most beautifully compact, moss-covered nest of a chaffinch, which I could hardly believe was the work of a bird, and all my wonder pleased and amused him in his grave way. In that copse were many burdocks, and I remember asking him to throw some of the burrs on to my skirt, so that I could prove to my people I had really been into the country.

I enjoyed that walk. It was an utterly new experience for me. Everything was new—the very exercise which I found so delightful was new; the country so near home; my companion, the first boy I had ever been on such terms with. And all his knowledge of everything we saw, and all his intimacy—everything lifted me at once into a new world.

I was at this time about eighteen, and he nine months younger.

I remember we came back to tea in the dusk of the evening, very happy together, and with very much of our former constraint worn away. But even now I felt he was “The Genius” and I a very ordinary girl, as indeed I was.

After that he came and went, talking with my father, and more now with me, and accepted by my mother in a grudging way. In a little while we had arranged to

## THE ADELPHI

go another walk, and my father was delighted with the success of his idea.

This time we were to take the train to Barnes, and walk up Priory Lane and over Richmond Park to the heronry where once, at night, David had climbed to get a heron's egg. I remember the place, which was near a big lake, and the tall trees (were they Scotch pines or elms?) in which the huge, untidy, insecure nests were built, looking more like rafts of twigs than nests. I, with my dizzy head, could not endure it when he—to show me his prowess, I expect—began to climb the straight tall trunk of one of them.

He told me of his fishing exploits, and of the big pike he had caught in the pond near by, for he was always a keen fisherman, and we spoke of Isaac Walton whom I had read. I learnt here the names of several wild flowers, especially the little low growing kinds—tormentil was one: I have never forgotten it, and its tiny bright flower always brings back to me Richmond Park, and that day. He found me a good walker; I did not get tired, nor lag behind, but stepped out eagerly and joyfully always.

Of these walks we took many, but only one other is clearly recalled to my memory. We went again to Merton, and talked of Shelley whom we were both reading and both very full of. His life I knew very well, and he had for long been a hero of mine. It was his love of freedom, his hatred of injustice and tyranny that I chiefly responded to, I think, but also his spiritual beauty caught up my dawning perception of poetry. That day we talked of Shelley, and David had a pretty little volume in his pocket of selected lyrics—the flapping of a book in his jacket pocket as he strode along with his long sweeping stride is one of my earliest and latest memories of David—and we read “Adonais” and the “West Wind,” and “Love’s Philosophy” and “Epipsychidion” together.

## AS IT WAS

Coming home from Merton, not yet having left the country roads, and in the sunset-flushed mist of an autumn afternoon, as we walked side by side, silent for the most part, but deeply conscious of happiness and friendship, he took my hand, and I, full of a new wonder and a new fear, and new something I could not tell what, let him walk thus. When we got home, he would not come in to tea, but as we said good-bye at the gate, he asked me to keep the Shelley for my own, and I took it, but did not want to, and yet could not tell why.

I was a plain girl, morbidly conscious of intellectual and physical deficiencies. I had often cried bitterly in the thought that no man could ever love me, and that my longing for children would never be satisfied. I had so persuaded myself of this that it never entered my mind as a possibility until that moment when David took my hand; and even then I did not consciously think of love; all I felt was an unrest, a fear, a thrill, perhaps also a hope.

I was very affectionate, and almost painfully grateful to people who showed me affection, but conscious of my own unworthiness and with a constant distrust of myself. I think this was partly due to the contrast to myself in my two sisters, one older and one younger. Both were clever and self-confident and admired. They both succeeded where I failed, and my mother constantly said to me when she was irritated by her ugly duckling—"Why can't you be like your sister Carrie?" And that remark made it more and more difficult for me to attain that ideal, and I shrank further into my shell of self-distrust.

I loved all children passionately, especially young babies. I loved to see a pregnant woman—I almost adored while I envied her. I desired love, but only, at any rate consciously, in a spiritual or emotional form, for I did not comprehend physical love, and the whole



## THE ADELPHI

thing was very mysterious to me, and my mother had always refused to discuss the subject. I yearned vaguely for freedom, for something more than this quiet home life, where my mother's word was law. I had begun to have different tastes from the others. In dress, for instance, I took to what were then called Liberty dresses, very simple and plain in line, but of beautiful colours and ornamented with embroidery. The fashions then made this style of dress conspicuous, and my sisters laughed at it, but I was getting to the priggish stage and I am sure I thought myself superior. I wanted less furniture in my bedroom, and more air, and I read Ruskin and Morris and became their disciple. David and I read Carlyle's *French Revolution*, and *Wilhelm Meister* which particularly we loved, and which influenced us very much, me specially perhaps in my natural instinct for unreserve and freedom and frankness of speech.

I was plain at that age, with a round, healthy face and small nose; rather serious in expression, but not entirely unattractive. I had a lot of dark brown hair, which I wore parted in the middle with long plaits wound round my head—a simple style which suited my dress and my general seriousness. I was straight and tallish, and my own well-shaped and strong, and—as I think now—really lovely body, gave me intense delight. I loved being without clothes, and moving about naked, and took a pride in my health and strength. We read Richard Jeffries, and I remember with what delight I found the joy in one's body spoken of there as if it was right and good. For with my old distrust of myself I had wondered if the joy I felt in my body indicated some moral deficiency in me, as my mother's teaching had been in direct opposition to what I felt so instinctively.

David and I were getting much more unreserved together, and talked of anything and everything—of poetry a great deal—Keats, Shelley, Coleridge, Words

## AS IT WAS

worth and Tennyson chiefly I think—oh, and Byron too : indeed we read much from Chaucer onwards ; all was grist to the mills of our devouring minds. Also we began to speak of ourselves, our hopes, our feeling about life, our intimate thoughts and experiences.

It must have been about this time that I introduced myself to David's parents and brothers. He was the eldest of six boys. He had no sisters, and except for brief, awkward attractions for one or two girls who lived near, I was the first girl he had ever become friendly with. He knew nothing of girls ; less than I of boys, for though I had never been attractive to boys—my sister Carrie taking all these honours—I had met many at home, though I had never had a friend among them.

David's father was a serious-minded, liberal, self-satisfied, hard-working and conscientious civil servant who rose in his department quite remarkably. He was the thick set, short, dark type of Welshman, handsome perhaps, but to me very unattractive. He was a Non-conformist, and a student, with a very narrow view of life which made him an extremely unsympathetic father. All the boys except David were like their father in appearance, but not one of them like him in character. His mother was a very pretty fair-haired woman, with a sweet melancholy face, very retiring and shy and sad. David got his looks from his mother and much of his temperament, and he adored her—if such a word can be used of so reserved, so undemonstrative an affection which never wavered. A wonderful sympathy existed between these two, both too self-conscious to give it voice, but both sure of it always. The other boys were beyond her understanding, and there was a strange feeling of disharmony in that house, which, after my own united family life, depressed me whenever I went there.

I went to see David's mother, for I thought it

## THE ADELPHI

only fair that, as my mother knew David she should know me. I introduced myself boldly and impulsively as I did things then. She was very kind, though shy and reserved with me, and I think liked me—anyhow did not dislike me. When I returned home I told my mother about my visit, and she to my great surprise and distress was very angry. She said I had behaved in a very improper way, and that I had practically announced myself as engaged to David. I thought her attitude and her anger ridiculous, and there began in me that antagonism to my mother which, on my father's death, made home life unendurable to me.

After this visit I used often to go to David's home, and became well-known to his father and brothers.

The brothers were a strange lot of rather uncouth boys : their huge appetites and rough ways amazed me. Their parents provided no social life at home for them, and at a very early age they sought their amusements elsewhere, David being the only one who had a love of nature and literature. The house itself seemed to me ugly and uninteresting, and there was only one room which had for me any character or charm, and this was David's own room—study and bedroom. Here he kept his collection of bird's eggs and fishing tackle, and other possessions, and lived most of his indoor life reading or writing. A few photographs of pictures of Titian and Botticelli and Greek sculpture were pinned on to the walls, and there was a shelf of books—not many yet, for he had very little pocket money to spend. Here we were allowed to sit and talk and read, though his mother often asked me if I thought my mother would like it ; and sometimes because she was so uncertain that she was doing right for her boys, she would forbid us this room, and we had to be content to sit in the cold and formal little drawing-room at the back of the house.

At this time my father, who had always been very



## AS IT WAS

delicate, began to show signs of tuberculosis in the throat, of which he died. He was not able to see much of David, and when David came to the house my mother's dislike of him, now that my father was absent, became more and more obvious. About the same time David went away for one of his long visits to Wiltshire, where his grandmother lived, and where he could wander all day on the downs and tramp about the outlying country with an old vagabond from whom he had learnt much country lore, and who had first taught him how to bait a hook, and skin a mole, and shout the 'View Hulloo' when the hunt was out.

My mother, taking advantage of all the circumstances, forbade me to have anything more to do with David—to write to him or receive letters from him while he was away, or to see him when he returned. My father was too ill to be appealed to, and for the first time in my life I took the law into my own hands. I wrote to him secretly, and received letters from him through a school friend of his who was a great favourite with my mother, and who came to inquire after my father and bring my letters with him.

*(To be continued.)*

## *God's Word*

low ripple through the waters of the world,—  
found under other sounds, the hush beneath the hush,  
heard hardly,—or heard not at all until  
some one slow evening blesses with pure flush,  
orchard and cottage, meadow, wood, and mill.

MARGARET RADFORD.

# WHERE MUSIC GOES

By Henry Chester Tracy

THAT "the soul goes where music goes" is to me a comforting thought. I do not think that the man who made the assertion intended it to be a comforting thought. I do not find those thoughts which are intended to convey that annihilation of the personality is an entirely just and reasonable arrangement of things especially comforting ; for I believe that there are other characters in reality besides the merely just and reasonable : qualities of Being which transcend these two. And one of these qualities may be comfort, a quality frequently carried in music.

Someone is playing Kamennoi-Ostrow. If played with execrable haste and neutral colour this can become a mere *salon-stück*, not worthy to be mentioned in the same breath with transcendent things ; but it happens just now that the player is obedient to whatever inner motion it is that controls such music, and the best, or what might be called the soul of it, comes, filtered of the trivial, through the air of two rooms. Hearing it so tendered, Kamennoi-Ostrow becomes to me a living thing, of the same nature as the best there is in me or in any other one.

I do not think that the real intention here is a picture in music. It is true that I hear the waves wash in dripping coolness over the island rocks ; and the conjurer is there ; but beyond him is Rubinstein, a spirit moving upon the air ; a spirit penetrant beyond the picture, subtile, conversant with pain.

Island rock and surge of sea, these are accidents that liberate mood. Or, rather let us have it, Anglo-Saxon *mod*, which is mind, feeling, heart. Then in place of

## WHERE MUSIC GOES

a *salon-stück* with surface figures,—ephemera,—we have the mind, feeling, heart of the pencil-maker's son releasing *aught which is real*. Aught or nought : a something or a nothing, that's as you please. To me at this listening moment it is as valid as anything I am, and more valid than the things I am not but often have desired to be. Even then, it brings me nearer to some of these wanted things than I can get in any other way, and that is the element of comfort implicit : a comfort that does not preclude pain.

Rubinstein, playing in some untimed past that for me has no place-mark or date is, in the instant of this music, trenchant *being* poignant and real : *my* being, if that matters, as much as any one's ; but not important because mine. It is perhaps not more ephemeral than what I call myself ; perhaps less so. Experience—and more. Something of spirit, that treads sound waves. Thing or person, or pure being, it moves with thin foot-falls on the air, and goes—where?

Wherever it is that music goes I think that I shall be willing to go. As music is being remembered I think I should be glad to be remembered, and to be. There is the apparent memory of printed scrolls and functioning brain-cells, or even the record disc. I do not mean that. It may be pure mysticism to say that *any* memory is real, or that the universe has an organ for remembering other than the mechanisms we know. But I know very well that Kamennoi-Ostrow is only one of many meanings that cannot be confined to words. These avoid crowds and evade concert-halls, they foregather in forests or by the sea. Their keel is just beyond the horizon, as they voyage through lacunæ of our air.

I know that some are sensitive to these meanings and for others they do not exist. These can have no quarrel with those. I know that Yesha'-yah was sensitive to them when he wrote the words, "Comfort ye, comfort



## THE ADELPHI

ye my people, saith your God " ; and that Handel was sensitive to them when he made them into divine recitative expressive of Compassion which so far transcends realization that Zionistic illusions lapse into utter pathos when compared to it. And to the mind of pundits this Compassion is naught : a cipher with no integers to match it.

Within that cipher lurk many mysteries, much beauty and those meanings that are in the old music and not in the new. Such old music is in that thematic fragment, *Chant Nègre*, which Kramer adapted to the violin. Safely sleeping upon those strings is beauty that Zimbalist may wake : age-old beauty out of darkness, the warm darkness of a child-like race. If we did not know that some One has compassion on that people and remembers their souls, we should know it when this beauty wakes ; for in *Chant Nègre* a kindness is remembered and the peace of tranquil rivers, still forests, sunlight and gloom. There is the memory of an ineffable happiness, ripened in the soul of the race. The light of suns is there, vivifying, and the dark of shadows ; slow waters, rippling on a quiet shore. Such themes are of the nature of us all. They live, although the neurons that throbbed at their birth cannot be assembled again. The One remembers.

In almost violent contrast we could surely say that the little-known One remembers just as well, when the wind is stinging cold with snow-whirls in the air, and " Autumn and Winter " is the theme. Glazounov weaves a richer figure for a garment of the Russian soul. Beauty links arms ; it races with the northern blood and takes up the rhythms of the dance. Tone-textures gather the heightened colour of the cheek, there is a gladness, God knows ; light, movement, all the zest of the North.

Again, when a symphony orchestra plays the third movement of Rimsky-Korsakov's *Schererazade*, there

## WHERE MUSIC GOES

arises upon the ground an enchantment that is not of the earth. Elfin peoples are there, with frail pipings, but all about and above them is an air of those meanings which music brings. This is a pleasant country. One is being carried ; not excitation, or any spell of the earth : sheer well-being, and the joy of things. This is the air of some country sought by travellers, dreamed of, but never found : and this finds it. Elsewhere is verisimilitude, but here is reality . . . in the first theme, with a fragrant background of sound ; an infinitely soothing foil of melody ; the harmonic shadow of graciousness. It is not abject subject but benign ruler of the Kingdom of Change. Its very life is in transmutations and it transcends them, to become something supreme : a form of Being. For this is the way with music, or that which is remembered by One.

Outside there are disintegrations, and rhythms : ebriole creations. Better than those are the grotesqueries which lead the way to this place : slight and gaily pathetic they dance in the sun-space, and so vanish into the shadows of sound. It is so that we intuit our home : the place where music comes from, and to which it goes. It is a place beyond thorns and shadows. Here are tapestries of figured air, that crotchets and quavers may blow aside. It is a most lovable place.

MR. ARNOLD DOLMETSCH.—Mr. Arnold Dolmetsch announces a Festival of Chamber Music of the 16th, 17th and 18th centuries to be held at Haslemere Hall, Haslemere, from August 24th to September 25th, 1925. This Festival offers a unique opportunity to attain that familiarity with forgotten styles and instruments which is necessary before the music of the early composers and Mr. Dolmetsch's re-creation of their art can be truly appreciated. Tickets may be had of Messrs. Charman, Haslemere.

# PASCAL

By Leo Tolstoy

No passion holds man so long in its grip or hides so completely, sometimes to the very end, the vanity of temporal, worldly life, and none so removes man from an understanding of human life and its true well-being as the passion for human fame in whatever form it may manifest itself : petty vanity, ambition, or love of fame.

Every vice bears within it its own punishment and the sufferings that accompany its satisfaction expose its worthlessness. Moreover, all other vices weaken with the years, but love of fame increases as **the years** go by. Above all, desire for worldly fame is always connected with the thought of the service of man, and a man when he is seeking the approval of others may easily deceive himself into thinking that he is living not for himself but for the good of those whose approval he seeks. And therefore this most crafty and dangerous passion is more difficult than any other to uproot. Only men of great spiritual strength free themselves from it. Great spiritual strength makes it possible for such men rapidly

---

*Translator's Note.*—During the last years of his life Tolstoy compiled a selection of passages mostly from non-Russian writers which he called *A Circle of Reading*. As it consisted chiefly of translations into Russian it escaped translation from the Russian. But it so happens that it contains this article by Tolstoy himself on Pascal—an essay by the greatest Russian religious thinker of the nineteenth century on the greatest French religious thinker of the seventeenth. It is probably the only completed article of Tolstoy's, written for publication, that has not yet been translated. The article was written in 1906.—A. M.



## PASCAL

to attain great fame, and that same spiritual strength enables them to perceive its worthlessness.

Such a man was Pascal. And such also was Gogol, a Russian who was akin to him. (I think it was through Gogol that I understood Pascal.) Both of them, though they possessed quite different qualities and quite different passions and range of mind, went through the same experience. They both very quickly attained the fame they passionately desired. Having attained it they both immediately understood the vanity of what had seemed to them the highest and most precious blessing in the world. They were both horrified at the temptation in the power of which they found themselves. They employed the whole strength of their souls to show people all the horror of the error from which they had just escaped, and the greater their disillusionment the more urgent seemed to them the necessity of finding a purpose in life which nothing could destroy.

This was the cause of the passionate attitude towards faith both of the Russian Gogol and of Pascal ; and in this lay the cause of their disregard for the work they had previously accomplished. All *that* had been done for fame. And fame passed, and there had been nothing in it but deception ; therefore all that had been done for its attainment had been unnecessary and insignificant. Only one thing was important : that which they had lacked, that which had been veiled by the worldly desire for fame. Only one thing was important and necessary : a faith which gives meaning to our transitory life and firm direction to all its activities. And this consciousness of the necessity of faith, and of the impossibility of living without it, so strikes such men that they cannot but be amazed how they themselves, and people in general, can live without a faith explaining to them the meaning of their life and of the death which awaits them. And becoming conscious of this, such men direct the whole strength of their mind and soul to saving people

## THE ADELPHI

from the terrible error from which they have themselves just escaped, and to showing them that without faith it is impossible to live : that only faith saves. And they try to snatch out of people's hands the screen which, as Pascal says, they hold before themselves while running towards the precipice.

Such a man was Pascal, and in this lies his great, inestimable, and much undervalued, service.

Pascal was born at Clermont in 1623. His father was a well-known mathematician. The boy, as all children do, imitated his father in early childhood, and occupied himself with mathematics, showing extraordinary capacity. His father, not wishing to develop the boy too prematurely, did not give him mathematical books ; but young Pascal listened to his father's conversation with his mathematical acquaintances and began himself to invent a geometry. The father, seeing these works, which were quite extraordinary for a boy, was so struck that he went into ecstasies and wept from emotion, and from that time began to teach his son mathematics. The boy soon not only assimilated what his father showed him, but began to make independent discoveries in mathematics. His success drew to him the attention not only of his neighbours, but of the learned ; and Pascal while very young became known as a remarkable mathematician. His fame, as one who despite his youth was an eminent scientist, encouraged him in his studies, his remarkable powers made it possible for him to increase his great fame, and he devoted his whole time and strength to scientific occupations and investigations. But his health had been weak from childhood. Intense study weakened it still more, and while still a youth he had a serious illness. After his illness, at his father's request, he reduced his studies to two hours a day and employed his free time in reading philosophical works. He read Epictetus, Descartes, and Mon-

## PASCAL

aigne's Essays. Montaigne's book struck him particularly. It revolted him by its scepticism and indifference to religion. Pascal had always been religious, and in a childish way believed the Catholic teaching in which he had been brought up. Montaigne's book suggested doubts to his mind, obliging him to think about questions of faith, and in particular to consider how far faith is necessary for man's rational life ; and he began to be still stricter with himself in the fulfilment of religious duties, and read, besides philosophical works, books of a religious character. Among them he came upon the work of a Dutch theologian Jansen, *The Reconstruction of the Inner Man*.

In this book there was a discussion as to whether, besides the lusts of the flesh, there is not also a lust of the spirit, consisting in the satisfaction of man's inquisitive passions, at the basis of which there lies the same thing as in all other lusts—egotism and self-love ; and whether such refined lust does not remove a man, more than all else, from God. This book struck Pascal greatly. With the sincerity natural to great souls, he felt the truth of this discussion in relation to himself. And although to renounce scientific occupations and the fame attached to them was for him a great privation, or just because it was a great privation, he decided to abandon the scientific interests which tempted him, and to direct his whole energy to clearing up for himself and for others those questions of faith which now occupied him more and more.

Nothing is known of Pascal's relations to women, or what influence the love of woman had on his life. His biographers, on the strength of his short composition, *Discours sur le passion de l'amour*—in which he says that the greatest happiness attainable by man, love, is pure spiritual feeling, and should serve as the source of all that is elevated and noble—come to the conclusion that Pascal, in his youth, was in love with a woman who



## THE ADELPHI

stood above him socially and did not respond to his love. At any rate, if there was such a love, it had no result on Pascal's life. The chief interests in his young life consisted in the struggle between his striving toward scientific occupations and the fame they gave him, and his consciousness of the emptiness and insignificance of such occupations and the harmfulness of the temptation of love of fame, and his wish to devote his whole strength entirely to the service of God.

For instance, at the period of his life when he had already determined to renounce scientific occupations, he happened to read Torricelli's *Investigation of Vacuum*. Feeling that this question was incorrectly decided and that a more exact definition was possible, Pascal could not refrain from a desire to verify those experiments. While verifying them he made his famous discovery of the weight of the atmosphere. This discovery attracted the attention of the whole scientific world. The learned wrote to him, visited him, and praised him. And the struggle against the temptation of worldly fame became still more difficult.

As part of that struggle Pascal wore a belt with nails turned inward, and every time it seemed to him that on reading or hearing praise of himself the feeling of vanity and pride rose within him, he pressed the belt into his side with his elbow, the nails pierced his flesh, and he remembered that whole process of thought and feeling which diverted him from the temptation of fame.

In 1651 an event occurred to Pascal which might seem unimportant but produced a great effect upon him and had a great influence on his spiritual condition. On the Bridge of Neuilly he fell from a carriage and was within a hair's breadth of death. At the same time his father died. This double reminder of death caused Pascal, more even than before, to concentrate on the problems of life and death. A religious direction dominated his life more and more, so that in 1655

## PASCAL

quite retired from the world. He joined the Jansenist Society of Port Royal, and began to live an almost monastic life there, meditating on and preparing a great work in which he intended to show, first, the indispensability of religion for a rational human life, and secondly, the validity of the religion which he himself professed. But here again the temptation of human fame met him. The Jansenist Society of Port Royal, in which he lived, had provoked the enmity of the powerful Jesuit Order, and as a result of Jesuit intrigues the men's and women's schools established at Port Royal were closed and the convent of Port Royal itself was in danger of being closed. Living among the Jansenists and sharing their opinions, Pascal could not remain indifferent to the position of his co-believers, and he was so carried away by the dispute with the Jesuits that he wrote a book in defence of the Jansenists which he called *Les Lettres Provinciales*. In this work Pascal did not so much justify and defend the teachings of the Jansenists as indict their enemies, the Jesuits, by exposing the immorality of their teaching. The book had great success, but this fame could no longer tempt Pascal. His whole life was already a constant service of God. He drew up for himself rules of life which he followed strictly, deviating from them neither from idleness nor from illness. Poverty he considered a fundamental virtue. "In poverty and destitution," he said, "there is not only no evil, but there is even great good. Christ was poor and destitute, and had not where to lay his head." Giving away all he had to the poor, Pascal lived in such a manner that he only possessed the necessities of life. He managed as far as possible without a servant, only having one when he was himself too ill to move. His dwelling was of the very simplest, as also was his food and clothing. He arranged his room himself and fetched his own dinner. His illness increased, and he suffered unceasingly, but

## THE ADELPHI

he endured his sufferings not only with a patience that astonished those around him, but even with gladness and thankfulness. "Do not pity me," he said to those who condoled with him on his condition, "sickness is the natural condition of a Christian, for in that state he is such as he should always be. It accustoms him to the deprivation of all sensuous blessings and pleasures, teaches them to refrain from the passions that oppress man all his life, and to be free from avarice, and always in expectation of death."

The luxury with which relatives who loved him tried to surround him oppressed him. He asked his sister to move him into a hospital for incurables that he might pass his last days with them, but his sister did not carry out his wish and he died at her house. In his last hours he was unconscious. Only just before the very end he raised himself from his bed and with a clear and joyful expression said: "Leave me not, O Lord!" Those were his last words. He died on August 19th, 1662.

Man needs two beliefs for his well-being; the one is faith that an explanation of the meaning of life exists, and the other is supplied by the discovery of the best explanation of life. Pascal accomplished the first of these better than anyone else. Fate, God, did not permit him to accomplish the other. As a man dying of thirst jumps at the water which is before him without examining its quality, so Pascal, without examining the quality of the Catholic faith he had been brought up in, saw in it the truth and the salvation of man. It is enough that it is water; it was enough that it was faith.

It goes without saying that no one has a right to say what might have been, but it is impossible to imagine Pascal, with his genius and his sincerity towards himself, believing in Catholicism had he examined it. He had no time to submit it to that stress of thought which he directed to the proof of the indispensability of faith,



## PASCAL

and therefore in his soul dogmatic Catholicism remained whole. Without touching it he rested upon it. He rested on what was, and is, true in it. He accepted from it an intense labour of self-perfectionment, a struggle against temptation, an aversion for wealth, and a firm belief in the mercy of God, to Whom he submitted his soul when dying.

He died after accomplishing only a part of his work—without accomplishing, or even beginning, the other part. But because the second was not done, the first is not less precious : *Les Pensées*, collected from detached scraps of paper on which the sick and dying Pascal had jotted down his thoughts. The fate of that book was wonderful.

A prophetic book appears,—the crowd stands in amaze, struck by the power of the prophetic word, agitated, wishing to understand, to clear up, and to know what to do.

And one of those people comes who, as Pascal says, think they know, and therefore confuse the world. Such people come and say : “ There is nothing here to understand, to elucidate ; it is all very simple. This Pascal (it was the same with Gogol), as you see, believed in the Trinity, in the sacraments. It is evident that he was a sick man, abnormal, and therefore, owing to his weakness and illness, he understood everything upside down. The best proof of this is that he rejected and renounced even the good he himself had done and that we approve of (because we understood it), and that he attributed great importance to quite useless ‘ mystic ’ discussions about the destiny of man and about a future life. Therefore we must accept from him not what he himself considered important, but what we can understand and what pleases us.”

And the crowd is glad ; first it did not understand, and was called on for an effort to reach the height to which Pascal wished to raise it ; but now everything is

## THE ADELPHI

simple. Pascal discovered the law by which pumps are made. Pumps are very useful, and this was very good ; but all he said about God and immortality was rubbish, because he believed in the Trinity and in the Bible. We need make no effort to rise to his level ; on the contrary, from the height of our normality we can patronizingly and condescendingly acknowledge his merits, despite his abnormality.

Pascal shows us that men without religion are either animals or madmen ; he rubs their noses in their abominations and insanities and shows them that no science can replace religion. But Pascal believed in God, in the Trinity, in the Bible, and therefore for them it is a settled matter that what he told them about the insanity of their life and the vanity of science is untrue. That same science, that same vanity of life, that same insanity, which was so unanswerably explained to them, they consider to be real life, truth ; but Pascal's reasoning they consider to be the fruit of his sick abnormality. They cannot deny the power of this man's thoughts and words and they place him among the classics, but the content of his books is not wanted by them. It seems to them that they themselves stand immeasurably above the highest condition of religious consciousness to which man can attain, and to which Pascal did attain, and so the importance of his wonderful book is hopelessly hidden from them.

Yes, nothing is so harmful, so ruinous to humanity's true progress as the arguments, adroitly arranged with all sorts of up-to-date adornment, of those *qui croyent savoir* [“ who think they know ”], and who in Pascal's opinion, *bouleversent le monde* [“ confuse the world ”].

But the light shines even in the darkness, and there are people who, without sharing Pascal's faith in Catholicism, still understand that despite his great intellect he could believe in Catholicism, preferring to believe in it rather than not to believe in anything, and who

## PASCAL

also understand the meaning of his wonderful book which irrefutably proves the necessity of faith and the impossibility of a human life without a faith, that is, without a definite, firm relation of man to the world and to its origin.

And having understood this, men cannot fail to find the replies, of a faith corresponding to the degree of their moral and intellectual development, to the questions put by Pascal.

In that lies his great merit.

*(Translated by Aylmer Maude.)*

### THREE THOUGHTS OF PASCAL

Who would not believe, when he saw us constructing everything of mind and body, that we understood that combination very well? Nevertheless it is the thing we understand least of all. Man is to himself the most mysterious object of nature; for he cannot conceive what is body, still less what is mind, and least of all how a body can be united to a mind. That is the pinnacle of all his problems, and that is himself.

I spent many years in the study of abstract sciences, and the small opportunity for communicating knowledge disgusted me. When I began the study of man, I saw that these abstract sciences are not proper to man, and that I had strayed farther from my true condition in entering them than others in ignoring them. So I forgave others for knowing little about them. But I thought I should at least find companions in the study of man, and that this is man's proper study. I was mistaken; still fewer study man than study mathematics. It is only through not knowing how to study man that men study other things.

Two extravagances: to exclude reason, to admit reason only.



# THE COMFORT OF LITTLE THINGS

*By* Ralph Bates

How might I live within the empty stead  
That memorably your laughter once had filled?  
How might I endure, hearing still your tread?  
So I have hastened to the lands untilled,  
Among harsh sorrels I have laid my head.

How might I go upon accustomed hills?  
Have I not said that from love's gleaming peaks  
There flowed sweet nurture of the clear cold rills?  
How might I go where still the old song seeks  
My lips, how see the low slope's daffodils?

How may mine eyes look westward when the sun  
Burns redly on the sea grown grey and dim?  
Even so ends love, I said, that is begun  
In that red glory of the eastern rim  
Oh bitterness the world's large splendours, every one.

So I have found my peace in little things  
That have not yet grown treasonable to me :  
In a little gleaming shell with purple rings  
Is comfort, and by the pale stones of the sea  
I find my comfort when a small wave flings  
The red dulse' sodden branch, green laver's veil.  
Sea hollies and the spear-grass silver flecked  
Are mine, for love large-striding hath not recked  
These random things, and these things may not fail :  
So have I found my peace in little things.

# A. E. HOUSMAN :

## A RETROSPECTIVE NOTE

By H. P. Collins

THE author of *A Shropshire Lad* left a deep impress on his own generation ; but it descended to ours as somewhat of a legend. He had published so little ; and it left so little to debate.

Professor Housman is a poet of large utterance : and he has an emotional intensity, finely controlled, which only three or four of his contemporaries equal. He has only created, he avows, at moments of keen personal experience. He expects no longer " to be revisited by the continuous excitement " under which he wrote his earlier poems. Mr. Housman was excited in the 'nineties ! That first fine careless rapture, he does not hope to renew. But the quality of his later pieces is unchanged. He is the poet of a genre : he has a vicarious method of self-realization which gives him a more *objective* power.

Many of the greatest works of English fiction have made their material of human passions set in the atmosphere of primitive, elemental life, which has its control from within and not from social environment and customs. Such are *Wuthering Heights*, *Adam Bede*, and Hardy's great Wessex novels. The most sophisticated and deeply cultured minds agree that an unrestrained setting gives the freest scope for an epic presentation of life. It is part of a limitation in Thackeray and Henry James that such a transmission of the creatures of their imagination was impossible to

## THE ADELPHI

them. They had always to work in those aspects of life which were familiar to their contemplation.

But poetry does not show the same lesson. It must work at higher pressure, be more economical, seek a more rarefied theme. It has not so much leisure and license in manipulation. A subtle, complicated and leisurely poetry is fraught with danger. It is difficult, in the lyric at any rate, to transpose, to dramatize the compulsive emotion. Lyrics of a translunary order, such as Shelley's, have to be considered as subjective, judged in the light of that limitation. If one takes the primitive, rustic setting, as does Mr. Lascelles Abercrombie in *The End of the World*, one gives a particular purpose freedom; but one sacrifices most of the purely individual, lyrical ecstasy. This must not be taken to suggest that Mr. Abercrombie's way is the less valuable; he is a dramatic poet: but, if having Mr. Housman in mind, the question is how he can succeed, and has indeed succeeded, in giving his lyrical genius full play in work that is not in the least like, in substance, the ruminations of an austere-minded scholar.

The most remarkable thing to be noticed in Mr. Housman is that when he wrote *A Shropshire Lad* he was rather ahead of his age; to-day, in producing poetry of a similar nature, he is a little in the wake of things: but he is also nearer to the general thinking mind than he was in the 'nineties. In other words: his natural vision has a prophetic quality. Bearing this in mind, let us examine more particular points: the literary method and the peculiar transmission of attitude that distinguish him.

Take first *A Shropshire Lad*, since it is pure genre poetry: consider how far it is personative and how far subjective, personal. All the themes are elemental; all the language is that in everyday use. The emotional attitude is so untouched with the subtleties of culture that we must suppose it is deliberately simplified. This



means that the poet first imposes on himself a restraint akin to that involved in the use of dramatic structure, though not actually dramatic.

Once more, let us remember : the greatest poetry does not need complex emotions. The thoughts of the Shropshire Lad are not the thoughts, even by poetic license, of an ordinary peasant : they are the thoughts of a poet whom one pretends to have the upbringing and outlook of a country boy. So the rustic, elemental world that is the subject of contemplation is viewed, in consistency, as a world complete in itself. There is no adjustment to the exterior, wider realities of the world of educated apprehension. (The Shropshire which Mr. Housman's poems apprehend is as the Warwickshire seen by Adam Bede—indeed, a less educated Adam Bede—not Warwickshire seen by George Eliot. The Shropshire Lad speaks of things as he feels them : Mr. Housman does not stand behind him to tell us how else they might have been felt.

This is an uncommon thing in modern literature. The lowly protagonist recounting a tale in the first person is not a familiar figure in recent fiction, and under older traditions he was never free from the interpositions of his creator. If Emily Brontë had let Hareton Earnshaw narrate *Wuthering Heights*—as she might very well have done—the narrative would have been full of Emily Brontë ; the personative sense as then conceived would soon have proved inadequate. Mr. Housman, as a poet, is quite unique in this respect ; he can make his countryman give us back any experience without a trace of inconsistency. In qualification it may be said that the Shropshire Lad is not a detached creation but the embodiment of Mr. Housman's own temperament at a lower range of culture and experience. But that does not affect the achievement, is probably rather a condition of it, making the purely lyrical attitude possible.

## THE ADELPHI

How far—since this question must touch the quality and scope of his vision—is Mr. Housman faithful to his whole experience : and how far does he limit himself to the spiritual (as apart from the social and cultural) experience possible in a rustic? Does he, under the necessity of excluding subtle experience, “unsight the seen”? Is it possible to do so and still be a sincere poet—that is, a poet?

It is certain that very much is “seen” by Mr. Housman that could not reasonably be brought within the expression of a rustic spokesman. But is the spiritual essence of these perceptions, apart from the intellectual setting that relates them and might be needed to symbolize them in a more sophisticated way, attributable to a simple mind?

No true poet, none who has the authenticity that is written large upon Mr. Housman’s work, denies his own, full emotional perception : “It is not possible.” But he can restrict himself in the language, the range of equivalence through which he liberates these perceptions—and thus does he bring them into dramatic character. Sophisticated poetry—and the highest poetry must be that—is the subtle relation of simple intuitions : in simplifying poetry one correlates and symbolizes the same intuitions more slowly as it were ; shutting off from one’s stock of experience derivative and allusive imagery and the more sophisticated properties of language. The poetry may be strengthened in consequence : or it may be weakened. Usually, in the case of the poets who can face at all such deliberate restriction as is needed in genre poetry, the quality of the poetry is deepened, because concentrated, and its range is narrowed. In view of one or two pieces in the *Last Poems*, it seems that Mr. Housman’s Shropshire Lad has enabled him to accentuate the unity and sincerity of his thought, and has cut him off from very little that is valuable to his particular receptiveness.

## A. E. HOUSMAN

The pervading note of Mr. Housman's assertion is a peculiarly barren scepticism. To this state of joyless indifference—it is neither fear nor tedium of life, but something that seems far less pregnant—every fragment of experience that he sets down, in the end returns. Towards the close of the Victorian epoch, when literature was still steeped in the habit of religious assurance, such a negation of any purpose beneath the scheme of things was wholly unfamiliar. Mr. Housman, though we may not easily realize it to-day, did enter the literary rena in his homely Shropshire guise as the originator of a new poetical philosophy. He was apart equally from the daring, exuberant, shallow Paganism of Swinburne and from the grave, profound, subtly moral theism of Thomas Hardy. For the joy of mortal life's life he gave us only the exaltation of despair. For the earnest questioning revolt against the witless arbitration of our destiny he substituted a brutal defiance.

Oh never fear man, nought's to dread,

Look not to left nor right :

In all the endless road you tread

There's nothing but the night

. . . malt does more than Milton can

To justify God's ways to man.

Ale, man, ale's the stuff to drink

For fellows whom it hurts to think.

Look into the pewter-pot

To see the world as the world's not. . .

Heigho, the tale was all a lie ;

The world, it was the old world yet. . .

Luck's a chance, but trouble's sure,

I'd face it as a wise man would,

And train for ill and not for good.

This particular aspect of Mr. Housman's thought does not, in the nature of things, inspire his highest poetry. More impressive, in its restraint, is his half-ironical attitude towards beauty. Mr. Housman is morous, not of life in any aspect, but of that joy in beauty which may exalt and vivify the feelings till they



## THE ADELPHI

become a menace. Hence the fierce refutation of the solace which the sweetness of Nature and of primal things offers to the sensitive mind : his perception of sheer beauty is insistently blotted—in these earlier poems especially—by the contrasting hideous presence of sordidness, shame, and death. Peace is only admitted as a retrospect or a hopeless dream. Of that unresisting which men miscall delight Mr. Housman is entirely sceptical : joy—the adventitious bloom of life as Aristotle saw it—is to him at best a narcotic ; it is not a moral condition. The sense of moral effort may add intensity to our defiance of the injurious gods ; but the fruits of goodness are dust and ashes in our mouths.

This seems like a philosophy of moral desperation yet it is the essence of Mr. Housman that something valid does remain. It lies partly in his realization that an elusive, purposeless beauty touches such a philosophy as his more closely than rational, inherently elevating beauty ever could. The reader is always aware of this and it tinges every shade of emotion that is evoked with a deeper pessimism than is induced by the gravity of Mr. Hardy or the relentless, clear-eyed fatalism of Mr. Eden Phillpotts.

The beauty that touches Mr. Housman's verse—to define it further through a series of negations—is not sensuous and physical ; nor is it personal and difficult by its nature to communicate, in the mystic's way ; nor is it transcendental, abstract. Rather it is simple, flame from the clash of tragic contrast between happiness and its eternal foiling. Let us observe this in *Bredon Hill* the emotional poignancy of which Mr. Housman has never quite maintained elsewhere.

In summer-time on Bredon  
The bells they sound so clear ;  
Round both the shires they ring them  
In steeples far and near,  
A happy noise to hear.

## A. E. HOUSMAN

Unpretentious, almost naïve, notable for its felicitous rhythm and its brevity ; yet hinting to the expert in Housman a vague disquiet.

Here of a Sunday morning,  
My love and I would lie,  
And see the coloured counties,  
And hear the larks so high  
About us in the sky.

One notices chiefly the indefinable aptness of "coloured" counties and the pregnant simpleness of "so high."

The bells would ring to call her  
In valleys miles away ;  
Come all to church, good people ;  
Good people, come and pray.  
But here my love would stay.

That last line is a complete and perfect symbol : instantaneously and without seeming effort of the poet we are rapt in the sense of a peace untouched by mundane stress or religious despondency : the sufficiency of love is epitomized, with no forethought or afterthought.

These bells will peal upon our wedding, he would say, and we will come to church in time. Quietly, yet with ghastly inevitability, there follows the note of tragedy ; untrammelled with wider implications, but revealing in the way of true poetry a universal quality in life.

But when the snows at Christmas  
On Bredon top were strown,  
My love rose up so early  
And stole out unbeknown  
And went to church alone. . . .

And would not wait for me.

The bells they sound on Bredon  
And still the steeples hum,  
"Come all to church, good people"—  
Oh, noisy bells, be dumb ;  
I hear you, I will come.

## THE ADELPHI

*Per ardua ad astra.* The ardours are those supreme ones of restraint in feeling and language : the stars illumine no uncharted heavens of abstract beauty but the grim realities of terrestrial experience. It is only one way of revelation ; yet perhaps it is the surest, certainly it is one of which this age stands greatly in need. Mr. Housman has not the sustained breadth of comprehension that makes the great poet : to set against this he makes no attempt, seemingly does not desire, to write "out of Time"—or to escape from his own place in time. There is in his work no negative tendency, no vain revulsion of the spirit ; in his language no superfluity, no lack of discipline and self-sufficiency. His æsthetic response to life is always direct ; though a certain indiscriminateness as to what is valuable in poetry has accentuated in him a limitation best described as an occasional, local poverty of sensibility, by contrast, for instance, with Mr. Hardy's all-embracing sympathy. To those who feel, with much justice, that Mr. Housman's poetry is of the earth earthy, it must be opposed that what he can presumably do best he does indeed : in that he is unlike nearly all the others who, whatever they may attempt, do nothing.

As for the *Last Poems*, though the voice of criticism has been, for all its shrillness, rather half-hearted ; there can be no question of retrogression : they are deeper more various and not less spontaneous than those of *A Shropshire Lad*. In *The West*, Mr. Housman's deepest idiosyncrasy is finely and memorably revealed and *Hell-Gate* is an experiment of novel and broadened significance. The *Last Poems*, as has already been said, are simply less of a sensation than the earlier collection, relative to a more sophisticated and sceptical atmosphere in religion and moral acquiescence.



# THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

ANTHOLOGIES.—There are so many of these suave symposia that one wonders they are not observed by the Chancellor of the Exchequer with the usual consequences. They bloom in the spring and at the approach of winter they flock like larks over stubble and starlings over reed-thickets. Abundance is a joyful thing, but not altogether as these abound. Perhaps it is my lazy eccentricity of prying into the lumber-rooms of the past that makes me think the selectors confoundedly normal and even lazier than myself. And yet, what can the object of anthologies be if not to render readily accessible and enjoyable what was not so?

It would be good, if some gay yet industrious hand gathered in a good deal of Irish verse which does not compete with *My Dark Rosaleen*, *When I play on my fiddle in Dooney*, and the others. Am I wandering wildly when I like such perfections of native jubilation as this?

The buck and doe, the fox and eagle,  
They skip and play by the river side,  
The trout and salmon are playing backgammon,  
In the clear streams of Castle-Hyde.

(No, sir, *The Groves of Blarney* was an imitation of this.)

The grand improvements there would amaze you,  
The trees are drooping with fruit of all kind,  
The bees perfuming the fields with music,  
All to adorn sweet Castle-Hyde.

O sweet content! Then, what iciest of beauty's  
laughters could wholly resist such a honeyed address as

Are you Aurora, or the Goddess Flora,  
Euternatia, or Venus bright?  
Or Helen fair beyond compare  
That Paris stole from the Grecian's sight?

## THE ADELPHI

Thou fairest creature, you have enslaved me,  
I'm intoxicated by Cupid's clue,  
Whose golden notes and infatuations  
Deranged my ideas for you, Colleen Rue.

And Ovid himself, with a little of his Roman logic and ruthlessness removed, might have recorded the passage of an angel somehow thus,

With ivory she was well denticulated,  
Her lips decorated with mellifluence,  
Her person the wise Nestor might have captivated,  
She transcended fair Venus in her adolescence,  
Her breasts in suspense were like silver globes,  
Her vesture consisted of rich satin robes,  
Her limbs were consistent to the cedar that grows  
In the spontaneous groves of Cathleen Thriall.

These are only fragments of inimitable poems produced, as I understand, in vast variety and published in Cork a hundred years since. I find them (by chance) described in a magazine of the period, but where I would wish to find them and the whole polyhymnious constellation (to use their manner) is in an anthology.

The gaiety of nations is not so obvious at the moment as it used to be, and solemnity and gravity have too much share in our literary attitude. Where are our drolleries? I hope someone is about to publish a selection of non-soul-searching verse since the days of Austin Dobson. But, for that matter, who will supply us with a real choice of that age of courteous wit and self-criticism, the Victorian? (Up start a dozen people to impale me upon the word; but I am not thinking of Tennyson and his baronial system). Mention of W. J. Prowse's brilliance, or Frank Scudamore's, or H. S. Leigh's even has usually no effect, because we have no masterly selection in a good, recent form. Haynes Bayly, him even, languisheth. On this side of English poetry, indeed, there is not much sunlight. The merry men seem to be buried the north side of the church. Nor can we any longer plead refinement and change of

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

manners as the reason why d'Urfey, though a dog at a catch, is not met with among congenial vagabonds in a pretty book. Must I hunt for Soame Jenyns's Works in order to possess such a masterpiece as the *Epistle from the Country*, in order to pay a call with a wit of 1735?—

The servants run, the pewter clatters,  
My lady dresses, calls, and chatters;  
The cook-maid raves for want of butter,  
Pigs squeak, fowls scream, and green geese flutter.—  
Now after three hours' tedious waiting,  
On all our neighbours' faults debating,  
And having nine times view'd the garden,  
In which there's nothing worth a farthing,  
In comes my lady, and the pudden :  
" You will excuse, sir,—on a sudden "—  
Then, that we may have four and four,  
The bacon, fowls and cauliflow'r  
Their ancient unity divide,  
The top one graces, one each side;  
And by and by, the second course  
Comes lagging, like a distanc'd horse. . . .

It is one of a shoal of nimble witticisms : who will call them to one pleasant pool?

What I have said may seem to imply that I find a lack only of lighter anthologies : it is not so. Can a reader who knows no Greek or Latin find arranged in any volumes the choicest translations of the best of the classical poetry? Can one buy a book that would introduce such various achievements as Ovid's *Baucis and Philemon* by Dryden, the *Georgics* by R. D. Blackmore, fragments of the *Odyssey* by Leigh Hunt, Calverley's *Theocritus*, items from the Greek Anthology by Shelley, Cowper,—but the list is too long. Have we a careful and unbiassed Sonnet Anthology? Have we any successor to Lamb's *Specimens of the Dramatists*; there have been dramatists since Nahum Tate, with whom, I suppose, he concluded his fascinating feat of research and criticism?



## THE ADELPHI

Someone will urge that a person who wants such anthologies as those should make them for himself. I have barely time to do more than keep a little anthology of suggestions for absent anthologies, and a curious hoard of books and a knack of reading fast supply my own wants in some degree; my argument is that the energies which are at present anthologizing are not always great, or else not well applied. Go farther afield, ye elegant extractors!—EDMUND BLUNDEN.

WHY WORDS?—Not less profound than the credulity of some of the supporters of “spiritualism” is the unreason of many of its critics. Unreason that culminates in the rejection of verbal evidence on the score of its poverty. It is certain that those who demand either wisdom or converse as immediately intelligible as that which a man on earth may hold with his neighbour, have never made the experiment of placing themselves, imaginatively, in the situation of a being finally released from life as we know it. Such a being may be imagined either as coming into possession of an immense number of lives—modern science makes it increasingly difficult to deny individual pre-existence—or, by those who consider the case for pre-existence still insufficiently established, as coming into conditions which stand in relationship to his experience on earth much as do the wide activities of a man happily launched in the world to the years of an over-clouded childhood. In the first case it is possible that the acquisition of pasts—not as memory but as full consciousness—is quite unlike the earthly sense in which a single past shows itself extending backwards in a line of years. It is possible that his lives, which may be compared to the years in the single life of a man, would stand as it were compressed, grouping and regrouping according as he moves within his consciousness of them now this way and now that. In the second case, the case that supposes only a single

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

existence on earth, the released being may not unreasonably be imagined as both unwilling and only with very great difficulty able, to pin his attention upon the relative darkness from which he has emerged. The difficulty grows obvious when we consider the mighty effort of concentration that is needed for maturity to recall even in the locality, even in the very house where it was spent, more than a few incidents of any single year of childhood. Without such effort only a few things stand out, single incidents, presenting themselves, in an order that pays no respect to chronology and with an importance that is independent of any recognizable scheme of values.

And in either case, whether we suppose the liberated spirit as coming into possession of a single, or of an indefinite number of pasts, why should we suppose that a full consciousness of the past necessarily includes effortless possession of the language or series of languages by means of which he achieved partial communion with his fellows? It is easy to flout verbal communications solely on account of their incoherence, their apparent uselessness. And the unreason of demanding answers to our questions, cosmic chit-chat, useful information and so forth appears at once when we consider the nature of earthly help at its best. The work of love at its best. Is it words, preaching, direct communication? Is it not anything but these? Does not the best-loved teacher hint, parry, remain incomprehensible until the seeker has discovered the truth for himself?

To one escaped our world may show as a nursery, the business of life and death important only as to children are their small affairs. No good elder tells a child that these are childish. He knows the purpose they serve. Knows also how soon they will cease to matter. To one escaped our world of words may be more difficult of access than to a grown man are the babblings of his infancy.—R. THEOBALD.

## THE ADELPHI

BEACH-COMBINGS.—The old man turns over a seaweed-crustèd bit of wood with his boot as he says: "Yes, young feller, there's some rum stuff gets itself left up here when t' tide goes out." That is as far as he will go to explain anything: if you can't understand without a long sermon——. And in sheer self-defence, under the glare of his single watering eye, I have to rouse my memory to agree. "Rum stuff" doesn't mean anything of the cast-up-starfish-minus-a-leg sort, but something like a petrol-tin with prettly letters painted in Chinese with a tar-brush, or a soaked fragment of a yacht's stores book, with entries still discernible: "Waste . . . 3s. 8d." "Brasso . . . 6d.," and so on.

Candles often come up, some of nearly brown wax, all worn by their pounding in the sea, all broken, and some reduced to short links of wax heads.

I often wonder what stories lie in the hearts of the taciturn baulks of charred wood—sometimes you find chunks of pure charcoal as big as your leg—and the lumps of cork knocked off collision-mats and rafts and buoys all over the world. Paint-cans, with grease or the remains of red-lead roll up, battered and despairing; queer-shaped nails and bits of rivets make their way to land; sometimes old clothes, torn (one wonders?) from the backs of drowned sailors; lengths of bamboo and foreign-looking cane; once a strange relic of the war in the shape of a clip of rifle-ammunition, Mark V.; soldiers' blue-enamel water-bottles in plenty, always with the khaki felt casing washed away; and, now I remember, nameless pieces of tough wood that might have been aeroplane-spars.

All these things, cast up on the beach, have a provoking way of standing self-sufficiently aloof and refusing an answer to any of the inquiries they start. Whatever horrors they have passed through, fires, collisions, gales, and evil calms, whatever currents they



## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

have ridden, changing at the junction-stations of the sea from one main-line to another, they will not say. Tired out, they roll up blindly to the beach, and even when they are there, who knows what odd chance will send them off on another meaningless quest? A bather may fling them out after a swimming dog, or the tide and the changing wind conspire.

Once I remember making out in the nearly erased paint of what was possibly a timber from a ship's-boat, the faint symbol: "E." You'd be surprised to see how long a person can afford to spend in gazing at an old bit of wood like that, and wondering . . . "E."  
—J. H. CLYNES.

GREEN WOUNDS.—The house stood in the residential part of the city. The neighbourhood, with its pleasant, leafy roads, suggested an air of prosperity. The owners of these houses set out leisurely when the morning had well advanced, having need no longer to fight but only to exercise supervision over their subordinates.

The door closed behind him, and the man stood admiring the well-cared-for garden. He gave a sigh, and walked slowly to the gate. There he set down his bag and paused. He seemed loath to go. As he looked back at the house something in the design of the window curtains woke his memory. Where had he seen it before——?

Brussels!

How good life was in Brussels in the months following the Armistice. Jock was his pal in those days; at the races, the Opera, and all the attractions of the Belgian capital. There were no parades, and the rate of exchange increased their pay.

Dear old Jock; what had become of him? They parted when the "cadre" was ordered home. He

## THE ADELPHI

recalled that last journey ; the old fighting positions ; the gun-pits at Baisieux where the Battery had fired its last shell ; the arrival at Dover ; the demobilization centre.

His heart warmed as he remembered his home-coming in the grey morning hours, his wife's tears, his little son rather frightened of the big man who had arrived from nowhere to live, "for always, darling," with Mumsie.

How confident he had been. With his gratuity and little capital (how absurdly small it seemed now !) he began to trade. Things prospered ; money was plentiful. Soon there was a reckoning of spare cash and consulting of continental time-tables, and presently Earl Curzon, in the name of His Majesty, requested all whom it might concern to allow them to pass without let or hindrance in foreign lands.

Later came a time of quiet trade and labour disputes. There was a morning when he stayed away from the office because a traveller was expected with "a small account you have probably overlooked." Another firm expressed profound astonishment at the "unusual delay."

Within a few months his creditors accepted his offer grudgingly.

He looked across the garden, noting the garage, the oaken gates, the electric lamp. These things gave a sense of satisfaction. They stood for Success.

Success ! Ah well——

He remembered the time when he began to buy the morning papers with ill-spared tuppences, and the phrase "In reply to your advertisement" became a damnable iteration. A firm sent him out to sell haberdashery, and glob-faced buyers treated him with contempt. Later, he prowled office passages cajoling

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

lerks to buy a literary production designed to instruct them, amongst other things, how to sole their boots. His wife's eyes rivalled her wrists in redness these days.

One Sunday there had been a joint, a two-shilling claret, and a bar of chocolate for the little man. The second-hand dealer explained he was really guilty of philanthropy.

How long ago it seemed. He idly kicked a fallen leaf, then faced again towards the road and stood hesitating outside. Suddenly he turned and looked intently at the house next door. He opened the gate, walked quickly up the path, and rang the front door bell.

The door was opened by a maid in cap and apron.

"Yes?" she asked, inquiringly.

He set his bag down on the step, and opened it.

"Can I sell you any laces, tooth-paste, combs, this morning——?" he began.

"Nothing this morning," she said, and shut the door.—A. S. RYAN.

THIS IS AFRICA.—Cape Town is not Africa. It is not even, as dwellers in Johannesburg and the Free State will tell you, South Africa. Behind its great stone gateway, Table Mountain, it works and dances, snubs and is snubbed, like any provincial English city.

The black and brown population of the little town harmonizes better with the great brown peaks which hem it in. When the Malays, in their red fezzes, walk through the streets carrying their dead, bearing the corpse on his litter draped with gold and crimson scarves, or when, silk-robed, they crowd down to the docks to welcome the pilgrims back from Mecca, then in its colour and its dignity the East speaks to us occidentals, but only as it might speak in many a city continents away from Africa. When, again, on Old Year's



## THE ADELPHI

Night or Christmas Eve, the whole half-caste youth of Cape Town streams up and down Adderley Street, pushing, shoving, squabbling, making love, the spectacle is but a travesty of any English town on holiday. The lasses of the village, servants or factory girls by day, queen it here in bright and exiguous garments of the fashion of two years ago. Some of them wear large and lacy hats, as tawdry and ugly as any cockney girl's, save that some instinct makes them select those scarlets and golds and purples for the trimming of their ridiculous headgear, or for the material of their bright dresses, to look most beautiful against the warm browns of their skins. Some wear the folded and wrapped kerchief of the Malays instead of hats. But almost all powder their cheeks heavily with powder chosen, it would seem, mainly for the strength of its scent. And the effect of lip-salve and powder on brown lips and cheeks is extraordinary. They show dark purple in the glare of the yellow electric lights ; unless, as is frequent, they wear the fevered flush of an added coating of rouge, when the effect is even worse. But the clothes, the make-up, the silk stockings, even the high-heeled strut, are all as foreign to Africa as the tall office buildings, the plate-glass shop-fronts, or the languorous, hipless, bustless, waxen beauties behind them. Even the summer smell of the streets, ripe figs, peaches and strawberries, dust and melting asphalt and newly watered roads, is scarcely more Africa than it is any other spot upon which the unrelenting sun has blazed from five o'clock in the morning.

But this week, for a day or so, Cape Town became Africa. A thoroughfare was to be repaved, and a gang of natives was brought down from somewhere in the North to tear up the road. Walking near the thoroughfare on a baking day of white light and hard grey-blue sky, we became aware of a strange reverberant rhythmic sound that was not a song, though it had

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

rhythms and cadences. Turning a corner, we found a couple of dozen natives, some bare-headed, nearly all bare-chested to the pitiless sun, with their picks raised high above their heads like banner-poles. Some of the men were quite young, one or two had grizzled hair, but the arms of all were shapely and beautiful and bronze. As we looked, the picks crashed down in unison, to swing up again in a single gleam, and so down and up in time and measure. And they rose and fell to a song from which words emerged, and a chant of two or three tones, a song which was as close akin to the stark lift of Table Mountain as it was alien to the little crowd of tourists, shop-boys and passers-by who stood, fascinated, to listen to it. The white teeth gleamed in the bronze faces, and the picks glinted as they rose and poised and swooped downwards to crash again. Our ears told us that one voice, or perhaps two, sang the air, and the rest hummed some sort of wordless burden to it. But to detect which was which was impossible. They did not sing with their mouths as Europeans do : the beautiful, strange, wild volume of sound, queerly resonant, filling the whole long street with its pulsing waves, seemed to emanate from every inch of their shining dark bodies and hover in the air about them. The white men and women and children stared at them, stirred in spite of themselves by that timeless, tuneless, incomprehensible chanting : the singers stared back at them, some with the smiles of performers facing a sympathetic audience, some with a cheerful indifference and absorption in what they were doing. Between the two, akin to both, at one with neither, stood coloured tailors, errand-boys, servant-girls, and above their careful European clothes their liquid eyes looked curiously and not quite confidently from one to another. And this, too, is Africa.—R. S. ALEXANDER.

# THE THEATRE

"THE CHERRY ORCHARD."\*—We will not insult our readers by supposing, as the critics in other journals are forced to suppose, that they do not know *The Cherry Orchard*. We assume that it is as familiar to them as *Hamlet*, and that they know that to see it acted, however inadequately, is to feel that it is one of the most wonderful plays ever written. The lights are put out, the curtain rises, and we are there, invisible, transported without any explanation or preparation, to that place and time. That is the peculiar strangeness of it. In other plays we have the feeling that the author and the actors are allowing for the fact that there is no fourth wall; in *The Cherry Orchard* we feel that more than the fourth wall is removed; the barriers are down between the characters and ourselves—more, the barriers are down between them and their surroundings. All that comes under the author's spell is bathed, is steeped and saturated in an emotional atmosphere which is compact of silvery whiteness, the pale light of very early morning, the chill of frost, and the mingled fatigue and expectancy that breathes in that hollow room where Dunyasha and Lopahin wait for the sound of wheels.

What an amazing idea it is to let the curtain rise upon that homecoming, and to delay the arrival so that we have time to realize the imaginative significance of the ancient house, so soon to be filled again—of the shabby furniture that looks as though it were profoundly asleep; to taste the chill air and to know that, out there, as far as one can see there are white, glittering trees. So that when Dunyasha cries, "There they are!" we run with her to welcome them; we share the emotion; it

---

\* This article was written by Katherine Mansfield in 1920, on the production of the play by the Art Theatre.



## THE THEATRE

is only chance that we don't unbutton somebody's coat or carry a roll of rugs into the room beyond. And because we have been there before, have, in a moment of time, waited all night long, there is a special, thrilling meaning in all that is said, all that is done—the silence of dawn is broken, is set vibrating and quivering by the returned travellers. It is very late. They ought to be in bed.

Yes, all through *The Cherry Orchard* people are up when they ought to be in bed, talking when they ought to be silent, laughing when they ought to be crying, making jokes when they ought to be making contracts. And the critics who have never in their lives left undone any of the things they ought to have done glare and say: "This is a tragedy," or glare and say: "This is a comedy," or glare and say: "This is a bore." And some of the actors are as bad as the critics. They cannot conceal their horrible feeling of guilt at the unheard-of conduct that a man of genius has imposed upon them.

It is all very sad, and not at all the kind of spectacle which the respectable dramatic justiciars of *The Times* or the *Daily News* should be invited to witness. No wonder our colleague of *The Times* cannot understand why the Art Theatre should have chosen this play to present to a British audience. God forbid that a British family should recognize itself in this mirror, or feel that these creatures from whom the tyranny of the ought has been lifted are of like passions with themselves. And how we sympathize with him when he finds that Leonid, the brother, and Peter, the tutor, "are frankly bores"! How we envy him! How deeply we realize that if only we could find them boring we should at last belong to that famous bulldog breed that keeps the Empire going and the circulation of *The Times* at boiling-point.

Alas! We are poor little humans, who hate the

## THE ADELPHI

ought and feel that it numbs some rich, rare fineness in us, who feel that were it lifted we too might suffer a sea-change and of our bones coral be made; and we rejoice that there has been one man in our age who has had the wisdom and the vision to see these things in us. If we could only be true to ourselves as the people in *The Cherry Orchard* are to themselves, come as near to others as Tchekov came near to them, "love our stones" with the same passionate sincerity of the moment as Liubov Andreevna loves hers, admit with the same honesty as they do that they feel freer now the incubus of the home they love has gone, speak to the cupboard with the same flow of sentiment as Leonid does to his—why, then we might not please *The Times*, but something might be done with us.

And as with our souls, so with that crystallization of them which is art. Until a play like *The Cherry Orchard*, so intimate, so real, so beautiful, is felt to be as near and dear to a cultivated British audience as it is to a Russian, there is not much to be done with the English drama. Until our critics feel by instinct that it is to make themselves a laughing-stock to the world to speak of *The Cherry Orchard* and *The Skin Game* in one breath—and we speak as respecters of Mr. Galsworthy—whatever may be done with the British drama will wither before the stare of polite incomprehension. Until our English actors feel themselves as at home in, as thrilled by and as proud to act in *The Cherry Orchard* as the artists of the Moscow Theatre did in 1904, whatever may be done with the British drama will be stifled at birth.—KATHERINE MANSFIELD.

"THE WILD DUCK."—There is an old story of man's golden days, when he lived in a garden of beauty and happiness. Then something happened. Through some strange error of his own, he was shut out of the garden, and he never got back again. To many of us

## THE THEATRE

hat has become simply "a tale which holdeth children from play and old men from the chimney corner." And even in our pulpits, preachers who wish to seem advanced tell us that the Garden of Eden can no longer be considered as a scientific fact. Nevertheless, it is a scientific fact that man is for ever judging his own conduct and its fruits by an impossibly high standard—and that we all acknowledge, as the greatest masterpieces, such works as "Hamlet," in which the world is judged from the standpoint of a soul far superior to our own. Whence comes this higher standard, if not from the memory of some higher phase of life? I do not see how we can account for it unless we accept the story of the Garden and the Fall as the most indisputable of all facts.

It seems to me that Henrik Ibsen was, more than any other poet, supremely conscious of man's fall, and that his life-work was an attempt to bring man back to the heights from which he has fallen—a task so colossal that it was doomed to apparent failure. I say "apparent" failure, because Ibsen can never be said to have failed till his writings cease to have a meaning for us. The secret of Ibsen's peculiar power seems to me this: that his works reflect not only his own deliberate mission, but the hidden mission of all mankind. For if Ibsen's life was a conscious battle to mine through the mountain to the sunshine, the history of all man's endeavour reveals a less conscious but none the less determined struggle with the same object. This is true of all save the indifferent creatures of the earth, the Rosencrantzes and Guildensterns of life, the poor blind souls who have lost the memory of the garden. Such people found, and still find, nothing but gloom in Ibsen's lays. But for those who have eyes to see, through the background of even his darkest tragedies the vision of the garden shines, a beckoning and encouraging light in a twilit world.



## THE ADELPHI

The old parable of the garden and the fall shines especially through that strange and beautiful tragic comedy of "The Wild Duck." It is this symbolic meaning which makes the play something more than a masterpiece of characterization, and which lends supreme importance to its present revival by Miss Sybil Arundale and a band of fine players in London.

Once the wild duck ranged over the sea and the mountains, soaring and diving in the free air, with none to stay her flight. Then something happened. She got a couple of shot in her body. She was hit under the wing, so that she couldn't fly, and so she dived to the bottom. . . .

Wild ducks always do that. They shoot to the bottom, as deep as they can get, sir, and bite themselves in the tangle and seaweed and all the devil's own mess that grows down there. And they never come up again.

But your wild duck came up again.

We had such an extraordinarily clever dog. And that dog—he dived in after the duck and fished her up again.

And she thrives quite well in the garret there?

Yes, wonderfully well. She's got fat. You see, she's been in there so long that she's forgotten her natural wild life. And it all depends on that.

You're right there. Only never let her get a glimpse of the sky and the sea. . . . I should like to be a clever dog—an extraordinarily clever dog; one that goes to the bottom after wild ducks when they bite themselves fast in the tangle and seaweed.

In the eyes of Gregers Werle the home of the Ekdal family was like "the depths of the sea," and the soul of Hjalmar Ekdal was like that poor stupid duck, nestling, fat and contented, in a garret. Yet there was still some beauty and promise in the Ekdal household—in the soul of the little girl, Hedvig. But Hedvig is going blind—and that is what turns the whole thing from ironic comedy to heartrending tragedy. Werle tries to rescue the Ekdals from these depths, but his attempts to "hold up the claim of the ideal" ends in a com-

## THE THEATRE

plete fiasco of misunderstanding. "I confidently expected," he says, "to see the light of transfiguration beaming upon me from both man and wife; and now I see nothing but dullness, oppression, gloom."

So, in the eyes of Henrik Ibsen, man was not only shipwrecked but plunged in "the depths of the sea," and his soul was like the wild duck, tamed and imprisoned in the garret of civilization. Yet there was still the beauty and promise of youth in the world. But youth should go blind—if youth, too, should lose the vision of the sea and the sky! That, for Ibsen, was the tragic danger, which inspired him to write *Ghosts*. But *Ghosts* was too much for the nineteenth century. Its reception was a fiasco of misunderstanding. Ibsen, like Werle, had expected to see "the light of transfiguration," but instead he saw nothing but dullness, oppression, gloom." In the atmosphere of that gloom he wrote *The Wild Duck*. For this play, for all its brilliant humour, ends on a note of pain—with the death of Hedvig, and Werle's declaration that the claim of the ideal can only bring sorrow, then life is not worth living. Is Werle, then, a piece of self-ridicule, and the whole play a confession of failure? The answer is to be found in Ibsen's most revealing poem :

Have I failed, then? Will my way  
Never lead to clearer day?  
Yet the light of upper skies  
Blinds and dazzles still mine eyes.

Nay, still down! I must not cease:  
There is still the eternal peace.  
Break the way, my hammer! Enter  
To the hidden mystery's centre.

Stroke on stroke I smite my way  
Onwards until life's last day.  
Not a glimpse of morn surprises:  
Not a ray of hope uprises.

Far from finding life not worth living, Ibsen was to

## THE ADELPHI

rise to greater heights, and to build the mighty tower of *The Master Builder*. It cannot be said that he rose from the depths, for he had never really fallen. His soul was like the real wild duck, which, though it dips into the gorge, is still higher than the domesticated fow waddling on the plain.—ERIC MIDDLETON.

“THE NEW MORALITY” (*Kingsway Theatre*).—That a comedy should be inconsequential is its nature; the extent to which the characters pass their time in pleasant, human foolery is both its value and its qualification for success. Yet it is the nature of a satire to set up these human follies, and to rear a comedy upon them. Laughter is the accompaniment to each; soul-satisfying music in the ears of the comedist maybe, although to the satirist but an accompaniment. His object, which he partially attains in a subtle, unfair manner of whispering, “See! These follies, these vices . . . you and I know all about them. We’ve learnt; but see what the shrimps in my play will do! I swear they will amuse you,” is fundamentally an intellectual one. And it is upon the greatness of the follies selected from human relationships that the value of his object rests. For his life’s sake he must hear in the laughter that distinct chuckle which shows so clearly that he is touching the reason of his audience.

The late Harold Chapin, in his work, “The New Morality,” makes a most homogeneous fusion. It is described as a comedy, but it would be difficult to explain away its satire. It is certainly inconsequential, but it mocks, in itself, those weaknesses which make our social world; and it is by the intellect that it can be judged. An advantage which is no mean or common one. It is the story of an idle woman, living in a houseboat, who has quarrelled with her neighbour, using “dog-show” names to her, because she believed her to have stolen her husband’s affection, having made him



## THE THEATRE

into an errand-boy for hairpins, etc., etc. The innocent husband, sensing a strangeness in the air, has undertaken long journeys up and down the river for a week past, filling his pockets with lock-tickets as an alibi of detachment and solitude ; heightening his own ridiculous position and further wounding his wife's vanity. And the timid, introspective, voluble husband of the insulted lady comes, on his own initiative, for an apology.

He is a delightful character ; pure satire but clothed in the richest comedy ; a thin, nervous man in a gay river blazer, " Jones, Jones, I hate to do it, I hate to . . . but . . . I shall consult my solicitor." Life is only really possible to him in abstract terms, and that he should fall in the river during the subsequent reconciliations seems only logical. The first husband, though but slightly droll, being curiously enough, a negative character, is a strange combination of humanity and social breeding. Perhaps it is the quality of such a nature to efface itself, and buy lock-tickets.

It would be unfair to the Birmingham Repertory Company to disclose more of their material. They are again to be congratulated on their work, and their training. Each member of the cast plays well, and what is perhaps immature or youthful in some is redeemed by the greatly practised ability of others.—  
ARNOLD GIBBONS.

# “IT IS TERRIBLE TO BE YOUNG”

*By The Journeyman*

I have lately received a communication signed with the initials C. R. B. but with no indication that I could discover of who C. R. B. is, or where she lives. She is surely a woman—a girl almost, for she says she is in the early twenties, and calls herself “an adolescent.” The beginning of the trouble is that C. R. B. has discovered that she can write. The discovery is not a mare’s nest, either; the letter, if it can be called a letter, proves that she can.

In the first tremulous moments when the power to write seemed to overshadow me there was exultation, for life seemed suddenly simple. There followed shrinkings, fearfulness at so much chaffer about things of the individual soul. There remained for a long time, after incredulity was swallowed up in a dawning vision of achievement, a racing current of excitement that so often accompanies brain-work and destroys its balance. There is still with me vanity and a lack of destructive criticism.

Heavens! What mummeries, what contortions, we first use to help us express ourselves—how like vandals when first we deal with the great monuments of our craft, how like blasphemers, how like hypocrites, how like hysterical schoolgirls!

And yet what would you expect? What at least could I have done otherwise in this triangle of living—confronted on the first side with the immensities, on the second with the bawling, scrambling market-place, on the third by the possibilities in myself. Yes, and with the blood running hot and strong and a sense of the tremendous importance of everything insistent in the consciousness.

Life, being so diffuse, is one’s worst enemy, for it reveals the futility of our efforts, be they parochial or Napoleonic, to deflect the course of humanity—poor, groaning, sweating, cursing humanity! The broken bread of this earth and all that matters.

## "IT IS TERRIBLE TO BE YOUNG"

Halt there! That is one of those mumming phrases youth picks up—"all that matters." Is not existence itself, for us, the business of discovering in time what really matters? Ah, but the answer is swift: "Truth alone matters." It comes ringing and clear from the multitude of martyrs and from our eager visionary generation. But terribly sure is the counter-cry: "Each man's truth is his own." "Truth" is a word indicating the inexpressible abstract, and our lives are spent among the warring concrete. There is truth here and truth there, in one form or another, and our truth changes for us as we grow in years and grace. So failing truth we fall back on honesty.

I am writing this not as an essay on writing or on youth or any kind of an essay, but as a cry. Not for help perhaps, because help is not from the hills, but in hopes of any answering cry.

Mercifully, such agonies as the young endure cannot come again—we know they cannot because they are youth's burden, and the very facing them and living with them and mastering them and probing them to their very roots has given us any value we possess and a salve for sorrows. So that when the passage of the years first fatefully begins to be felt, youth has strengthened us not through its exaltations only, but through its desperations and its fears.

Perhaps I am not as young as I thought I was, for that beating of the waves against the rocks of circumstance is stilled in me now, and the workings of Fate do not by a hair's-breadth alter the quiet pointing of the needle to the Pole. The precious essence of life is no longer poured out now on this, now on that, but is kept for the great moment when, with a supreme gesture, it can be spilled in wasteful magnificence on the vision of imperishable Beauty seen face to face.

But to have won from the distant places something of the peace of God has not cured me of mental loneliness. I do not mean spiritual isolation, for on the one hand, as others have found, one is never the only true prophet, and on the other more intimate side for the soul herself there is no other state than being with God or without God.

But mentally lonely, mentally ravenous, and mentally bewildered I remain. Bewildered by echoes of many voices and by figures passing and repassing too far away for me to signal and bewildered by the confusion of directions given by apparently well-qualified guides, and cut off altogether from those of my own generation.

And now, having begun to write this personal cry, I must



## THE ADELPHI

whip myself on. As you may see, I began by shirking the personal pronoun.

Well, then, scoff and smirk as you will—you at the goal. The trouble is this: I have written a novel.

Many a mother and writer absorbed in the effort of birth think the mere fact of living offspring justifies their motherhood. The mere producing something seems sufficient marvel. But they find it the least task and only the first. My book began as an imaginative exercise and grew. It was pleasant to write and people find it pleasant to read, but the question of speedy publication no longer seems of any but financial importance. It will sell. And if so it means writing more like it. It is an honest piece of work on conventional lines—essentially second-rate. People say my standard is absurdly high . . . ! To have seen a Lending Library on stock-taking day is to prepare a gallows for every budding writer. It is pigwash, chicken-food, ambrosia, raw spirit, nectar, and milk and soda flung into a dirty bucket and sucked through a straw.

Were there not enough clever and kind and good and wicked and subtle and lovely and ugly people in the actual? Is this how divine beings—the Journey-work of the stars perhaps—fill their short time on earth? With paper dolls?

*Why read? Why write?* “Mostly to escape.” But that disgraces champions of truth! . . . “*We voice our dim longings . . . would share our vision.*”

*Ah—if one has a message . . .*

And where does Art come in?

It seems to me the novel is a debased form—that we have perhaps outgrown it. As in music, when a literary form crystallizes it must be broken or left. Beethoven can not be imitated—Holst—Stravinsky break new ground. For that reason alone Dorothy Richardson seems to me more valuable to literature than Margaret Kennedy.

And what am I to do with my pen?

Make puppet figures for the lending library? Play with words? Experiment on the emotions and the needs of poor humanity? For it is humanity that matters, I repeat. It is they who demand our utmost capacity for Truth, our strongest effort of self-realization.

We must live *by* the light within—but *for* the outside world. For as artists we cannot remain in undisturbed communion with our God, and so only do we realize that “God” and “Man” are indivisible and have no conflicting claims.

. . . . .

Here am I then under compulsion to write, and if with no

## "IT IS TERRIBLE TO BE YOUNG"

desire to teach yet with a vision and an inward peace won with some scars and a few tears—in so far I am independent, but beyond that the concrete waits to trip the spiritual. At this still I wait and call—throwing myself on the mercy of those very elders who have no use for me.

*What form is there? What is there in prose-art to carry all my love of God and love of Man?*

Well, well—I have a respect for that letter and its writer. It reminds me of Mr. D. H. Lawrence's word: 'It is terrible to be young.' Moreover, I think the main and final question is a real one.

Real, that is, to the person who asks it. But, ultimately, not real at all. For the novel, of which C. R. B. despairs, will contain all the love of God and the love of Man that she has to put into it. Art does not have to be transcendental in order to be true. On the contrary, the absolute function of literature, as I understand it, is to reveal the One in the Many, which I think is what C. R. B. is driving at when she says that she realizes that "'God' and 'Man' are indivisible and have no conflicting claims."

To make my point clear—for it seems always to be mistaken—let me return to the crucial sentence of Goethe's letter to Schiller which Mr. Gerhardt quoted in *THE ADELPHI* of June last:

The art of Poetry [that is creative literature in general: *poiêsis*] demands in the man who is to practise it a certain generous reality-loving limitation, behind which the Absolute lies concealed.

The real problem which often confronts the modern writer, and with which C. R. B. seems to be touched, is how to preserve or regain this "generous reality-loving limitation," after the burden of the mystery has come upon him. The naive, unconscious artist can retain it easily; there is, indeed, no reason why he should ever lose it. But for the conscious artist comes the moment when to be "in love with reality" is not possible any more. At this point the modern writer

## THE ADELPHI

generally chooses the easy path of cynicism. But that refuge is impossible for a serious writer; the writer who accepts it is a dilettante, a play-boy, however successful and professional he may be. The real writer faces up to the main question: How to regain the old condition while honestly bearing the burden of his new knowledge? Keats put it exactly when he cried in agony for the past time when

Howe'er poor and particoloured things  
My muse had wings,  
And ever ready was to take her course  
Whither I bent her face,  
Unintellectual, yet divine to me—  
Divine, I say,—what sea-bird o'er the sea  
Is a philosopher the while he goes  
Winging along where the great water throes?  
How shall I do  
To get anew  
Those moulted feathers . . . ?

The only way to solve that problem is, I believe, mysterious and almost mystical: nor does it concern the writer alone, but all men. It is to become a new man, to develop a new faculty—the soul—which reconciles and is the harmony of mind and instinct, and is *by nature* “in love with reality,” as Keats himself described it when he surmised, but had not yet reached, the condition:

O never will the prize,  
High reason, and *the love of good and ill*  
Be my award!

This “love of good and ill,” this power to see the beauty and the necessity of all that is, combined with the power to reveal it, which is the specific gift of the writer, is the condition of all the highest literature. To anyone who has it, or an inkling of it, the objective forms of the novel or the play will carry all the love of God and man (which are indeed the same) of which he is capable.



# The World's Manuals

GENERAL EDITORS: CYRIL BAILEY, ERNEST BARKER, R. G. COLLINGWOOD, H. W. C. DAVIS, C. FOLIGNO, G. S. GORDON, O. J. R. HOWARTH, JULIAN HUXLEY, E. A. G. LAMBORN, R. W. LIVINGSTONE, P. E. MATHESON, C. T. ONIONS, W. D. ROSS, N. V. SIDGWICK, CHARLES SINGER, D. NICHOL SMITH.

Bound in Cloth. Many volumes illustrated. 2s. 6d. net each.

## ¶ History & Geography

- Israel before Christ: An Account of Social and Religious Development in the Old Testament. By A. W. F. BLUNT.  
Ancient Greece: A Study. By STANLEY CASSON.  
The Growth of Rome. By P. E. MATHESON.  
Roman Britain. By R. G. COLLINGWOOD.  
The World About Us: A Study in Geographical Environment. By O. J. R. HOWARTH.  
The Peoples of Europe. By H. J. FLEURE.  
Europe Overseas. By J. A. WILLIAMSON.  
The Expansion of Britain from the Age of the Discoveries: A Geographical History. By W. R. KERMACK.  
The European States System: A Study of International Relations. By R. B. MOWAT.  
The Crusades. By ERNEST BARKER.

## ¶ Art, Religion, & Philosophy

- Greek Art and Architecture: Their Legacy to Us. By PERCY GARDNER and SIR REGINALD BLOMFIELD.  
Greek Philosophy: An Introduction. By M. E. J. TAYLOR.  
Ethics: An Historical Introduction. By STEPHEN WARD.  
Introduction to Modern Philosophy. By C. E. M. JOAD.  
Introduction to Modern Political Theory. By C. E. M. JOAD.  
Outlines of a Philosophy of Art. By R. G. COLLINGWOOD.

## ¶ Language & Literature

- Sound and Symbol in Chinese. By BERNHARD KARLGREN.  
Persian Literature: An Introduction. By REUBEN LEVY.  
The Genius of the Greek Drama: Three Plays. By C. E. ROBINSON.  
The Writers of Rome. By J. WIGHT DUFF.  
Italian Literature. By CESARE FOLIGNO.  
Standard English. By T. NICKLIN.  
Shakespeare: The Man and his Stage. By E. A. G. LAMBORN and G. B. HARRISON.  
Modern Russian Literature. By D. S. MIRSKY.  
The Writers of Greece. By G. NORWOOD.

## ¶ Science & the History of Science

- Greek Biology and Greek Medicine. By CHARLES SINGER.  
Mathematics and Physical Science in Classical Antiquity. Translated from the German of J. L. HEIBERG by D. C. MACGREGOR.  
Chemistry to the Time of Dalton. By E. J. HOLMYARD.  
History of Mathematics. By J. W. N. SULLIVAN.  
Electricity. By L. SOUTHERNS.

## ¶ Social Science (Law, Politics, & Economics)

- A Short History of British Agriculture. By JOHN ORR.  
Population. By A. M. CARR-SAUNDERS.

LISTS FREE

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

Amen House, E.C.4.

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
CHRIST OR CHRISTIANITY? (I.). By JOHN MIDDLETON MURRY ... ..	233
AN UNPUBLISHED CHAPTER OF "WAR AND PEACE": THE FRENCH IN MOSCOW: PIERRE AND PONCINI. By LEO TOLSTOY. Translated by C. NABOKOFF ... ..	242
THE AGONY OF THE WORLD. Trans- lated from the Irish of PADRAIG O CONAIRE by LIAM O'FLAHERTY ... ..	258
FALLING LEAVES. By WILLIAM BEEBE	261
AS IT WAS (II.). By H. T. ... ..	274

(Continued on page iii.)

---

¶ *The Editor of THE ADELPHI will be pleased at all times to consider MSS. if accompanied by a stamped and addressed envelope. No responsibility, however, is accepted for MSS. submitted. Communications for the Editor and MSS. should be addressed to The Editor, THE ADELPHI, 12, Cursitor Street, Chancery Lane, E.C. 4.*

¶ *The Subscription Rate for THE ADELPHI is 13/6 per annum post free to any address. Subscriptions should be addressed to The Publisher, THE ADELPHI, British Periodicals Limited, 12, Cursitor Street, Chancery Lane, E.C. 4.*

¶ *Advertisement copy and all communications relating to the advertisement pages should be sent to the Advertisement Manager, THE ADELPHI, British Periodicals Limited, 12, Cursitor Street, Chancery Lane, E.C. 4, to whom applications for Advertisement Rates should be made. (Phone, Holborn 225-226.)*

# CONTENTS—*continued*

	PAGE
THE SOUND IN THE DARK : A POEM.	
By JOAN ARDEN ... ..	287
THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB.	
Two Monuments. By Arnold Cheeseman ... ..	288
On Life and Death and Science. By W. L. Wilms- hurst ... ..	290
The Last Night. By Arnold Gibbons ... ..	294
ROUND AND ABOUT SINCERITY. By	
THE JOURNEYMAN ... ..	296
MULTUM IN PARVO.	
Spiritualism and Immortality ... ..	241
BOOKS TO READ ... ..	302
NOTABLE NOVELS ... ..	305
[ALL RIGHTS RESERVED]	

**"Luvisca"**

SHIRTS

PYJAMAS & SOFT COLLARS

for BUSINESS, for PLEASURE, and for SPECIAL OCCASIONS.

*"LUVISCA" looks like silk, is more durable than silk, and is much cheaper than silk.*

Look for the "LUVISCA" TAB on every Garment. None genuine without.

If any difficulty in obtaining write COURTESY LTD. (Dept. 42M), 19, Aldermanbury, London, E.C.2, who will send you name of nearest retailer and descriptive booklet.



# P&O

## BRITISH INDIA & NEW ZEALAND LINES

Mail, Freight & Passenger Services

P. & O. and B.I. Tickets interchangeable, also Tickets of P. & O., Orient and New Zealand Shipping and Union Companies. All sailings subject to change, with or without notice.

1. London and Marseilles to Bombay, Karachi and Persian Gulf.
2. London to Colombo, Madras & Calcutta.
3. London & Marseilles to Ceylon, China, Japan & Australia.
4. London & Marseilles to Port Sudan, East and South Africa.
5. London to Queensland.
6. London (cargo) & Southampton (passengers) to New Zealand & (by transhipment, passengers only) Australia (via Panama Canal).
7. United Kingdom (by any Atlantic line) via Vancouver or San Francisco to New Zealand, Australia & the South Sea Islands.
8. London (one class only, third-class rates) to Australia via Cape of Good Hope.

### ADDRESS.

Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4 & 5.—For Passage, P. & O. House (Manager, F. H. Grosvenor), 14-16, Cockspur St., S.W. 1; Freight or General Business, P. & O. and B.I. Offices, 122, Leadenhall St., London, E.C. 3.

No. 6.—J. B. Westray & Co., Ltd., 138, Leadenhall St., London, E.C. 3, or P. & O. House (first floor,—General Passenger Agent, W. L. James), 14, Cockspur St., S.W. 1.

No. 7.—Union S.S. Co., of New Zealand, Ltd., P. & O. House (first floor,—General Passenger Agent, W. L. James), 14, Cockspur St., S.W. 1, and for Vancouver Service, any office of Canadian Pacific Railway.

No. 8. P. & O. Services, Australia via Cape, 32, Lime St., E.C. 3, or P. & O. House, as above.

B.I. Agents, Gray, Dawes & Co., 122, Leadenhall St., London, E.C. 3.

Paris (All Routes)—Société Française P. & O. 41, Boulevard des Capucines.

### ROUND-THE-WORLD TOURS

Handbook on Application

By

# P&O

## Gibraltar and Marseilles



### FOURTEEN DAYS

at a cost, at sea and ashore, of

£26 (1st. Cl.) £20 (2nd. Cl.)

Lower fares are in force until Mi September.

### Autumn is the Time

for a run by sea to Gibraltar and Marseilles. The P. & O. Company's Weekly Mail Steamer (11,000 to 21,000 tons) leaves Tilbury every Friday; arrives Gibraltar Tuesday morning; and Marseilles Thursday morning. On Friday the homeward-bound steamer leaves Marseilles for Gibraltar, Plymouth (Wednesday) and London (Thursday). Passengers can leave Plymouth by express train and be home for the trip within 14 days. Glorious climatic conditions, first-class table d'hôte, smartly run ships, comfortable cabins, broad promenade decks and handsome appointed saloons ensure complete enjoyment. People with only a week to spare can travel from Marseilles by the P. & O. Bombay Express and thus do the round trip in seven or eight days. For those with more time, Autumn on the Riviera is uncommonly attractive, the weather delightful.

A P. & O. Picture Programme of Special facilities to Gibraltar and Marseilles at Special Hotel Tariffs will be sent on application as below:—

### By P. & O. to INDIA OR CEYLON AT REDUCED FARES

December—February, 1925-26

From London to Bombay or Colombo and back, All Sea, 100 Guineas. By the Bombay Overland P. & O. Express London to and from Marseilles, thence by Sea to Bombay or Colombo and back, £120. The dates will admit of a month's stay in India or Ceylon. For schedule of special sailings apply as below:—

# P&O

## CHIEF PASSENGER OFFICE

(F. H. Grosvenor, Manager),

P. & O. HOUSE, 14, COCKSPUR ST., LONDON, S.W.

# The Adelphi

VOL. III. NO. 4.

SEPTEMBER, 1925

## CHRIST OR CHRISTIANITY?

### I.

*By John Middleton Murry*

VARIOUS people have written to me lately asking me to define more closely than by scattered remarks my attitude to Christianity and to Christ. I will try to do so as quickly and clearly as I can. To attempt this in two brief articles is inevitably to be guilty of injustice, because Christianity is many things : and I believe there are now, as there certainly have been in the past, many Christians whose convictions and lives are of the noblest.

If I seem to be harsh towards the Church, I would ask my readers to bear in mind two things. The first is : that I am fully conscious of the debt that I owe the Church. I regard human history as necessary, inevitable and beautiful. The Church is a part of the scheme of things : without it the memory and the knowledge of Jesus would have been impossible for men. Therefore I acknowledge, and with gratitude, that I am a son of the Church. The second is : that I hold that the inner conscience of mankind has now passed definitely outside the Church. I have tried to explain elsewhere how and why this began to happen. I would ask those to whom this is an intolerable proposition to consider the simple fact : that the reawakening of the sense of the divine in the early nineteenth century, which we call

## THE ADELPHI

modern Romanticism, was born outside the Church and imposed upon it from without. The Oxford Movement was merely the belated repercussion of a religious renaissance quite independent of the Church. And the Church has proved itself so incapable of responding to the stimulus that its reaction has been to narrow instead of broaden its basis. When I think that the romantic movement of Keats and Shelley, Coleridge and Wordsworth, in passing through the Church, has degenerated into the sacerdotal movement of to-day, I am confirmed in my conviction that the Church has done its work : it is no longer adequate to the religious consciousness of modern times. Who, during the nineteenth century, have been the prophets of the human soul in England? Assuredly not the priests ; but the poets, the playwrights, the novelists, and the men of science.

The essential of genuine religion is that a man should really believe in the God in whom he professes to believe. The religion that consists in pious hopes and polite professions is distasteful and meaningless to me. I can accept the religion of no man as a reality if he does not square his acts with his professions. This is a simple test, but the only one. The results it gives are salutary to contemplate. Not one of the professed Christians I have ever met—good men though many of them were—has squared his acts with the very first article of his creed : “ I believe in God the Father, Almighty.”

From this I conclude that, although many people say they believe in God the Father, at least once a week, nobody really does. I am not surprised : it is a very hard thing to believe in. It takes more than a hero to do it. What does surprise me is the willingness of my fellow-men to profess a belief in God the Father or which they will not act. That seems to me less than honest.

The honest thing, it seems to me, is to admit that the



## CHRIST OR CHRISTIANITY?

conception of God the Father Almighty is belied by all human experience. Men do not believe in Him, because they cannot. If they would acknowledge it, the ground for the future might be cleared.

The question is then : Shall men believe in a God at all?

In answer to that : One thing is certain. It is far better to believe in no God at all than to incur the risk of the lie in the soul, by professing to believe in God the Father Almighty and acting just as though He did not exist.

Man's experience forbids him to believe in God the Father. Then let him stick to experience, in his religion too. The religion that is not built upon experience will fail a man in his need, and, if he is a man with a sensitive conscience, lead him into intolerable equivocations.

But human experience includes experience of God.

It does : but not of God the *Father* Almighty. If you have no religious experience of your own to confirm this bare statement, search among the men who have had the deepest religious experience in the past. It is not experience of God the Father. An unutterable experience of an unutterable God, of something—a power—a soul of which all life is the bodily garment. Nothing more? Nothing less.

According to what a man is he will try to formulate that experience of the unutterable. If he is filled with love for humanity, his God will also be filled with love for humanity.

Such was the God of Jesus—the most loving of all Gods, because he was the most loving of all men. Therefore he created God the Father. Created him ; and believed in him, steadily, unflinchingly, all his life. He thought that the “wonderful news” of this God would be received by all men, as glad tidings of great joy. Quite naturally, they did not believe in his mes-

## THE ADELPHI

sage : experience forbade. " Only believe," he cried. They could not. A few of them believed in him, which was a different thing, and not what he wanted at all. He wanted them to believe not that he was God's son, but that they were God's sons. They could not believe it. So he, knowing that he was God's son, and finding that men could not believe that they were God's sons, came to that deep and mysterious yet blindingly simple resolution that he must die in order that men should know they were the sons of God. He would trust God the Father to the uttermost, to show men the way to trust Him. He trusted Him ; he died in agony ; and his last words were : " My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me ? "

His God, the good God, the loving God, the Father Almighty, did not exist. Jesus died knowing it. No pain in the world of men has ever been like that pain.

That conviction is among the deepest that I have. If I were to leave hold of it for a moment, I should betray the greatest of my heroes and all my experience of life. I have clung to that conviction when it was agony to me. Now it is an agony no more ; it gives me a peace beyond my understanding. I do not blame men for refusing to look at the pain of Christ ; it is not easy. But it is worth doing, for many things : for one simple one above all. It makes it easy to die.

The Crucifixion is a mystery. I may be presumptuous : but it seems to me that if men would think out the Crucifixion honestly, to the bitter end, we should be a whole league onward on the road of understanding. But I am afraid the time is not yet come for that. The world is now divided between those who profess Jesus as God, and those who dismiss his story as a fairy-tale ; both are precluded from thinking honestly about him.

To those who dismiss his story as a fairy-tale, I have nothing to say. The man who is incapable of sensing

## CHRIST OR CHRISTIANITY?

the wonderful reality of his life is made of different stuff from mine. To those who read it as the story of a God, I have nothing to say : they also are made of different stuff from mine. Except that I would ask them : Which is better : to contemplate a man who so loved men that he deliberately gave his own life to prove that God was their father, or to contemplate a God who gave his own son to torment, when he could save the world by a thought?

I know that I shall be accused of not understanding the mystery. " God so loved the world that he gave his only-begotten son. . . ." I can understand a mystery as well as most men ; and I can understand the thought of the Christian mystic who wrote those words. But things are simpler than that. I refuse utterly the God who would demand such a blood-sacrifice. And when I am told that this proves the unutterable love of God for mankind, my simple reply is : " Why do you not, then, trust Him? "

Men would *like* to trust God as a Father, no doubt. I know well enough the hunger of the human soul for a Father who cares. But we cannot have all we long for. And which is better : to half-believe in a loving Father who does not exist, or to believe wholly in a loving Son who did? It is this half-belief that is rotting our modern world—belief that does not act. It is this half-belief that has made a mockery of Jesus' words—of all of them. It is this half-belief that drives the intellectually honest man into his aversion from the Church and all its works—this Church of Christ that repudiates the man it worships, repudiates him most utterly by worshipping him.

Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or what shall we drink? or, wherewithal shall we be clothed? for after all these things do the Pagans seek) for your Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. . . . Take therefore no thought for the morrow ; for the morrow shall take thought of the things of itself.



## THE ADELPHI

What does the Church make of that? A word of God? Then it has never dreamed of obeying it. "Ah, but we *try* to follow it." Humbug! That is not a word a man can *try* to follow. He can either follow it, or refuse to follow it. There is no middle way.

What is the use, to an honest man, of a Church of Christ which looks upon his very simplest words as so much pious nonsense? There is no middle way of following Christ. Follow him, or leave him alone.

Those words are perfectly simple. They come from a man who really believed that God was his Father and the Father of all men. From that real belief they follow inevitably: they announce the first, the simplest, the most natural act of such a belief—an actual trust in God. Why, a drunken tramp who pads the highways unknowing whence his next meal will come is nearer to following Christ than the whole bench of English bishops. Christ, the friend of publicans and sinners and harlots, would have chosen swiftly between them.

For this modern world does not believe in God the Father; and the modern Church does not either. It puts its faith in pensions, and endowments, and 5 or 15 per cent. And so do I. I have not the faintest intention (if I can help it) of leaving nothing between me and mine and the kindness of God the Father or the mercies of the world. Neither, so far as I can see, have my Christian contemporaries. But I esteem myself by so much a more honest man than they that I refuse to enter a Church and say: "I believe in the God the Father," when half my days are spent in taking precautions against his unkindness. I believe in Christ, and I believe in him enough to have tried to find out what it would mean to believe, as he believed, in God the Father. He believed in Him, and he acted on his belief, to the bitter end. If I were to believe in God the Father I should have no choice but to follow him.

Here we come once more to the mystery of the Cruci-

## CHRIST OR CHRISTIANITY?

fixion. It is hardly a mystery to those who have an inkling of what it would mean to believe in God the Father, the Father of all men, as Jesus believed in Him. If that is true, then there is indeed "wonderful news" to proclaim; if that is true, then the man who knows it need not, then he *must* not, take thought for the morrow; if that is true, and men will not believe it, as they never have believed it and never will, then he must die to prove it.

And Jesus died to prove it. He did not prove it. He died, knowing that he had not proved it. But what he had proved was this: that mankind had at last produced a man with such infinite love in his heart that he could not conceive God save as a loving and living Father to all men, and rather than give up this amazing and transcendent faith, he went to a shameful and atrocious death. To have proved that was to have proved a more wonderful thing than even Jesus sought to prove. For what man has been, he may, he will be again. There will, there must, come the time when all men will create within themselves the infinite love that he had. Man may, in the long run man must, believe in man. Is that a chilling or a thrilling faith? Is it a *faith* at all? Is it not knowledge, built on a rock, for any man who cares to dig his way to the truth of the Gospel story?

Ah, but Jesus was deceived.

Yes, he was deceived; but he deceived himself. He had created the living God for whom he died. And the mystery is this: that by dying for him, he did indeed create him, a loving God who was a man, as a loving God must be; not that transcendent Father whom men worship with their lips and deny with their acts. Out of that fire of love in himself, which would face the extreme of loneliness and pain simply to lift the pain and loneliness from other men, he kindled the spark of that divine something in man which cares, and will go

## THE ADELPHI

on caring, more and yet more deeply, year by year, century by century, age by age, till the pain and the evil are slowly blotted out of the world.

On that day, which I believe will surely come, in this world in time, his work will be done : that kingdom of God which he believed would come upon men at his death, will be here indeed, and he will be the king.

Wherever is the divine something in men which cares, there is he. For though many great, many lovely, many noble things were in the world before him, that was not in the world. It entered the world when he died for it.

We know more than he did ; but when all our knowledge is assayed, perhaps it comes only to this : that we know what was utterly hidden from him in his agony : that what he died for is not a Father that exists but a world that may be ; and he has made the coming of that world inevitable.

I may be wrong : perhaps I am blinded by a beam in my own eye that I cannot see, but I must confess my belief that the Church now stands in the way of the onward march. We have grown up to the point where we can look upon Jesus as he was ; we do not need, any more, to have the impact of his tragedy mitigated, and our vision of his triumph blurred. We have grown to the point when we can face him. The Church will not face him, and distaste for the Church turns those who would aside from facing him. If we are to have a religion it must be one that honestly accepts life, and squares its beliefs to its acts. When it comes to accepting life, sooner or later you find yourself with the Cross in front of you. Of all tragedies this was the supreme. What do you make of it? An honest man may say : " Nothing but pain." But if he is more honest still, he will say : " Not nothing but pain. It is like all great tragedies, only greater than they : there is some unspeakable beauty there." And then he will go on :



## CHRIST OR CHRISTIANITY?

with this tragedy and this unspeakable beauty he will wrestle, until he sees what was involved therein, and understand what immortal issues were fought in Galilee and won in Golgotha. And, I doubt not, he will end like the centurion, and say : " Truly this man was a son of God," and come to comprehend how profoundly mankind may rejoice that there was a son to make the sacrifice, but no Father to demand it.

SPIRITUALISM AND IMMORTALITY.—" An immortality liable at any moment to betray itself fatuously by the forcible incantations of Mr. Stead or Professor Crookes is scarcely worth having. Can you imagine anything more squalid than an immortality at the beck and call of Eusapia Palladino? That woman lives on the top floor of a Neapolitan house, and gets our poor, pitiful, august dead, flesh of our flesh, bone of our bone, spirit of our spirit, who have loved, suffered and died, as we must love, suffer and die—she gets them to *beat tambourines in a corner and protrude shadowy limbs through a curtain!* This is particularly horrible, because, if one had to put one's faith in these things one could not even die safely from disgust, as one would long to do.

" And to believe that these manifestations, which the author evidently takes for modern miracles, will stay our tottering faith ; to believe that the new psychology has, only the other day, discovered man to be a 'spiritual mystery,' is really carrying humility towards that universal provider, Science, too far."—(*Joseph Conrad.*)

# AN UNPUBLISHED CHAPTER OF "WAR AND PEACE"

THE FRENCH IN MOSCOW: PIERRE AND  
PONCINI.\*

By Leo Tolstoy

THE evening bells were ringing. Pierre, wearing a peasant's overcoat, sat on a curbstone in the Arbat, opposite the church of St. Nicholas Yavlenni, and gazed at the empty street, expecting at any moment to see the passing French. Two men ran past, saying that they were already in the Smolensk Mart, and the two French hussars ran across the street.

Pierre had left the house in the morning with the intention of taking part in the last defence of Moscow. He still believed in the last desperate battle, like the defence of Saragossa.

Moscow was empty, only here and there crowds had collected, and Pierre realized that there would be no battle. Nevertheless, Pierre was perturbed and felt the desire to show that nothing mattered to him. The

---

\* These fragments from Leo Tolstoy's "War and Peace" have recently appeared in the Russian press. They will be of special interest to the reader who is familiar with the Russian novelist's great epic, as they contain indications of certain episodes which the author had eliminated from the narrative—namely, Pierre Bezuhov's youth and his love affair with a peasant girl. Bezuhov—Levin—Nehludov, we know, are the characters of Tolstoy's novels in which his own spiritual evolution is to a certain degree reflected. The newly published fragments, from that point of view, are particularly illuminating.

The descriptive powers of the great writer are reflected in these pages with remarkable clearness. One of his favourite methods in introducing a character was to dwell insistently

## “WAR AND PEACE”

feeling that had overwhelmed him in the last few days was the Russian feeling that prompts the merchant who is out to enjoy himself—to smash the looking-glasses—the feeling that expresses the supreme judgment over all the artificial conditions of life, on the strength of some other, dimly realized Truth.

One thing Pierre was not thinking about, which his instinct had suggested to him and which he had decided as soon as he made up his mind to remain in Moscow—that he was going to stay not under his own name and title of Count Bezuhov, the son-in-law of one of the great dignitaries, but as a doorkeeper. This new position and the attitude of the people who treated him as an equal gladdened him.

At the end of the Arbat dust appeared in the rays of the setting sun; the cries of the French were heard as they saw the first long, beautiful street. Cavalry in the move appeared in the dust.

Pierre watched their approach intently. The thought that he was already captured and his boats were burnt was terrifying and exhilarating.

Mortier was riding in front of the cavalry column, with a brilliant suite. With his arms akimbo, in a conquering pose, he was looking around. Several people watched the procession. Mortier turned his

---

on some distinctive external trait. This repetition results in the image of the person he thus describes being stamped upon the reader's mind and clearly visualised. Prince Andrey's wife's "short upper lip with a faint moustache," Marie Bolkonsky's "heavy step," Verestchaguin's thin, long neck—are mentioned almost every time the author introduces them. So are the Italian officer's "lovely, tender eyes." The old Princess—her surroundings, her mentality, her attitude towards the French—are given in a few lines, and she seems to stand out like an old engraving. Pierre's meeting with the Italian officer—how it strikes one regret that instead of *preaching* on the brotherhood of men and against War—Tolstoy did not continue to apply to the same lofty purpose his unrivalled gifts, his descriptive power and profound knowledge of the human heart.



## THE ADELPHI

mount towards the church of St. Nicholas and stopped pointing to Pierre. An officer in the uniform of the Uhlans rode up to Pierre and asked :

" *Di, Russki, lushai, kturi kostel, Ivan Veliki.*"\*

" I do not know," answered Pierre in Russian.

At the same moment a man, who probably was the deacon of the Church, came up to the officer and began to speak with him.

Pierre walked quickly from the Arbat into a side street. He looked back several times, and his face was distorted by anger and emotion. The troops behind him were shouting : " Vive l'Empereur ! " as they marched past Mortier.

Pierre stopped in front of a house that had flowers on the windows, and remembered that it was inhabited by the Princess Chirguizova, an old maid, with whom his Princesses† were friends and whom he had occasionally visited in the old days. Pierre remembered this as he saw the house. But he also remembered vividly the year 1795, when he still cared for the honour of his wife and when he heard for the first time that her honour had been lost and besmirched. This he remembered because at that moment the same feeling arose in his heart which he had then experienced. Then the object of his feeling was his wife and the honour of the family. Now the object was Moscow and his fatherland. Then, as though putting his finger in a sore, he imagined himself in the position of the Russian who, for fun, had robbed him of his honour. And now he clearly imagined the joy and triumph of the victorious French, their disregard for the sufferings and moral humiliation of the Russians.

With a knitted brow, in anger he stood at the gate of the house, groaning and whispering something up

---

\* Distorted Russian : Thou, Russian, hear, which is the church of Ivan the Great?

† His father's cousins.

## "WAR AND PEACE"

elligible to himself, vainly trying to ask himself the same questions: Why, and What to do?

"What are you standing here for? What is it you have not seen?" shouted suddenly a woman's voice from the open gate.

It was the Princess's maid.

"Is the Princess at home?" asked Pierre mechanically.

"Good gracious! I believe it is the master!"

Pierre followed the maid into the house.

The Princess was in Moscow, and everything with her was as before. As soon as Pierre entered the hall, he felt the customary smell of something stale and of the dog. He saw the old man-servant, the chamber-aid and the woman-jester.\* He saw the flowers on the window-sills and the parrot. Everything was the same as ever, and this sight calmed Pierre for a moment.

"Who is there?" sounded the grumpy, squeaking voice of the old lady, and Pierre could not help thinking:

"How will the French dare to come in, if she shouts like this?"

"Czarevna (that was the nick-name of the jester)! Go and see in the hall, who it is."

"It is I, Princess. May I?"

"Who is 'I'? Is it Bonaparte? Well, good day, my dear? How is it you have not run away? Everyone is fleeing, father mine. Sit down, sit down. And what is this? Whose clothes?† Are we at Christmas? Czarevna, come here, have a look! Are you going to hide from the French? Have they already

---

In the eighteenth century wealthy Russian noble families kept this particular type of companion—servants, whose duty it was to amuse them—a survival of the mediæval fools.

Pierre was wearing a peasant's coat "with the object of taking part in the defence of Moscow by the people."

## THE ADELPHI

come?" asked the Princess, as though inquiring whether the cook had returned from the Okhotni Food Market.

She did not, could not or would not understand what was going on. Curiously enough, her assurance was so strong that Pierre, as he watched her, realized that nothing could be done against her.

"And my neighbour, Maria Ivanovna Dolohova, left yesterday. Her son pushed her off, and he was dressed exactly like you. He came here and tried to persuade me to leave. Otherwise he said he would burn the house. I said: 'Burn it, and I will deliver you to the police.'"

"But the police have left."

"What shall we do without the police? I suppose they have their own police. I think we cannot manage without some police. How can they set fire to the houses? Let them flee. I shall profit by it. I have moved my laundry to their court-yard—so I have more room."

A knock was heard at the gate, and in a few minutes a French hussar, pale, thin and shy, entered the room. He very politely apologized for troubling the hostess and asked for food.

The Princess did not speak French. She understood, however, what he meant and gave orders to take him into the hall and to give him something to eat.

Pierre came into the room to see the Frenchman.

"Monsieur, mon cher Monsieur," said the Frenchman, blushing, beckoning to Pierre to follow him into the hall. Pierre went with him.

"Voyez-vous," said the Frenchman, blushing again and showing his black shirt, "Est-ce que la bonne dans le hall ne pourrait pas me donner une chemise, quelque chose en fait de linge? Voyez-vous."

Pierre returned to the old lady and told her about

"All right, my pet. Why not give? I give alms



## “WAR AND PEACE”

the beggars. Czarevna, go to the store-room. No, and Matreshka.”

The Princess gave orders where to find the linen, and added :

“Tell him, that I give for mercy. Tell him that he should tell his chief that I, the Princess Chirguizova, a general’s daughter, live here, that I do not interfere with anyone, and that they must not cause me any worry, or I shall find a Court for them. And they’d better send ‘Himself’ to me. All right, all right, get on and God bless you,” she said to the Frenchman who was clicking his heels at the door of the sitting-room, thanking “la bonne dame.”

Pierre was quite calm. He left the Princess with the Frenchman. Infantry were now marching down the Arbat, and Pierre felt that the old sensation was returning.

Twilight had come. A man in a kaftan but, judging from his walk and his boots, not a peasant, passed through the open door of the church. Pierre followed him. The church was empty. The man, who reminded Pierre of someone he knew very well, was kneeling before the altar, signing himself and bowing to the ground.

The same feeling of humiliation, anger and jealousy, similar to the one he had experienced towards his wife, but much stronger, again seized Pierre.

“The French will come in presently and turn me out,” thought Pierre as he heard from the church their footsteps and their merry talk in the Arbat. “What shall I do?” and again the same answer, as to the other question, suggested itself : “Shall I kill him or kill myself? Only death can undo that knot.” But then it was obvious that he ought to kill Dolohov.

“Whom shall I kill? Him? Bonaparte? But why has destiny brought me here to kill him?” thought Pierre. “And I shall kill him. . . .”

## THE ADELPHI

While he was joyfully thinking, in detail, how he would go to-morrow, with a revolver hidden under his coat, into the town, how he would try to meet Napoleon and fire at him—the man who had been at prayer rose briskly from his kneeling posture, blew his nose, wiped his tears, and walked quickly to the entrance, where he butted into Pierre.

“ Bezuhov? ”

“ Dolohov! Is it possible? Why are you here? ”

“ And you? You saw,” said Dolohov. “ Already in the Kremlin. But not for long. I am going to set fire to it all to-morrow. My lads are ready. I shall burn my house myself.”

“ And the Princess? ”

“ The old woman must be removed. Why are you here? ”

Pierre looked at Dolohov with astonishment and joy, and a calming feeling descended upon his soul.

“ Why have you stayed? ” repeated Dolohov.

“ I? Why? Dolohov, I shall kill Bonaparte,” whispered Pierre.

“ How will you kill him? ”

Two French soldiers entered the church.

“ Where do you live? ” asked Dolohov.

Pierre told him.

“ You won’t kill him. It’s no use.” Dolohov drew his face close to Pierre’s, laughed, and stepped aside.

“ Well, good-bye, Bezuhov.”

He embraced and kissed him and left the church with a hurried step. Pierre followed him out of the church and walked home along the side streets.

As he was returning to his house, he saw French soldiers in different places. They were getting into their quarters.

The cavalymen were dismounting, entering the

## “ WAR AND PEACE ”

uses, and marking them in chalk : “ Occupied by such and such troops.”

Once or twice they asked Pierre where the Kremlin was or what was the name of the street. Pierre shrugged his shoulders and pretended not to understand. On the Petrovka he saw a crowd. Some generals were turning the carriages out of the sheds. They admired them and took possession of them. In the quarter where Aksinia Larionovna lived, on the Ponds and the Patriarch's Ponds there was nobody. He reached his home.

The fool, Aksinia Lavrionovna's husband, was the first to meet him at the gate. He was carrying a huge underbuss. He was very drunk and had gone to the other extreme from his previous shyness and humility. He was Souvorov ! In his underclothes, he walked in front of the gate and shouted the words of command : “ Quick march ! Hurrah ! Forward ! I shall pierce your loins ! Who am I ? Souvorov ! Thou, thou, who art thou ? A Frenchman ? ” he yelled, addressing Pierre.

Aksinia Larionovna rushed out, pulled “ Souvorov's ” underbuss, so that he nearly fell, and dragged him into the house.

“ I just went out for a short hour, I wasn't watching him. . . . They have smashed a tavern near Ludrin . . . and so he has been boozing. . . . Have they come ? ” she asked.

“ They have.”

“ And they have been to your place ? ”

“ No, thank God.”

“ Let him try ! ” shouted “ Souvorov ” from behind the screen.

Pierre went behind his screen, lay on the bed and wept tears of anger and humiliation.

“ Aksinia Larionovna, mother mine, my pet, it is



## THE ADELPHI

he ! it is he ! I swear it is he ! ” shouted the cook and she rushed into the room.

Voices were heard : “ It is they ! The French ! ”

Aksinia Larionovna, the cook and the fool, who they did not notice, ran out into the entrance. Pierre wiped his tears, got up and followed them. It was true : Frenchmen stood at the gate, headed by an officer.

The officer was a short young man with a fine figure and an exceedingly handsome Italian face. He had prominent, half-closed, black velvet eyes, with a poetic expression which Pierre could not fail to notice, very particularly attractive.

When the officer saw a woman, Aksinia Larionovna, he immediately smiled and raised his cap with obvious genuine, hearty courtesy and good-will. The smile made his beautiful face look still more attractive. There was something childish and at the same time *commun* *il faut* in it, as Pierre noticed.

Pierre decided that he must be not only a kindly, clever and well-educated man, but also well bred *de bonne maison*.

“ *Pardon, Madame, quartire,* ” said the officer. He was apparently sincerely embarrassed by his position as a conqueror and was trying to conceal under the cloak of politeness all the advantages of his position.

“ *Nous ne ferons point de mal à nos hôtes. Vous serez contents de nous. Si cela ne vous dérange pas trop . . .* ” said the officer in good French, but with an Italian accent.

“ *Est ce que personne ne parle Français ici ?* ”

As he looked around, his eyes met Pierre's. Pierre was touched by the nice, kindly and deeply melancholic look of this officer, especially because it was the reverse of what he had anticipated. Pierre instinctively opened his mouth to answer in French, when suddenly quite close to his ear the drunken shout of “ *Souvorov* ”

## “WAR AND PEACE”

was heard, and his blunderbuss protruded, aiming straight at the French officer's chest.

“Bonapartius, go to hell!” The trigger clicked, the flint struck the hammer.

Pierre turned rapidly, struck up the muzzle of the blunderbuss and right over his ear the rusty weapon that had been loaded long ago, discharged with a deafening noise. The shot gave “Suvorov” such a shock that he fell back towards the door. The women shrieked, the entrance was filled with smoke, and Pierre rushed towards the officer.

“Vous n’êtes pas blessé?” he asked.

The officer was pale, but smiling.

“Mon cher, je vous dois la vie,” he said as he clasped Pierre's hand. “Et moi qui croyais que vous étiez Russe! Vous êtes Français.”

The French officer was convinced that a man who had behaved in a chivalrous manner, magnanimously and naturally, for any man to save *his* life was the height of chivalry and magnanimity—must needs be a Frenchman.

But Pierre, who no longer concealed his knowledge of the French language, disappointed him. He told him he was a Russian, and that the man who had fired at him was a drunken madman. The Frenchman stopped the two soldiers who had come with him and had rushed in as they heard the shot. He took Pierre's arm and came into the room, continuing to thank him heartily for saving his life.

The terrified women, meanwhile, took the harmless blunderbuss from “Suvorov.” They dragged him by the hands, beat him and pushed him behind the screen.

The French officer gave his rank, name and surname. He was an officer in the Hussars and was an aide-de-camp to the King of Italy. His name was Emile Poncini.

“Qui que vous soyez, vous comprenez que je me

## THE ADELPHI

sens lié à vous par des liens inoubliables. Disposez de moi," said Poncini, looking at Pierre with his beautiful melancholy eyes.

He asked for food. Pierre offered him some tea with milk (they had a cow in the yard), and while they were having tea, they talked. Poncini could not understand that Moscow was empty, as it was contrary to all expectations and rules. Obviously expressing the view of the Headquarters and of the entire Army, he was in the same quandary as a man who should come forward according to all the rules to fight a duel with swords standing correctly *en garde*, raising his left arm, his sword *en tiers*, expecting his opponent to be in the same position—and finding that the opponent was not behaving regularly at all. He tries to take up the position *en quarte*, *en seconde*, even *en quinte*—but he does not encounter his opponent's sword. The opponent stands, bending sideways, with something terrible (something you cannot quite see) in his hands, a thick stick or a huge stone.

Poncini was bewildered and asked Pierre what this position in Moscow meant. How should it be interpreted? Had Moscow surrendered? In that case, why was there no deputation from the inhabitants "implorant la clémence des vainqueurs"? Had she surrendered after battle? Why then was there no street fighting? Had she been destroyed, as in the Scythian war, and as happened to the other cities? Why then had she remained with all her treasures?

It was against all the rules, against all traditions of history.

Pierre could not answer any of these questions. He did not himself quite understand what this Moscow meant on the evening of September the 2nd. Without looking at his companion, he said that Moscow had not surrendered and would never surrender. And while



## “WAR AND PEACE”

He was saying this, the French officer was struck by the sombre expression of his face.

“Yours is a great nation,” said Poncini. “I have often thought and said so. Et savez-vous, mon cher, je suis franc avec vous, je me suis pris un million de fois pendant cette campagne à envier votre sort à vous, appartenir à une grande nation. Je suis Italien, nous avons que le passé. Le présent—c’est le despotisme d’un homme—l’avenir, c’est le néant.”

“But your past is also your present,” said Pierre. He appreciated the delicacy of Poncini, who had changed the conversation. “Your past is art, science, poetry, which gives life to all of you. You are envying us now, and how many times have I not envied you, you who have had your Raphaels, Correggios, Copernicuses, Dantes, Tassos.

After spending all these days with Aksinia Lariovovna and “Souvorov,” Pierre could not help enjoying conversation about the interests of art and science—a realm that was entirely foreign to his present companions. Perhaps he was also unconsciously pleased that in discussing these things he surprised Poncini with his knowledge.

Poncini looked at Pierre in silence with his melancholy eyes, and his lips smiled tenderly. He struck the table with his small hand.

“Mais qui êtes-vous donc, vous, pour connaître les arts et les sciences?”

“Moi?” said Pierre, wondering what to answer. Suddenly, he heard the drunken shouts of the two French troopers who had brought Poncini’s horses and cart. Other unfamiliar voices were also heard. The menacing cries grew louder. Pierre and Poncini rose and walked to the porch.

A crowd of Dragoons stood at the gate, and several of them were cursing the French troopers in German because (as Pierre immediately realized from their

## THE ADELPHI

German jargon) these Wurtemberg Dragoons wanted to be quartered in the same yard, and the French were preventing them. They could not understand one another. Poncini, who did not know German, shouted to them in French, trying to explain who he was, but the Dragoons took no notice of him and were forcing their way into the yard. One of them pushed a Frenchman, who drew a pistol, and a fight would have ensued, had not Pierre stepped forward and explained in German who Poncini was. The Germans quieted down when they heard that he was an A.D.C. to the King of Italy, and the N.C.O. ordered them to stop.

"Das sollen sie ja foraus sagen," he said.

"Mais qui diable êtes-vous donc?" said Poncini smiling kindly to Pierre when they returned to the samovar. "Qui diable êtes-vous pour connaître Dante et le Tasse et parler toutes les langues? Je vois un hazard providentiel de vous avoir rencontré. Attendez." He grasped Pierre's hand and made the sign of the third degree of the Masonic Order. Pierre answered him with a smile :

"Qui je suis? I will tell you. I know you, and will not ask you to keep the secret. I know you will keep it. My name does not matter to you, but I am one of the richest men in Russia. I am a Russian count. I have two enormous houses in Moscow, but I have stayed here in order to see the French army perish. I have faith that it will perish, and I stayed not in my own house and not under my own name.

"You believe in the destruction of the French Army?"

"Yes."

"Well, my saviour, do not let us talk about that. Let us forget enmity. We are two men, distant, strange to one another in everything except the heart which tells me that you are my brother, so let us be brothers."

"Let us be brothers," repeated Pierre.

## “WAR AND PEACE”

They looked at one another with a happy smile.

“O ! la terrible chose que la guerre,” said Poncini. “Qui l’aurait dit à moi que je serais soldat, moi qui n’aime que l’art, la poésie et celle qui. . . Are you married?”

“Yes, I was married,” replied Pierre. And for the first time, looking into these eyes of Poncini, so full of love, he recalled together two circumstances and came to a conclusion. He recalled his wife’s request for a divorce, his freedom and his last meeting with Natasha yesterday, with all the charm of her joy, her tenderness and animation. “Yes, that might be,” he thought. Poncini, leaning upon the table, sat opposite Pierre and related to him his entire life, as he might have told it to the man in the moon. He told him of his relations with his father whom he did not like, and of his love.

In the middle of his story he quoted in a clear, lovely voice a line from Dante, and Pierre who knew it by heart, finished the verse.

“You love this verse, you have felt the same. . . . And why am I talking about myself alone? Tell me your story. The story of your love, because there is nothing but love in life.”

“You want me to tell you my life’s story and my love?” said Pierre. “Do you know, I have never told anyone the story of my life, not even to myself. It seemed all so simple to me. But to you—that is a different matter.”

Pierre began to tell the story of his life, condensing as much as he could, and while he spoke, he was himself surprised how simple and clear the meaning of his life appeared to him, for the first time. He told of his education in Switzerland, of the veneration in which he had held Napoleon, of the ideas that filled his soul, of what he had found in Russia, of his false position, of his father, and of his affair with Aksiuscha.

“Et c’était là votre premier amour?” said Poncini,



## THE ADELPHI

gazing at Aksinia Larionovna who was serving a roast fowl.

Pierre then told him of his accidental meeting with Natasha as a child and of the premonition he had that she must influence his life. He related all the humiliation and misery which riches had brought to him, and how he wandered like a lost soul in that fog, which enveloped him immediately, and how in the fog he came across the woman . . . Helen.

"She wasn't a bad woman, and I am more guilty towards her than she is towards me. She might have been a good woman. I came across her in the fog of riches, I mistook another feeling for love and I married her.

"All the beautiful things and thoughts (such as masonry) which came to me at that time were hidden by the fog of riches, and I did not live. One thing only I remember. I had a friend, and he is no more. He had a rare, fine, but proud soul. I met her, and so did he. I tried to bring them together, as something in my own soul made me feel that they were made for one another. And then . . . and then. . . . She lost her head, she insulted him, and he left her. And again fate so decreed that I had to play a part in this. I found her in tears and in sorrow, and I said things I ought not to have said. And from that moment, I know, she loved me as a friend. But there was no friendship in my soul. I was frightened of myself and I said I would not see her again. And would you believe it! Yesterday, when I was in these clothes, when I thought the least of her, when I knew that she was free (because her former fiancé was killed)—it is terrible to think of it—but I say this only to you, as to my own conscience—and when I was free . . . it so happened that I met her in the crowd of refugees, and she recognised me and she told me . . ."

## “WAR AND PEACE”

Pierre grew very excited as he said this. His eyes were shining.

“No, I must not, I cannot think of this. . . .”

Poncini kept silent and looked at him tenderly. They did not speak for a considerable time. Poncini rose and took his hand.

“Mon ami, comme je suis heureux de vous avoir rencontré. Vous serez heureux, je le sens.”

“Qui sait? One should not think of it.”

Pierre rose in his turn, and they went out for a walk. Darkness had set in. Aksinia Larionovna, the cook, and the two Frenchmen stood by the gate. One could hear their laughter and their chatter which neither could understand. They were joking, gazing at the fires and the red glare of the sky over the town. It was the first fire on the Petrovka. Poncini and Pierre joined them and began to watch the fire. There was nothing exceptional in a fire—in a big city. They all watched calmly the distant glare—about a mile and a half away.

Above the dark houses, the churches, the white lights of the street lanterns, the lighted windows, the bonfires, and even above the poor flames that went up occasionally from the fire (although five enormous houses were already burning), above these dark, wretched, black spots of human work and of the bonfires—lay the starry, endless sky with the young crescent and with the comet which Pierre remembered and loved so well. This contrast struck Pierre and his new friend. Poncini sighed and recited a verse from Dante.

*(Translated by C. Nabokoff.)*

# THE AGONY OF THE WORLD

*By Padraig O Conaire*

HAD day dawned?

When I opened my eyes I saw a great white star hanging in the sky over my head, shining with resplendent brightness down on me, through the bare branches of an ash tree. The Milky Way crossed the firmament in a silver stream. A man whose soul was truly conscious could have seen thousands of angels passing over that way.

There was another star, which I did not recognize on the eastern horizon. It shimmered in such an abandoned way that one would think it was playing heavenly music but that I could not hear the music because of some evil begotten of the earth, in my ears and in my heart.

The bare branches of the ash tree beside me moved. Each herb and flower growing around me moved. Yes, you say, it was the wind among the branches. But I do not believe it. And have I not as good a right to say that it was no earthly power that did it, that it was not the wind that did it, as you have to say the contrary?

The night was dead calm, without the slightest sound until the music moved among the branches. And if you think it was the music of the wind, may I tell you that I thought, as it were, that a thousand thousands of little tiny men were drawing crinkled silk over the withered grass beside me?

The wind among the branches! Fool begotten of this worldly earth!

Another sound! There was a great chestnut tree by my right hand. A sound was born in its topmost



## THE AGONY OF THE WORLD

ranches. Some great heavy thing was falling down to the earth, striking against the branches and the twigs that crossed its passage. What? The music among the bare branches ceased. The night was calm, as calm as any night that ever was. There was not a single sound but the sound that was in the topmost branches of the chestnut tree, some great heavy thing falling down to the earth, from branch to branch, slowly, terrible in the stillness of the night.

Terror possessed my heart, lying under the tree in the night. It was no earthly terror. It was terror of mysterious power that I did not comprehend.

It came falling down, the volume of its sound increasing as it fell, until I thought that angry angels from heaven were hurling a star at me, because I was not true to my own soul. . . .

At last the great heavy thing fell beside me. It fell on a flat rock. That sound in the stillness of the night! And it was only a chestnut, the last nut from the tree, I think.

A bird awakened on a twig. The poor creature shook itself. It hopped to another twig and found another sleeping perch. I did not see the bird, but I know that it happened so, because it twittered twice, once on each twig before sleep again possessed it. There was another bird, a finch of a rare species. It also moved. It spoke sleepily, wearily, after the manner of its kind, just as if it wished to make its sorrow manifest to the insects of the earth and to the birds of the air, because its kind was almost swept away from the land of Ireland. But no heed was paid to its voice, nor to the voice of a blackbird that uttered the first note of its joyous music.

And there were many more birds that awakened and made music, each after the manner of its kind; but I knew not to what tribe of seven score of tribes that each belonged. I only knew that each one awoke,

## THE ADELPHI

moved, and gave voice after the manner of its kind. Why did they awake and why did they give voice, since day was still distant?

An ass was tethered beside me, my own black ass. He lay motionless on the earth. He also raised his head and gave voice fiercely and arrogantly. A cow lowed in the distance. A foal neighed. A sheep bleated. I myself was stricken with sorrow and desolation. . . .

And if I could understand it properly, the whole great wondrous world was stricken with desolation. The star that hung in the heavens, the tree shedding its last nut, the bird that awakened and gave voice to its music, the beasts that moaned sorrowfully in the night, they were all stricken with sorrow and desolation. And the great eternal earth itself was also sighing wearily. . . .

And I also moved. I sighed. I gave voice.

"Great God of Glory!" I said.

And then it was made manifest to me that I was in the presence of one of the greatest miracles, that I watched and saw the awakening of the world, not the awakening of dawn, but the awakening that happens some time each night of the year, when each thing that lives on the bosom of the earth sighs and moves. At the same time each night, all life mourns.

And is not that the time that Lucifer was possessed with anger against the great God that created him?

I looked at the hanging star. I looked at the tree that had shed its nut. I looked where the bird sat on its twig.

"Oh! Great God of Glory!" said the star.

"Oh! Great God of Glory!" said the bird.

And then my heart and soul were exalted and I said aloud and fervently:

"Oh! Great God of Glory!"

I fell asleep once more.

*(Translated from the Irish by Liam O'Flaherty.)*

# FALLING LEAVES

*By* William Beebe

NEXT to the dynamic crashing syncopation of a regimental band, or the subtle, infinitely more emotionally hypnotic beat of a tomtom, comes the thrilling rhythm hour after hour, of a double row of paddles tearing and eddying through water in unison, not only the thump and splash from the dug-outs of tropical savages but the deep-dipped rush and swirl from bark canoes. This is the obvious, the much-described, but how many of us have listened for and heard the low, sibilant swish of the blades through the air, as they reach forward for the next stroke? Until mind and ear are focussed it is inaudible, but when once caught it outsings more blatant sounds of water and voice. The blind spots of our perceptions conceal many phases of delicate beauty in the things around us, aspects which are dulled by the incapacity of familiarity, passed over by the unseeing activity of our surface-skimming minds.

The living leaf has been epitaphed, eulogized, sung, raised and similed for centuries, but except for occasional references to the "sere and yellow leaf," dying, falling and dead leaves have been left where they lie, with only the incense of their funeral pyres woven into the haze of Indian Summer.

I have seen an orangutan build a sleeping platform of leaves in less than three minutes, so it is not improbable that the first artificial home our more direct ancestors knew was a leafy nest. Leaves at least formed the sole clothing of our early parents, according to Scripture, and from nursery days we have always known that



## THE ADELPHI

falling leaves were a shroud for the babes in the wood. More than this, botanists tell us that the leaf is the foundation of flower and fruit so that it was really only a mass of highly specialized leaves which introduced Newton to gravitation.

But the importance and interest of falling leaves in this world needs no brief from me. I merely want to know them better for my own pleasure, I wish to hear and see and feel them, and so I leave my laboratory after a day of technical work and slip into the jungle where millions of leaves are falling during my lifetime and hundreds of millions fell before I was born.

I am sitting at the edge of a tropical swamp and for the moment trying to close my mind and sense to the sounds and sights of birds and insects, and focus on leaves, and especially dead ones. This is no more difficult than it would have been to forget Caruso and the orchestra in order to meditate on the kind of wood on which the chairs were fashioned.

Further than this I am putting out of my mind the letters L E A V E S and thinking of them innominately as a vast multitude of spread-out sheets of green and brown tissue. They are really the jungle, for without them it would be like the bare masts and rigging of a vessel. High overhead beyond the clouds of chlorophyll are other white clouds of moisture, driven swiftly westward by the steady trade-wind. Around me the air is as quiet as in a room, and of just the right temperature to be forgotten, neither too hot nor too cold; no distinct effort being necessary to realize that I am not in some great enclosed chamber, so calm and equable as the surroundings.

It is the dry season and the short daily shower does little to soften the crackle of the fallen leaves. Now and then, near my feet, a leaf draws its edges together, turns a little and rustles gently all by itself as if even in death it dreamed of some pleasant trifle, something

## FALLING LEAVES

which would please a green leaf, in sunlight, swaying high in air. Then, like a crumpled bit of paper in a waste-basket, it settles lower among its fallen fellows. Here it will wait patiently for the impact of the heavy rains, three or four months hence, to soften its stiff, wrinkling tissues, and remould it into incarnations of other leaves to come.

Fallen leaves have a wind song all their own which is to be heard only when listened for consciously. When a fitful breeze is blowing, if the ear is held close to the ground, a low intermittent clatter and shuffling is audible, with occasionally a real rustle as a delicately balanced leaf is blown over. Stand up and the carpet of dead leaves becomes silent, their gentle talk lost in the hubbub of living, moving foliage.

In this quiet, cool swamp I am impressed with the vast number of leaves which have started to fall but have not reached the earth. Some have landed in patches, or become entangled in masses of vines, others have driven their stems clear through the tissue of living leaves in their downward path and hang dangling. Just above me a living and a dead palmated frond have their leafy fingers intertwined with no chance of release until the death and fall of the second leaf.

As I watched, three leaves fell, each with characteristic motion. The third leaf fluttered and eddied, fighting with all its expanse of plane against the pull of gravitation, and at the very last came to rest on a mattress of fern frond—a respite merely, for the first real gust would send it to the ground. As it touched the fern a butterfly rose, a black heliconia, with a large red spot on each wing. Its flight was astonishingly like that of the descending leaf, a tremulous fluttering first carrying it along, now rising, now descending—a flight wholly deceiving, for these butterflies can thread the mazes of jungle vines all day without tiring. But this butterfly was also like the leaf in its sere and faded

## THE ADELPHI

garb. The wings were frayed and torn, the black was a thread-bare brown, the red weathered to faded salmon the seams of its wings showed plainly. Life was nearly over, yet weak as it was, it would probably die of violent death. The most awkward bird or predatory insect could catch it at will, yet it flew slowly along unmolested by jacamars and cuckoos, dragon and robber flies. Its conspicuous colours and slow, tantalizing flight, like all else in the jungle, had a reason—it was its own advertisement of inedibility. Soon, however, this Wandering Jew of a butterfly would, like the fluttering leaf, make a last ineffectual struggle against the pull of earth and its wings would lie among the leaves.

Before the butterfly passed from view, I was startled by a sudden, rough rip of sound—and just overhead a macaw put all the harshness of its beak and the bluntness of its colouring into its voice, and almost the leaves around me seemed to rustle. Into a clear space of sky four great, flame-winged birds passed, and with flight direct as arrows, but otherwise exactly like the falling leaf and the butterfly, they vibrated northward.

Without intention, but very happily, I found I had chosen my seat between extremes in leaves. Close along one side lay a fallen leaf which began eight feet behind and extended twenty-three feet in front—thirty-one feet of palm frond. In its fall it had crushed several young mora saplings and many lesser growths. The leaflets, two hundred in number, lay stretched out four to six feet on each side, and the mighty stem was like a length of channel iron, with edges sharp as razors. It was parched and shrunk and had probably hung dead for a long time before it fell. A billion ordinary leaves fall unnoticed in the tropics, while in the north we lump this vast assemblage of happenings under the one word “autumn.” But the fall of a palm leaf is an event. Once as I was leaving my station for a trip north,



## FALLING LEAVES

noticed that one of the leaves of our sentinel cuyuru palm was drooping and browned. Months later when returned, it was still hanging, and two weeks afterwards fell in the night with a crash which wakened us all. Dynasties might be dated by the falling of such leaf, and if I could have been present at the dropping of all the leaves of my palm, whose scars were still so plain, there would be material for an epic. These gigantic fronds, like Charles II., are an intolerable while a-dying; they grow and live their lives much more rapidly than they die and disintegrate. Years from now could probably find traces of the reinforced cellulose-wardened main stem.

And now my faded and forlorn heliconia butterfly uttered again toward me, and almost alighted on this paper, but turning at the last moment, it rose a little, and came to rest at my elbow, on a stem lined with small leaflets. Hardly had the insect furled its wings, when it fluttered and took to flight again. The cause delighted me beyond measure—it had been unseated and frightened by the movement of a living leaf! At the impact of its delicate feet, the leaflets of the sensitive plant closed abruptly together and the stem sank. So exquisite was the reaction that the several leaflets beyond the insect were unmoved. A few seconds later while I was still watching, an adjoining twiglet closed every one of its leaflets and dropped 120 degrees upon its parent branch. Nothing had touched it, no breath of air had moved it. I was puzzled. Lifting it very gently, it broke off and fell to the ground, green, fresh, as far as I could see quite without cause. I picked it up and examined the base and there I found the source of the trouble. A tiny beetle had cut it almost off, and the slight fall of the twig, together with my touch had parted the few remaining fibres. The beetle was very small and must have been labouring for a long time, and it was a mystery why the featherdom tread

of a butterfly's feet had accomplished what the hacking and sawing of the beetle's jaws had not.

In these jungles a falling leaf has a whole scale of sounds, as it runs the descending gamut of collision. From the top of a tall tree a leaf may take fifteen or twenty seconds to reach the earth, disregarding the very good chance of lodgment, and each touch in its descending—the cannoning off of branches and ripping through thorns, gives forth a different sound, of which our poor ears can distinguish very few, and which our language spoken or written, is wholly helpless to reproduce. I would like very much to find a word or sound which would bring to mind the fall of a leaf upon leaves. I know it perfectly—the generic timbre—the composite echo etched into my mind by a thousand conscious listenings. But it will not get past my consciousness to my lips, and utterly refuses to descend my arm and pen.

Fallen leaves are of tremendous importance to those of us who do much hunting in the jungle, chiefly on account of their susceptibility to moisture in the air. In the wet season it is possible to creep up to some of the wariest of animals, the thick mass of soft, damp leaves forming an admirable muffler. In the dry season this is hopeless, every step is a scream with crackling, and only when a leaf-rattling breeze is blowing can one pass through the jungle without blatant advertisement. But this is of slight assistance in hunting, for the blowing of the leaves conceals as well the audible whereabouts of the game. When the fallen leaves are dry the only method is to walk to some favourable spot, and there stand and wait for approaching or passing animals to register their footfalls. In estimating the abundance of jungle life I have constantly to check a tendency to underestimate numbers in the wet season. Ameiva lizards appear to be many times as abundant in times of drought, crashing along with the noise of a peccary, yet

## FALLING LEAVES

They have no season of aestivation, but only of silent progress.

We do not realize the acuteness of hearing of wild animals until we try to stalk them over dry leaves. A faint leaf may crash down from branch to branch and never cause a curassow or deer to start. I have seen a bababba feeding in late afternoon under a nut tree when a whole branch with clusters of dead leaves hurtled to earth a few yards away, and the big, spotted rodent merely glanced up, casually munching as it looked. My next step slipped an inch sideways and crumbled a tiny wafer crust, and without a second's investigation the animal gave one terrified squeal and fled headlong.

There are silent and there are boisterous leaves. Some, with finely pinnated foliage, have a pact of silence with the elements, from which wind and rain strive in vain to awaken them. Even when these delicate leaves are dead and cling long to the branches, they give before the blasts, they let the rain drip from their finger tips without a sound. But a single, half-closed cecropia frond can imitate a rainstorm, the roar of a flushed covey of pheasants or a passing troop of monkeys, all by itself. More than this, it will begin cannily to quiver and shake and rattle wildly about, while every adjacent leaf dangles silently as if painted. Thus does its sensitive balance and crinkled shard betray the wandering little wind-spouts which are born deep in the jungle, and, like their watery cousins, stretch straight upward in a tiny, clean-cut whorl of air.

A book could be written upon burning leaves—how they meet their cremation, how they curl when this slow, devastating long-bottled-up sun heat chars their tissues. How they shout and crack in the wind of their own swan-song, and how they look when the heat and war have passed and the cold ash remains. A month of drought at Kartabo once made the thick mat of bamboo leaves about the compound no small menace. So



## THE ADELPHI

we had a great raking and bonfire of the ten million and one elongated slivers of pale brown leaves. (Even the colour of dead leaves, like the plumage of her pheasants, is far more subtle and beautiful than we suspect, for after the former sentence, I have tried to match a dead bamboo leaf colour in Ridgway's colour book and failed utterly. It lies between vinaceous buff and olive-buff and is of no human-named colour.)

The ashy souls of leaves differ to as great a degree as do their shapes and life-greens. Some are so ethereal that they vanish in a curl of faint blue smoke and leave scarcely a trace of ponderable greyness. The bamboos are far otherwise. There is nothing quiet or sad about their cremation. They snap and crackle joyously in the flames, with more gusto than ever they rattled in the trade winds. And indeed their passing is far less of a radical change than for most leaves. They are so surcharged with silica that the alchemy of glowing heat merely alters their hue to silvery white, and when the furnace of their tissues has cooled, they lie unchanged in shape and outline. A heavy rain or big wind shatters this crystalline ghost of a leaf, and the various salts are washed into the soil, ready for their next great adventure.

Before I lived under bamboos I never realized how friendly fallen leaves could be. Trees with heavy leaded-stemmed leaves drop them straight to the ground. But bamboo leaves are like zeppelins when they are launched and, with the slightest breeze, float along on even keels, drifting sometimes far into the laboratory. When at tea one day I idly watched a leaf dangling high up from one of the lofty stems, so far away I could not tell whether it was brown or green. A slight gust came and it broke off and, revolving slowly, scaled obliquely down, through the verandah and launched in my tea-cup.

These leaves register very accurately the force of the

## FALLING LEAVES

wind, and I have seen a thick bed of ashes of burned bamboo leaves studded thickly as a porcupine's skin with the javelins of recent falls, two lots having speared the ashes at different angles. One was almost upright, having landed in a gentle wind the afternoon, the other at an oblique angle, after volplaning on the stronger shades of morning.

Leaves in death still mirror many of the characteristics of their living fellows. In the tropics a host of plants flower once or at most twice a year, but attract insects at all times by setting forth a little bowl of nectar on each leaf stalk. I have observed a small bush with forty-nine leaves and counted nine and forty ants thereon, one guest to each nectar-cup—each having visited, sipped and remained—perhaps by their jealous court-mandizing keeping away other more harmful insects. On fallen leaves the sides of the bowls still seem to contain some sweetness, and to these come other ants (as we used to love to scrape the emptied ice-cream freezer), who gnaw eagerly at the shrivelled tips and the sweet crusts which have fallen from the table of the jungle.

But the dominant interest of fallen or dead leaves is the part they have played in the evolution of animal life. If every leaf and twig, flower and fruit, branch and trunk were to vanish suddenly from the earth, their memory would remain deeply impressed in form, size, movement, pattern and colour of a host of creatures, while we should still have even the jungle lights and shadows etched upon fur and feathers. As we go down the scale in life we find more and more marvels of resemblance, and it would be an easy matter to reconstruct an entire plant of animals. I have caught monster walking-stick insects over a foot in length which were dead wood to the keenest eye. Smaller ones carry the resemblance to an inordinate extreme. Not only do they look like twigs and stems but they *act*

## THE ADELPHI

like them, clinging with four feet and dangling the other two out in mid-air, while every now and then the whole insect sways gently, as does a tiny twig move by a breath.

From day to day in the jungle I add to my animal plants, I discover giant katy-dids so green and flat, so veined and stemmed, that no passing observer could say, "This is leaf, this insect." Others have spoiled the symmetry and perfection of their sham chlorophyll with simulated holes and apparent tears and spots of fungi, and the droppings of birds. All the diseases, parasites and injuries of leaves have been photographed upon the wings of insects, in unconscious endeavour to escape observation. At this point we come upon interactions, complications, subtleties of great delicacy, such as are shown by mantids, or rar' ho'ses as they are called in the southern states. These are camouflaged under chlorophyll colour not for protection but for attack. As the white fox creeps upon the white ptarmigan over the white snow, so here in the tropics, the mantids re-enact a similar, but viridescent drama.

Passing on from growing leaves we find flower bug and orchid spiders, the latter being forced to conceal their brilliant pigments in the shadow of under-leaf until some particular blossom appears. Then, with their colours and patterns so exact that they might have been fashioned in the same petal shop the spiders take their place on or near the flowers. Some even eat away the heart of the blossom, substituting their stamens for leg and pistil palpi, and with the unharmed nectary still giving forth perfume, these deadly frauds of flower await the visiting bees.

Caterpillars gnaw out bits of leaf and then fill up the space with their own painted bodies, but butterflies and moths are the veritable reflections of leaves; they would indeed be naked and blatant to the world were foliage to vanish. Here again not only are colour and pattern



## FALLING LEAVES

evoked but even the movement in falling. I have had a brown butterfly flutter in short, oblique eddies to my net, and there alight warelessly and sway from side to side. Dozens of times I have crept up and enmeshed a dead leaf in my net, and as many times have brushed heedlessly by a dead leaf only to have it take wings to itself and fly away.

Two adventures which befell me yesterday had to do with leaves, and touched the extremes of the gamut of an explorer's life—from the danger of death to the glory of new discovery. Every morning a bird had been calling from a certain tree-top—a short, raucous, unpleasant call, but a new one. So ventriloquial was it that it had wholly baffled me. Only by triangulation, the successive focussing from three distant points, could I ever hope to find it. I was creeping slowly on my second lap, lifting my feet high to clear twigs and vines, when something drew my eyes from the tree overhead to the dead leaves below. This has happened to me perhaps a score of times, and I hope will continue in the future—the sudden, inexplicable perception of a poisonous snake on which my foot is about to descend. A large fer-de-lance, more like dead leaves than the leaves themselves, was coiled less than two feet away. In its scales it mirrored the brown dead leaves, the dark fungus spots, the shadows of the curled-up edges, the high lights of the burnished surface sheen. Optically there was no interruption of the floor of dead foliage; actually a horrible death lay twelve inches beneath my raised foot. The snake was coiled as evenly as a tape on a battle-ship, and in the exact centre lay the arrow head with its unwinking eyes and the flickering tongue. As I withdrew my foot and began to breathe again, I forgot my raucous-voiced bird and sat down to ponder this. I took my strong butterfly net and drew the netting taut across the ring and behind this barrier I slowly approached. Closer and closer I drew until

## THE ADELPHI

I could see the slit-like pupil and the green and livid mottling of the iris. When I almost touched the sharp snout with the other side of the mesh, I sniffed carefully and repeatedly, dulling every other sense but that of smell. There came to my nostrils a faint but distinct odour, an unpleasant musk, which, once detected, remained vivid. It was a faint adumbration of the strong, repulsive smell which permeates the cage when one of these reptiles is confined, and I believe that, without invoking any more radically psychic process, my attention is attracted and focused at these times by the faint, unconsciously stimulating odour of the snake on the jungle floor. I cannot otherwise explain my invaluable detection at the last minute of creatures who move more than any others are of the leaves, leafy.

My second adventure was also a thrilling one, but in a wholly different way. I was walking along a track after a shower, looking idly at a big, palmated leaf when my very elbow when there suddenly materialized upon it a large lizard. It was one of the most beautiful of all lizards, and fortunately had been named with imagination — *Polychrus marmoratus* — the many-coloured marble one. It was sprawled flat upon the great green expanse, its scales shimmering leaf-green, with enough spots here and there to be a convincing portion of the full-grown, insect-defaced foliage. I leaned toward it and it began slowly to creep away. The long, slender tail was curled and twisted into a lifeless tendril, and the toes dangled half in mid-air like no imaginable piece of any live reptile. Progress was by means of the forefeet alone, one after the other being pushed ahead stealthily, taking hold and dragging the rest of the creature onward. The body, hind legs and tail simply scraped over the leaf.

When it reached the thick brown twig magic began before our eyes—for fortunately I had two companions to share this wonder. As it left the green tissue and

## FALLING LEAVES

crept slowly along the twig its course was traceable not only by its position in space but by most exquisitely adjusted and timed pigmental change—at the exact edge of the leaf the green gradually faded and a wave of brown swept down the reptile. Never have I seen a more perfect use of oblitative colour. The whole of the lizard on the leaf was concentrated in his half-closed eyes watching my every motion, yet it must have been through the eye alone that the amazingly accurate somatic colour change was dictated and regulated. Here was surely the ultimate example of vegetable imitation, twigs, leaves—both green and brown—tendrils swaying movement, all in one organism. Not for anything would I have betrayed the lizard's trust in the magnificent shield which nature had built up about it. We pretended to be completely deceived and let it—an irregular bit of half-greenness on the second leaf, and half-brownness on the twig.

A classic volume will some day be written on the adventures of fallen leaves, for when a leaf has evaded the inroads of insects and fungi, has resisted wind and rain, succumbing finally to the pull of gravitation, there awaits it, in addition to ultimate mold and dessication, a host of possible adventures on the jungle floor.

With all my desire to clothe the fallen leaf with climatic interest and an abstract vitality, my first and last thoughts are those of sadness. Alien as I am to these tropical jungles, a mere transient injection from the north—the sere and yellow leaf means to me the end of a season, of a year—a very appreciable fraction of lifetime, and even in this evergreen land, this jungle of eternal spring, the dead leaf eddying to earth is a fall and a tragic happening.



# AS IT WAS

*By H. T.*

## II.

FRIENDSHIP had now become unconscious love. We wrote to each other every day, concealing nothing of our thoughts and ideas and emotions, and relating all that happened to us in our daily life, and the deeper experiences of our growing consciousness. The writing of my letters and the receiving his were to me the most wonderful experiences I had ever had. I had found the friend of my heart, and my nature hitherto so repressed, so morbidly self-distrustful blossomed out. I expressed myself easily and well and was always brimming over with things to tell him of myself and my reading, and I found my greatest satisfaction in his appreciation and understanding and response. During this absence in Wiltshire David sent me boxes of wild flowers, and one thrush's egg—the first he had found. I have it still with the inscription I wrote in the lid of the box, "From my dearest friend David Townsend, to be kept always in memory of a happy friendship."

During this time my father's illness got worse and worse, and after an operation on his throat, a few days after David's return, he died. I was alone with my mother the night of his death. We had left him for a little while in the care of the nurse to get a little much-needed sleep, but we simply lay down on the bed in our clothes, expecting to be called at any moment. While we were alone together in the early hours of the morning, my mother using all the advan-

## AS IT WAS

age of our relation, and of the emotional crisis through which we were passing and which for the while brought us together, asked me to promise to give up David's friendship. She saw plainer than we did to what it was leading, and she disliked David so, and felt jealous of my growing affection for him. In the middle of a terrible discussion the nurse came in to summon us to my father, who was in his last agony, and when we got to his bedside he was dead.

I remember my mother fainting, and my running upstairs to wake my two sisters, and my own feeling of loneliness and despair that I had lost such a dear friend and ally. I remember waiting for the morning to come which would bring David outside the house to wait for news, and my running out to tell him, but I cannot remember how he took it.

After my father's death, life at home became very different. His genial kindness and happiness withdrawn, my mother's harshness became more pronounced. Quite frankly she showed that her daughters were a bother to her. She had to add to her small income by taking in boarders, and these young men—quite decent and nice of their kind—became as her family. The affection and sympathy she might have given her daughters she gave these strangers, and they and she lived in the happiest relations. My friendship with David when it was mentioned was always alluded to with sneers and contempt. The young men took it up, and with my mother's approval did all they could to make it appear ridiculous to me. David never came to the house now, but though my mother had forbidden it he was powerless to prevent my meeting him, and I never hid it from her. We met and walked and talked, and love grew.

There was no definite moment when friendship became love, but a natural merging into love as we became closer friends. At this time we both knew that

## THE ADELPHI

the friendship between us was the happiest thing in our lives, but we did not regard the future. We were content with the present. But I remember one evening very well. It was in the spring and nearing David's birthday, March 3rd. We were walking on the Common, very happy, talking of what we had been reading, what doing, what thinking—walking as usual hand in hand. In a space of silence, when thought and emotion went to and fro between us too full even for speech, I felt that wonderful experience of the first stirring desire, though at this time it seemed half-maternal tenderness for his big, strong body, and his lovely face and his hand holding mine, which now held his more firmly—mingled with something new and strange that I did not understand. I remember how, with that emotion flooding my being, my heart beat too fast, and my face burned, and I could have fainted with the pleasure and the joy of it. For it affected me as later I was affected by the first flutter of my baby in my womb.

When we reached the place for good-night I could not let him go as he had always done before, but I put my hands round his head and drew it down to mine and kissed his mouth and looked close into his eyes. And he returned my kiss and my look, and then turned to go. But as I turned to go too he caught me in his arms and pressed me to him and kissed my mouth and my eyes and my neck : blindly and fiercely he kissed me and I abandoned myself to him, not responding, but just yielding myself to his kisses. When I was in my bed I could not sleep, but lay trembling half with fear, half with wonder, at what I had awakened in him. I did not know that love could be like that, so fierce, so rough, so greedy.

Quite soon after my father's death my position at home became unbearable, and I left to earn my living as a nursery governess with a family at Margate called Dodd. I do not remember that this part



## AS IT WAS

om David seemed terrible to us at all—we were so happy in our love and so sure of the future. I remember that my mother came to see me off, and that she uttered no protest nor showed any surprise when David came too. And so I left home for the first time in my life.

During the time that I was in Margate we wrote to each other every day. My letters were written last thing at night in the only time of my own that I had. My work filled my day. I had four young children to bathe, dress, teach (including piano and violin), take them for walks, and mend for ; and in the evening when they were in bed I was expected to play cards with Mr. and Mrs. Dodd on week days, and on Sundays listen patiently while Mr. Dodd read aloud to his long-suffering wife and me Cary's translation of Dante. How I used to long impatiently for ten o'clock to strike, for when the hour came we stopped the game or the reading. They went to bed, and I to my room to read over again the letter I had had in the morning, and to write that my heart and mind were full of. Long letters they were—poured out of my brimming consciousness. We wrote of our daily lives, our thoughts, the books we were reading, and our emotions. We hid nothing from ourselves from each other, and we now looked forward to a life together, when it would be possible. Marriage did not enter into our plans, but just a passionate desire to be one in body as we were in spirit.

Looking back, it seems to me unbelievable that we were so ignorant of sexual love. But we were very ignorant and very innocent.

I had been at Margate many months, and I was so inexperienced, and I suppose so well, and so happy with my secret, that it never occurred to me to ask for a holiday, and none was ever offered. The servants and the nurse all had their times off, but I never had any. However, one day David wrote to me that he

## THE ADELPHI

was coming into Kent to Horsmonden with a friend to fish. He had been working hard for a Civil Service Examination, and this was to be a little rest before the examination actually took place. I remember when I asked Mrs. Dodd for the day, and told her why, she said, as if so surprised to find I had any life more than her children provided for me—"Oh, I didn't know Phyllis had got a Corydon." So very early one morning I set off. I had to get up at about five, for the journey was a tiresome cross-country one. The cook who was very kind to me, had left my breakfast laid in the school-room, and I remember stealing down the stairs so as not to wake anyone, and finding to my great joy that the weather promised to be fine. I was wearing mourning for my father, but I hated it and the idea of it. I was too poor to buy a new frock for this great day: so I had made a white blouse to wear with my black coat and skirt, and with a big black hat from which I had taken the black ribbon, putting instead a coloured scarf, I made the best of myself.

I remember the journey only vaguely. What I chiefly remember is the changing smell of the air from the sharp saltiness of the sea to the soft earthy smell of the green country. When at last I got to Horsmonden David was on the platform, and in a moment we were together. We did not speak or kiss, but when we got into the lane, and I took in a great, deep breath of the delicious air, he said, "O Jenny, love me more than anything you love," and stopped in the lane, took me in his arms, and kissed me, and we leaned tremblingly against each other. And I said, "I only love other things so much because I love you, dear." And then we walked hand-in-hand silently, till we came to the top of a little hill, when he ran down, pulling me with him till we were both out of breath and laughing, and we sat by the roadside among cow parsley and speedwell till we had got our breath again.

## AS IT WAS

I remember every minute of that day—how we walked and talked as we walked, I not noticing where we were going, but deeply conscious of all the beauty, so strange and so especially lovely to me after the sea and the barren country just inland.

We came at last to a mill pond and to a stick planted in the bank. Here David leaned down and pulled up a bottle of lemonade that he had lowered into the cool water, and from under a bush he produced a basket full of sandwiches, eggs, cake and fruit, all wrapped up in cool leaves. Not far from the stream was a little copse, and here in the coolness, within sound of the stream, and on a carpet of dog's mercury, we sat and ate and talked. I was very hungry after my early rising, and as I sat with David's arm round me, and he was stroking my hair, I soon began to feel sleepy, and when he saw that I made fun of me. It was a hot summer day, and even in the shade of the copse it was hot, and so David unfastened the first few buttons of my blouse, to let the air in on my throat, and then with dry leaves he made a place for me to lie, and took off my shoes and stockings. And I lay down in the little place he had made for me, and he sat down by me and kissing my eyes shut told me to go to sleep, and soon I was fast asleep. I do not know how long I slept, but I think not long. I was awakened by feeling his face near to mine, and when I saw my eyes opened he kissed my eyes and my mouth and my throat, and took my head between his hands, and kissed me again and again; and I, putting my arms round him, drew him to my breast, and so we lay in each other's arms, with our hearts beating wildly together. And yet I can remember no desire for more than this; the new rapture of such an embrace contented us utterly. Then we walked through meadows and woods, and through a beautiful park where I first learnt to distinguish trees. I remember the lime trees there and the beech, and it seems strange now that there



## THE ADELPHI

was ever a time when I could not recognise the fine textured skin-like bark, and the set of the trunk and branches like human limbs, and the beautiful curve that the leafy branches make, like a hand opened in giving.

For tea we made a fire and boiled a kettle. It was the first time we had had a whole day together, the first time we had eaten out of doors together. Picnics had been very rare treats in my towny childhood, and this seemed to me the height of happiness. My surprise and joy and excitement in it all were as wonderful to David as the whole adventure was to me.

At dusk I went. He saw me off in the train, and the day ended, and we did not see each other again for many months.

During this time David was working for his examination, but very half-heartedly, for he hated the idea of an office life. He had very much wanted to go to Oxford, but the idea was not encouraged by his parents, partly on account of the expense, and partly because his father thought that University life would encourage David in his desire to earn his living by writing, which his father rightly felt would never lead to fortune, where fame never entered his mind as a possibility. My father's influence had, of course, been on the side of a literary career, and so David's work for the high branch of the Civil Service was very much against the grain. About this time his first book was published. He had during his long walks at all times of the year kept a minute diary of natural events—birds nesting, flowers opening, and descriptions of the sky and clouds and atmosphere, and all sorts of observations made from day to day. This diary he offered, on my father's advice, to a firm which accepted it. I shall never forget my pride and joy when my copy of the book arrived, and how in spite of my shyness in speaking to my employers of my own affairs I rushed up to Mrs. Do-

## AS IT WAS

show her the book written by my lover, and dedicated to my father. Mrs. Dodd admired my father's work, and the incident led to my telling her about David, and after that I had an interested and sympathetic friend in her.

Soon after this I left Margate. My mother said she wanted me at home. I did stay at home with her for a little while, but the old antagonism sprang up and I could not endure it for long. I very soon got another post as governess with a Mr. and Mrs. Scott, so that I could not be dependent on her. I lived at home, paying mother for my keep.

She tried again to make me give up David, and forbade me to see him; so he could not come to the house. Each evening David and I met, generally on Wandsworth Common, where afar off I would recognise him by his long swinging stride even though with my short sight I could distinguish nothing else about him. Sometimes on these evenings he would just walk with me as far as my gate, but sometimes we would go to Wimbledon Common. It was on one of these summer evenings we had been talking of Richard Derreries, and his love for the human body. We had just read his essay "Nature in the Louvre," and his description of the "Venus Accroupi" which he had admired so much. We were sitting in the undergrowth of a little copse in a remote part of the Common. David had said that he had never seen a woman's body. . . .

[Here the writer tells of how she knelt naked before her lover.]

At the last he said, "Jenny, I did not know there was such beauty."

He told me as we walked home that no statue or picture of a nude woman had ever given him a true idea, and that it was a far more beautiful thing than he had thought. For though he loved the Greek statues, it seemed to him that my body was far lovelier. But that

## THE ADELPHI

was only because a warm and living thing has beauty, which a stone representation of the most perfect body can never have.

We were still very ignorant of sex, and only knew in a vague way through the reading of poetry how the human sexual act was performed. I remember very well with what joy I realized that his head would be on my breast, and I would enfold him in my arms.

After that often when we were in remote places I undressed and lay in the long grass, often beside the infant Wandle, then still an unpolluted stream. I had always from childhood had a love of feeling the air and sun on my body, and now to be able often to have that experience and added to it the joy of my lover's delight, my heart was full indeed. . . . I was half-ashamed of his too great admiration, and wishing I was indeed all that he thought I was—wishing that I had perfect sight, wishing that my hair was not so straight, and my nose was straighter, wishing that I could match his intellect and spirit, wishing that I had more to give him, and longing to give him all. But in spite of all that I knew to be imperfect in me I was utterly happy in his love, and hoped that in his heart he created beauty where none was, out of his love for me.

During these stolen hours we sometimes used to go to his home and read aloud, and sometimes we would go into town to the British Museum or the National Gallery, with Ruskin dictating our taste, sometimes, and we finding it for ourselves, too. Sometimes we would haunt Booksellers' Row—that queer little back street that used to lie behind the Strand—and spend a shilling or two on a second-hand copy of some book we wanted, or having saved up would buy a new volume of Ruskin in a good edition, of Shelley or Keats. Often we had no money, and could only turn the books over, and if we saw one we wanted hope that it would be



## AS IT WAS

there next time we came. Sometimes we would walk all the way home along the Embankment and over Battersea Bridge and home through Clapham Junction. Or we would walk to Hampstead and look at Keats' house, and walk on the Heath, where David would be sure to find some unexpected wild flower, or hear a bird he did not think to hear there, or notice some beautiful effect of clouds or of smoke against the blue sky. All of this was a new aspect of life to me. My eye readily caught the beauty of a group of red roofs, and the iron-work of an old entrance gate, or the bend of a street of tall dignified houses, but nature was a sealed book to me, until David taught me to see with new eyes and hear with new ears. And often I used to escape from home in the evening and go for little walks with him, to fields and lanes whose existence so near home I had not dreamed of, and we would talk of life, and books, and love, and nature, and ourselves; and sometimes there was no need for talk—silence satisfied us more.

All this time he was working for his Civil Service Examination, and I was going to and from my work. He was hating more and more the idea of entering the Civil Service, and about this time, greatly to his father's anger, gave up the work and decided to try to earn his living by writing. Some of the literary weeklies were taking his essays, and his book had had a fair sale. His father, naturally enough, hated the precariousness of this way of living; and, after much discussion, it was decided that David should go to Oxford.

My twentieth birthday drew near, and I was to have a whole holiday, which David and I were to spend on our favourite Wimbledon Common. We were to picnic there for lunch and tea, and go home to a birthday dinner in the evening. It was July, and glorious weather. I had made myself a very pretty white frock, embroidered in flame-coloured silk. I wore a shady

## THE ADELPHI

hat trimmed with the same colour. It suited me, and I know I looked as pretty as it was possible for me to look. I remember Mr. Scott saying as I went out, "Why, Jenny, you look like a bride going to meet her bridegroom," and I remember blushing and feeling a great wave of passionate joy surging up in me, and I could hardly help laughing back at him, "I am!"

I was to bring the lunch and David the tea, and I bought fruit and sandwiches and biscuits and some of our favourite Gruyère cheese and half a bottle of wine. We met in the horrid, dark tunnel at Clapham Junction station. He was there waiting for me, so tall, so distinguished from other men, dressed, as always, with a sort of carelessness that was not at all untidy, but just easy and individual. He was in his person scrupulously careful, and his large hands, which he used so well in all sorts of work, were always well kept. No lover could have pleased the eye more, no girl have been prouder of her man than I of mine, and the wonder of his loving me never left me. Our hearts were beating so, and our joy so intense, we could not speak, but just in that crowded place pressed each other's hands and walked side by side.

It did not take us long to get to the Common. There in solitude we walked hand in hand, or David with his arm round my waist, and I with my hand over his hand, whose pressure just under my breast made my whole body tender with desire. Our souls, spreading their wings, enfolded us in such dreamlike happiness that nothing disturbed our calm and our utter satisfaction. We talked as we sauntered along of what I would do while he was at Oxford, of our life together when he left, of my longing for children, of his ambitions in literature; and in this talk, as in many others, there was often hinted that deep spiritual unrest, which as yet we did not recognize

## AS IT WAS

—much less realize how it was to overshadow so much of his life and mine. All the beauty of the earth, the grass, the flaming gorse, the lark's song, the high cloudlets, the sweet air laden with the honey smell of gorse, seemed to be a part of our love. We could not speak of it, but as we stood to watch a bumble bee make the gorse flower deliver its secret to him, he, standing a little behind me, with his hands over my breasts, drew me to him, and kissed me where my hair grew soft and curly under my ear. So I leaned smiling up at him, and he solemnly looking down at me, his eyes half closed, his lovely mouth trembling from the kiss. So on, talking with hips moving together, laughing because of my short step and his long one. He picked a little bunch of flowers in the grass—white clover, yellow bed-rag and milkwort—and then remembered he had a birthday present for me. It was a brooch made of gold wire twisted into a Celtic pattern, and when I had put my arms round his neck and kissed him for it, he pinned the flowers into the opening of my dress, which first he opened a little more to kiss the warm soft swell of my breast, and while he kissed me I pressed his head yet further down into the warmth and sweetness there.

So we walked on into the remote part of the Common among the trees, until we came to a beautiful little pool, where moorhens and coots lived in the reeds, and where water-voles dipped out of their holes in the low bank into the water making a sound like cream being stirred. Here we sat and paddled our feet in the water and ate our lunch. We were so quiet that the timid water creatures grew bold and birds skimmed over the water, and a flaming dragonfly darted in the air round and round us, as if weaving round us a web of rainbow colours. As we sat, David read to me some of the old Ballads—*Edom O'Gordon*, and *Chevy Chase*, and *Sir I Trick Spens*—he leaning against a beech tree, and I leaning in the crook of his arm and shoulder, listening



## THE ADELPHI

to his deep, clear voice, so quiet, so vibrating, so tender. I was caught up into heaven ; all beauty, all love, all content was mine. Life gave me all it had to give. I lay there in the bend of his arm, in the silence that the splash of the voles, and the song of the lark, and the sound of his voice did not disturb, the beating of his heart under my cheek lulled me to sleep, and my eyes were only opened by his kisses. He kissed my eyes and my funny nose and my mouth and neck and my hands and feet. But I laughed at his serious kisses and pushed him away, and before he knew what I meant to do I had run away and hidden in a thicket of hazel and beech, and crouched down in the dry leaves. I heard his step rustling in the leaves. I waited trembling, half with fear of his finding me, and half afraid I had hidden myself too well. But he came upon me before I knew he was near, and caught me up in his arms and carried me further and further into the little copse. I lay inert in his arms conscious of nothing but his beating heart. Soon he came to a little glade in the copse, leafy and mossy and sunny, and putting me down knelt in front of me and undid my hair, but finding it fall over my face he picked a trail of white bryon and made a filet of it to keep my hair back. . . .

I only remember vaguely that the birthday dinner at home was very jolly and rollicking. My sisters were there, and my youngest sister's sweetheart—a man very much approved of by my mother—and full of fun and well to do and practical and a clever engineer. He was for ever scoring off me in some way, and tried to do the same with David, but he got as good as he gave, for David's wit was quick and penetrating though he was not often moved to show it. We walked back over Wandsworth Common to Clapham Junction, talking happily enough of the books we would buy with the five pounds my mother had given me. I had seen, too

## AS IT WAS

some old brass candlesticks, and a nice Morland print I had set my heart on buying him for his Oxford rooms. We kissed our good-night kiss on the dark Common, and David gave me to wear for a wedding ring the beautiful old signet ring which he wore—a red stone set in a very delicately designed gold setting. It had belonged to his great-grandfather, a Spanish sea-captain.

*(To be concluded.)*

### *The Sound in the Dark*

THE streets are shining wet with rain,  
And all along the way  
Are shimmering lights that make the night  
More living than the day.

The great trees raise their darkened heads  
And live their quiet life,  
Where winds are fresh above the earth  
Beyond all human strife.

In stillness there we heard a sound,  
A sound of mystery,  
Tremulous notes of a lonely owl  
In a deep, shadowy tree.

Our eyes met when we heard again  
The tender, wailing cry,  
Above the striving sounds of men,  
From years that never die.

JOAN ARDEN.

# THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

TWO MONUMENTS.—I was surprised recently to hear a tumult arise from so queer a cause as an assault on the æsthetic sensibility of the public ; even alarmed. Why, the next thing might be the overthrowing of Edith Cavell's Second Martyrdom by the National Gallery, or a public bonfire of Best Sellers, or the cruel hooting of a magnificent speech by a Great Orator. The sales of the Picture Press might sink, the betting editions of all the London evening papers dwindle to the circulation of the " Studio "—but, God knows, this won't bear clear thinking on for ten seconds. Anything might happen. Yet we have always known that that æsthetic sensibility did exist. My own guileless faith is that some day it may even help to break down the industrial system, through the loss in the general of every interest to maintain what is ugly. There may be no common appeal in the *Religio Medici*, or the *Arabia Deserta*, or the *Ninth Symphony* ; but the *Pilgrim's Progress*, *Pickwick*, and *Don Quixote* are for everybody. All the same, the uproar we heard around Epstein's memorial tablet to W. H. Hudson had an ugly and vicious ring. *Punch* for example—that national institution, which most carefully safeguards the refined taste of Suburbia for the best brands of whisky and cigarettes—*Punch* did not fail to observe that the artist's name was so un-English that it ended in stein. Kamerad ! Such an accident of birth may have nothing to do with the quality of a piece of sculpture, but the fact must be brought to the notice of the right golf club-houses, so that good form may be preserved for the caste of plus-fours. Other journals were more direct. They required Epstein to take away his work and bury it. The capacity to judge a work of art was so suddenly developed in Fleet Street among those who had not read *Green Mansions*, and did not know who



## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

Rima was, that one suspected the noise made there was not the cry of dislike and derision raised by the ignorant over any manifestation of what is both remarkable and comely. (Yes ; I understand that the noises made by *Punch* and the popular newspapers do not constitute a popular uproar, but merely indicate a desire that their outcries may be popular.) So I went to see Epstein's memorial. To me, it did not appear to call for a fuss either way. It is seemly and modest. It stands very well for a testimony to W. H. Hudson. And it is not, in fact, the subject of this note, but merely leads to it. Because, after leaving Hyde Park, I found another new memorial, just by St. George's Hospital, over which the Press and the critics, so far as I know, have raised no cry of horror. Yet it blasphemes the memory of those who, before they made us safe again, were heroes. It purports to be to the memory of the men of the Machine Gun Corps. There is a gigantic figure of a naked youth in bronze, an athletic form, holding an immense sword ; but an eunuch nevertheless, and no soldier, for the figure has only a fig-leaf. Or perhaps the figure is only of an inhuman monster, reproducing its kind by parthenogenesis. I have met many machine-gunners, but not a man like it. However, it does not represent a man at all, as the inscription on its pedestal plainly shows ; which reads : "Saul hath slain his thousands, but David his tens of thousands." The memorial, we see, is not to the men, but to the brute which killed most of them. It is dedicate to the machine-gun itself. The inscription might just as well have been in German. The monument is an apotheosis of the most terrible devil of the war. There it is, in central London, near the Royal Residence, and not far from Westminster Abbey ; our tribute to Moloch. What the figure represents filled British homes with memorial cards. We celebrate it in bronze, and *Punch* says never a word. The Press has no criticism to offer.

## THE ADELPHI

But what criticism could it offer? Who did most of the patriotic work in supplying that monster with its sacrificial victims?—ARNOLD CHEESEMAM.

ON LIFE AND DEATH AND SCIENCE.—The discussion about “control of life,” “creative evolution,” and “acceptance of life and death” might be assisted by clarifying the meaning of the terms “life” and “death.” May an onlooker define them, and add some conclusions deducible from the definitions?

1.—“Life” = (for man) conscious existence in *objective* conditions. “Death” = cesser of that state and (unless you disbelieve in survival) conscious existence in *subjective* conditions. Life and Death are but larger modes of our daily waking and sleeping states, which are overtones (or repetitions in small) of the major process of living and dying, through which we have all passed innumerable times before reaching our present state.

2.—Shakespeare knew this. See his philosophy of the subject in the Duke’s great speech in *Measure for Measure* (Act. iii, 1) beginning “Reason thus with life,” which amplifies his other phrase that “we must endure our going hence even as our coming hither.”

3.—Life and Death are therefore halves (the outside and the inside) of a process within the time-order; both halves being subordinate phases of a state transcending and comprehending them. That higher synthetic state is neither “life” nor “death,” but absolute *Being*, of which life and death are the manifestations in the time-order, but which itself is above that order,—outside time-space-causation.

4.—To absolute Being belongs the soul, the permanent Self of us; only the impermanent personality (body and its incidental faculties) belongs to the time-order. The soul itself knows neither life nor death, but only permanent being (of which it has temporarily

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

st consciousness but can regain it,—for which purpose we are here). Life and death are rank superstitions and illusions as regards the soul, which always as and always will be ; which is static, “going” either here nor there either in life or death, but remaining stationary and experiencing vicissitudes and alternations of objective and subjective consciousness according to its condition at the moment.

5.—Mere “Life” is *torture* to anyone who has reined and knows real Being. (“Knowing” implies not merely a notional concept of Being, but habitual, intermittent, experience of it ; for, whilst the body adheres to the soul, such knowing is necessarily intermittent and of an in-and-out character.) Hence the truth of the Christian symbol of the Cross ; the body, and mere “life” in it, being a crucifixion of the soul.

6.—A wise man dreads the thought of going to heaven as much as the unwise fears that of going to hell. For both heaven and hell are (as Milton and Omar Khayyam truly said) merely mind-states *within the time-order*. The wise man aims to get beyond both. What profits it to be hung up in some “heaven,” however agreeable in contrast with the earth-plane, with the prospect of having to come back to resume one’s uncompleted work ? He therefore aims at complete liberation from the wheel of successive births and deaths and to attain pure Being—the Nirvana beyond both heaven, earth, and hell.

7.—This liberation can only be effected from the earth-plane, where alone objective and subjective conditions co-exist and the *will* is present to effect the deliverance. The *post-mortem* state is subjective only and the will becomes dormant (as in dreams) ; “the night cometh when no man can *work*” (at liberation).

The philosophy of liberation was fully declared by Buddha and can be best read in Sir E. Arnold’s superb translation in Book VIII. of “The Light of Asia.”



## THE ADELPHI

The Buddhist "Nirvana" and the Christian "Life Eternal" mean the same thing,—attainment of absolute Being, beyond life and death.

8.—In parenthesis, it should be remembered that in the hieratic, technical sense of Scripture "life" and "death" do not bear the same meaning as in modern colloquial speech. "Life," there, = not carnal existence but ultimate Being, Super-life. "Death," there, means not somatic dissolution and postmortem subjective existence, but *unconsciousness of true Being* (however vividly alive and conscious one may be in other ways) the Easterns call it *A-vidya* (= *non video*); not seeing unawareness. In this higher sense one must interpret such words as "Ye shall surely die"; "Awake from the dead"; "Raised from the dead"; "O death where is thy sting?" They relate not to decease of the body, but to the torpor and blindness of the sense-intoxicated soul. "O grave, where is thy sting?" relates not to the cemetery, but to the *body*, which both by Plato and the Hebrew writers is uniformly called the "grave" of the soul.

9.—As to "control of life" by science. The only life science can control (or rather manipulate) is temporal existence-modes; real Being is beyond its sphere and power. But within the existence-modes of the time-order its possibilities of control are unlimited. It may and probably will, succeed (at its peril) in devising artificial automata, Robots, and monstrosities; it has done so before, witness Faust and the manufacture of the *homunculus*. And Shaw's *Methuselah* fantasy of the protraction of life by will-power is no idle dream (as anyone conversant with magic knows), but a true imagination of something well within the compass of the enormous powers open to highly trained will—which can be perverted equally to the ends of modifying plastic life-forms to its own purpose and extending the duration of physical existence, as it can be directed

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

to the more profitable aim of transcending that existence altogether and attaining liberation from the time-order to timeless Being.

10.—It follows that the suggestion that "creative evolution" is the gospel for the future is a complete fallacy. Evolution is predicable only of transient physical forms. Real Being is outside evolution, as it is outside time-space-causation, although *involved* in them. The true gospel therefore is, and can only be, *liberation* of our involved permanent Self from the sphere where alone flux, evolution and the time-order obtain. "My kingdom (real Being) is *not* of this world" and can never *evolve* from it. But it can be separated, detached, liberated from it; and this is the only work of wisdom we can undertake. It is a work not of science, but not of science of the modern kind, which deals only with externals and sensibles. Whoever pursues this higher science and attains consciousness of real Being, passes, while still in the flesh, from a life which is death to a state transcending both life and death, heaven and earth. For him (as the Vedantists and our own Scriptures say) it is the "end of the world,"—the end of the worldly, time-order, limited consciousness, and the opening up of consciousness in pure Being. He who does this, although the somatic body still clings to him until in its own order it becomes houghed off, is already beyond mere "life" and its problems and vexations, whilst for him "death" has passed out of his vocabulary. "Life," however painful it may be, he will "accept," not for its own sake but as a sacrificial means of serving the less advanced of his kind and assisting them to the same realisation of Being that he himself knows.

Some old German mystic wrote this tag :—

Weme Zeit ist wie Ewigkeit  
Und Ewigkeit wie die Zeit,  
Der ist befreit von allem Streit.

## THE ADELPHI

He for whose mind time and the Ever  
Are twain no more but blent together,  
Is freed from time and this world's tether.

—W. L. WILMSHURST.

THE LAST NIGHT.—There is an aspect of theatrical endeavour which is forever hidden from the audience. They, to whom the theatre is at best a procession of surprising, lively phantoms, must occasionally wonder of the hidden springs which feed, and exact from the actor, a continuance of his art. Perhaps they do wonder, and they cannot be harshly blamed for stilling themselves with an answer which is framed on "the glamour of the footlights." O threadbare, time-worn phrase! Specious, empty contribution of self-deception.

It is not that. The earnest sensitive actor will say that, to his knowledge, that is sheer agony, a thrust of the audience which stifles most of his brothers, and all but few of his sisters. The audience does this thing in ignorance, although from the manifold books of reminiscences wherein this hidden substance may be partly glimpsed, there is opportunity enough for remedy. Even the dramatic critic, though his time be devoted, his knowledge more empiric, is yet a spectator one who leaves when the theatre closes its doors. He too, is concerned with the life of the actor's entertainment, perhaps with the significance of its birth, but not with the strangeness of its death. With a privileged few of the audience he may be there when the actor is rehearsing, striving, weeping his human tears, or suffering with an inner vision; but he is not there, or are the others, when the actor is collecting his photographs from his dressing-room, or standing alone in the empty theatre, his season finished.

To all those intimately connected with a production—and it is explanatory of that emotion, however unrecognized it may pass, which takes hold of scene-shifters



## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

timelight operators and property men old in their profession—there comes, after the last encore, a most strange longing of the heart. It is not a sorrow that it is over, or a wish to go through the production once more. Rather is it a curious death, an exhalation of the breath of a deeply earnest humanity. It may not be in any proportion to the critic's standard of values. It is almost beside the life which the play portrays, something beyond, more profound, whence the play itself draws life. It can see, with a vision grown in exercise, the passage of its smaller self, intensely lived and self-strangled, into a realm of remembrance. Indeed, each incident of each night, with a full anticipation and insistence on its transience, steeps itself in the mind; and remain a pulsing, arresting memory of a thing breathed into life.

That is the dearness, and tenderness of the emotion; that it is an inner seeing, knowing and living. That the actor is content with this constitutes and indures him as an actor. For in his heart he loves this death. It signifies a resurrection. He stands cleansed, richer, fuller in his love, his susceptibilities, his sensitivity. He learns to see each act, each sentence, tinged with his final consummation, and loves the pain it gives him. Although it is perhaps but gently removed from the varieties to be found in an old house, or in an old letter, it is, none the less, a most sincere manifestation of the inner consciousness.—ARNOLD GIBBONS.

# ROUND AND ABOUT SINCERITY

By The Journeyman

THE current *Hibbert Journal* contains an article "Concerning God" in which Mr. Horace Thorogood, literary editor of *The Star*, discusses the views on this important subject held by a number of contemporary writers. I do not think that Mr. Thorogood has anything of great consequence to say on the matter, yet his article is interesting. It is a fascinating piece of self-revelation, and as such it has its significance.

Mr. Thorogood is one of those people who do not like to think things out. He might be described as "a good sort of man"; he means well: but that, as Samuel Butler shrewdly observed, is about the most damning thing that can be said of anybody, though I daresay it is not a bad qualification for a modern journalist, who is required by the nature of his office to believe in contradictories.

What chiefly interests me in Mr. Thorogood is his ill-concealed distaste for the people who do think things out; it amounts to a positive aversion. He makes a brave attempt to hide it. He is willing to confess, for instance, that Mr. H. M. Tomlinson is one of "the greatest masters of the art of literature." (I too admire Mr. Tomlinson's writing; but I cannot help suspecting that the critic who uses a phrase of such magniloquent emptiness to describe him, does not know very much about his writing or "the art of literature.") However, Mr. Thorogood admires Mr. Tomlinson. But he does not like his attitude to God. He says: "I believe in God because he must have somebody

## ROUND AND ABOUT SINCERITY

aunt and reproach for the state of the world; the others believe in God because they must have somebody to praise and thank for it."

Mr. Thorogood, therefore, is one of those who must have somebody to thank for the state of the world, and when he finds a writer, like Mr. Tomlinson, who does not think the state of the world is such that anyone ought to be thanked for it, he is grieved.

But, instead of setting to and making up his mind for himself whether the state of the world is so lovely that someone must be thanked for it, or so desperate that someone ought to be cursed for it; or whether this is a true dilemma at all, since it may very well be that there is, fortunately, no person to be either thanked or cursed for it,—Mr. Thorogood proceeds to suggest that Mr. Tomlinson could not have come to his adverse conclusion concerning God on his own initiative at all. He was led away by someone: and that someone—really a person this time—is Mr. Thomas Hardy.

I am anxious to track down the processes of Mr. Thorogood's mind. As I say, it interests me. But before I press on in pursuit, I would point out that a number of interesting points are being left behind. You must not take Mr. Thorogood's word for it that Mr. Tomlinson "believes in God because he must have someone to taunt and reproach for the state of the world." Mr. Thorogood has a quotation from Mr. Tomlinson from which he derives that conclusion—but by the process called a *non-sequitur*.

In reality, Mr. Tomlinson's position is quite simply and exactly agnostic. He does not know whether any entity is personally responsible for the state of the world: but he hopes and believes not.

Fundamentally, the belief is very like Mr. Hardy's. Therefore, says Mr. Thorogood, Tomlinson has been influenced by Hardy. That is to say, Mr. Thorogood cannot conceive that two independent,



## THE ADELPHI

honest, and powerful minds should come to the same conclusion concerning the state of the world, and decide that it is such that no *personal* God could be responsible for it. And it is rather difficult to conceive this, I suppose, if you feel that things in general are so magnificently ordered that you must find someone to praise for it.

Since this is the case with Mr. Thorogood—is it not a happy name for the lineal descendant of that English branch of the noble family of Pangloss, whose most famous representative believed that “all was for the best in the best of all possible worlds”?—I cannot help wondering still more whether he does really admire Mr. Tomlinson’s writing. Mr. Tomlinson’s writing without Mr. Tomlinson’s attitude is a distinctly hypothetical entity. Still more do I wonder whether the following words concerning Mr. Hardy are sincere.

Personally, though I delight in Hardy’s art as a novelist and as the poet of *The Dynasts*, I have a hearty dislike for his miserable and querulous philosophy. It escapes in all its bitterness in his poems. The subject of a Hardy poem is nearly always some ugliness of death or failure. What service to truth or art does Hardy do by this Mrs. Gummidge business? None to truth . . .

Can that be sincere? Impossible. Because anyone who really “delighted, &c.,” would know that a separation between *The Dynasts* and the rest of Hardy’s poems, or between his poems and his novels cannot be made. Whatever you may think of Hardy, he is *totus, teres atque rotundus*: all of a piece. So Mr. Thorogood is caught at a game which I think must be second nature to him—“delighting in” and “heartily disliking” the same thing at the same time. In other words, Mr. Thorogood is a Laodicean: he blows hot and cold with the same breath.

I should say—to pursue my dispassionate inquiry—that he is a professional Laodicean. For it is pretty

## ROUND AND ABOUT SINCERITY

easy to see which breath comes from him with more conviction. No one who really admired Hardy would talk of his philosophy as "this Mrs. Gummidge business." A genuine admiration imposes restraints. There are, no doubt, many people who do not agree with Hardy's philosophy ; but I have never met a man whose opinion in these matters was worth a rap who did not respect it. You cannot help respecting it ; for, *if* you have taken the trouble to understand it, you know that it is a philosophy that can only be answered by an immediate and unshakable religious experience. On its own plane Hardy's indictment of the scheme of things is unanswerable. And I pity any man who has lived through the events of the last dozen years and has not felt that Hardy's philosophy was profoundly true—more than true—the only truth that was being spoken in our day.

No, I do not pity such a man : I have a contempt for him. I have a contempt for wish-wash. And behind all Mr. Thorogood's decorous indignations, I feel the wish-washy mind. He rejects Mr. Hardy's vision of the world in the name of religion. It is a dangerous thing to do. John Henry Newman knew something about the reality of religion : his view of human life was far darker than Hardy's. That one fact, if Mr. Thorogood had but known it, might have made him suspect that Hardy's might be, through and through, in the height and in the depth, a religious attitude. But Mr. Thorogood does not know very much ; he does not think very much ; and he does not feel very much.

Before I give the very simple explanation why Hardy's is a religious attitude, I will inquire a little further into Mr. Thorogood's mind. What is this religion of his in the name of which he is scornful of Hardy's attitude? Is it Christianity? Not at all. Mr. Thorogood has the candour to confess that "the conception of Jesus as divine, immortal, still with us,

## THE ADELPHI

and still at the right hand of God . . . staggers his own powers of belief." An honest man i' faith. But wait a moment. On the next page : " Religion without a divine Jesus seems to me not much preferable to the dry and barren doctrine of the rationalists." Hot and cold again? Or can it be candour, and Mr. Thorogood is talking of his own religion? Not a bit of it. Simply hot and cold again. Jesus is not divine ; yet if Jesus is not divine, my religion is dry and barren. What then? " Shadows are often more beautiful than realities."

Murder will out. If that is Mr. Thorogood's religion, I wish him joy of it. I call it a mush. Jesus was divine, or he was not. If you cannot believe the former, then be honest and face the fact of his death and the manner of it. Oh, but that is very painful. By God, it is. And this gentleman, who will look nothing in the face, has the assurance to describe Hardy's philosophy as " this Mrs. Gummidge business"! Hardy got his philosophy by looking things in the face. " Shadows are often more beautiful than realities." By God, they are. But it is a *man's* business to look at the realities.

I do not know what lovely shadows Mr. Thorogood comforted himself by contemplating during the European War. I do know that the newspapers with which he is associated had the honour to dismiss Mr. Tomlinson because he insisted on revealing something of the reality of that war. But what I want to rub Mr. Thorogood's nose in is this : that what makes a Hardy and a Tomlinson look at realities instead of shadows is not " querulous pessimism," but love for their fellow-men. Love, love, and love again. They love truth ; they love their fellow-men ; and they love truth because they love their fellow-men.

None can usurp this height (return'd that shade)  
But those to whom the miseries of the world  
Are misery and will not let them rest.



## ROUND AND ABOUT SINCERITY

When Mr. Thorogood has managed to love his fellow-creatures one thousandth part as well as either of those whom he condemns for "querulous pessimism"—then, and not till then, will I listen to him as critic of their religion. For religion can only be judged by religion, truth by truth, and love by love.

Finally, I would recommend to Mr. Thorogood's earnest study, if he would save his soul alive, these gentle words of Hardy himself :

That these impressions have been condemned as "pessimistic"—as if that were a very wicked adjective—shows a curious muddle-mindedness. It must be obvious that there is a higher characteristic of philosophy than pessimism, or than meliorism, or even than the optimism of these critics—which is truth. Existence is either ordered in a certain way or it is not so ordered, and conjectures which harmonize best with experience are removed above all comparison with other conjectures which do not so harmonise. So that to say one view is worse than other views without proving it erroneous implies the possibility of a false view being better or more expedient than a true view; and no pragmatic proppings can make that *idolum specus* stand on its feet, for it postulates a prescience denied to humanity.

## BOOKS TO READ

THE LIFE AND LETTERS OF LADY MARY WORTLEY MONTAGU. By Lewis Melville. Illustrated. (Hutchinson.) 18s. net.

We think Mr. Melville ranks Lady Mary rather too high as a letter writer. She has nothing of the quality of a Sevigné, a Dorothy Osborne, a Chesterfield, or a Keats; and placing her in the second order beside La Fayette, Cowper, or even Fitzgerald, you find her inferior as literature, though more important to social history. She holds, of course, a position of far greater significance in medical history, as the introducer of vaccination ("ingrafting") from the East. Mr. Melville is a very practised, but not a consummate biographer: his *arrangement* is not perfect. The book, naturally, is mainly correspondence; though it was not of course practicable to embody all the extant letters. It is, necessarily, of great interest; though it lacks both glamour and profundity. Mr. Melville gives a curious dark impression of society under the early Hanoverians. His estimate of Lady Mary's character is rather indeterminate; what strikes us chiefly is a progressive moral deterioration in "Sappho" and her dull husband, who both seemed to start promisingly. (Their love-story was dealt with by Mr. Stevenson at length in the July *ADLPHI*.) Mr. Melville brings out well Lady Mary's foreign experiences and her literary connections; but he disconcerts (p. 196) with an incredible perversion of two lines from the *Epistle to Dr. Arbuthnot*.

PARNELL. By St. John Ervine. (Benn.) 12s. 6d. net

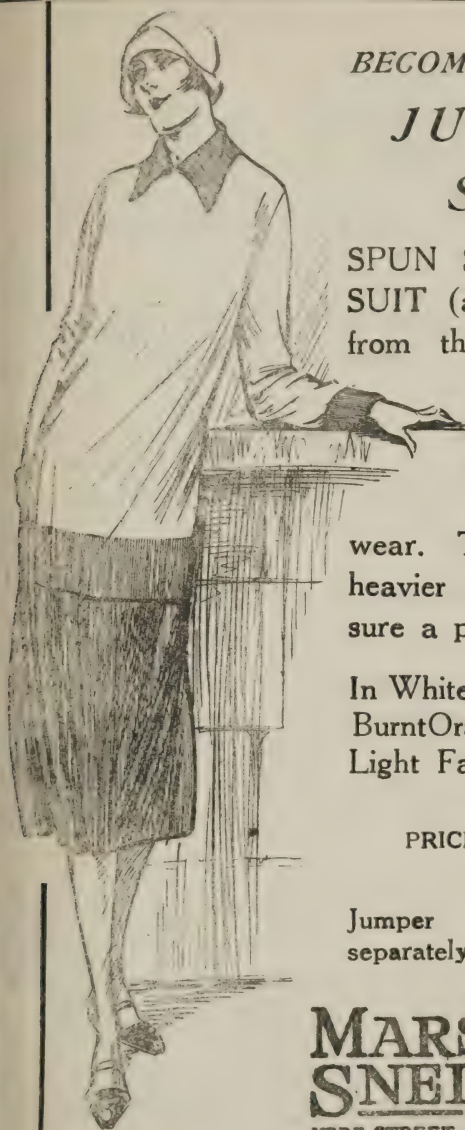
Mr. Ervine, as one would expect, makes his theme interesting; his admirable style, his stimulating blend of sympathy and malice, enliven a depressing passage in our political annals. Charles Stewart Parnell was one of the heroic type, with its more than ordinary human weaknesses: but it is curious that his personal magnetism, which dominated one people and astonished another, remains quite inexplicable and seems beyond biography's power to convey. Mr. Ervine's estimate of the Celtic temperament is very penetrating; especially as to its emotional unfitness for leadership, the moral of which is that Southern Ireland can unite, but only under an alien dictator. It is almost impossible to shake off political bias in one's judgment of Parnell; but even those who stoutly maintain that "Ireland never had a grievance" will own that "here was a *man*" and acknowledge the tragedy and political disaster of his early taking-off. Mr. Ervine's sparkle never betrays him into actual superficiality; still, the book is not out of place in a series edited by Mr. Guedalla.

JESUS: BY AN EYE-WITNESS. By H. D. A. Major. (John Murray.) 3s. 6d. net.

This valuable little book is not, as the title may suggest, a narrative of the "unknown disciple" sort. If Dr. Major desired a striking title for this excellent exposition of the essential historicity of Mark's Gospel he would have done better to choose "Peter's Reminiscences of Jesus." More and more, we believe, as time goes on will it be recognised that Mark has given the world something beyond price, a fundamentally faithful record of the life of Jesus from his baptism to his death. If we accept, as we must, the origin of Mark's material in Peter's recollections, then we gradually conceive an immense admiration for the passionate honesty of the old disciple, who told a world which he might easily have deceived of his own lack of understanding and his cowardice. On the rock of Peter's honesty all historical scepticism finally is broken; and on that rock one day, perhaps a new Christianity will be built. Dr. Major's little book is a real contribution to this future. On one occasion (p. 27) he shows a strange lapse of understanding in the choice of an adjective.

FACTORS IN AMERICAN HISTORY. By A. F. Pollard. (Cambridge University Press.) 8s. 6d.

This, the fourth series of lectures delivered on the Sir George Watson Foundation differs remarkably in *manner* from its American predecessors! It is Liberal in tone, and conduces to that all-important "better understanding" between England and the States. Professor Pollard is the archetype of a certain historical method. He has great learning and power of synthesis; and many of his *aperçus* are sound and illuminating. It is rather difficult to track him to any conclusions, and we fear many students may find the lectures a little dull. He surveys the evolution of America from the viewpoint of legal and constitutional history and theory; and in these respects the book is remarkably "full."



*BECOMING SPUN SILK*  
**JUMPER**  
**SUIT**

SPUN SILK JUMPER  
SUIT (as sketch) made  
from the finest quality  
yarn on well  
fitting lines,  
specially de-  
signed for sports  
wear. The skirt slightly  
heavier in weight to en-  
sure a perfect hang.

In White, Gold, Nil, Grey,  
Burnt Orange, Saxe, Helio,  
Light Fawn, Cedar.

PRICE **6** GNS.

Jumper can be supplied  
separately. Price **59/6**

**MARSHALL &  
SNELGROVE**  
VERO STREET AND OXFORD STREET  
LONDON W.1

*Sent on Approval.*



# CONTENTS

	PAGE
FROM MAN TO GOD. By JOHN MIDDLE- TON MURRY ... ..	309
TOWARDS THE COAST: POEM. By FRANCES CORNFORD ... ..	320
"A MATTER OF FAITH." By HORACE NEWTE ... ..	321
CHAPLIN AND THE HICKS. By HENRY KING ... ..	333
AS IT WAS (III.). By H. T. ... ..	339
ARISTOGENIC EVOLUTION. By HENRY CHESTER TRACY ... ..	352

*(Continued on page iii.)*

---

¶ *The Editor of THE ADELPHI will be pleased at all times to consider MSS. if accompanied by a stamped and addressed envelope. No responsibility, however, is accepted for MSS. submitted. Communications for the Editor and MSS. should be addressed to The Editor, THE ADELPHI, 12, Cursitor Street, E.C. 4.*

¶ *The Subscription Rate for THE ADELPHI is 16/6 per annum post free to any address. Subscriptions may be sent to The Publisher, THE ADELPHI, British Periodicals Limited, 12, Cursitor Street, E.C. 4, or to any Newsagent.*

¶ *Advertisement copy and all communications relating to the advertisement pages should be sent to the Advertisement Manager, THE ADELPHI, British Periodicals Limited, 12, Cursitor Street, E.C. 4, to whom applications for Advertisement Rates should be made. (Phone: Holborn 225-226.)*

# CONTENTS—*continued*

	PAGE
WOMEN TOO PROUD: POEM. By	
GEOFFREY H. WELLS ... ..	360
CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB.	
The Absolute Change, By "A Parson" ... ..	361
The "Thing" of Hardy's Poetry. By J. A. Hall	364
THEATRE AND CINEMA.	
"Tess of the D'Urbervilles" ... ..	368
"Hamlet" in Modern Dress ... ..	369
"The Gold Rush" ... ..	370
ON BEING A CLASSIC. By THE	
JOURNEYMAN ... ..	372
BOOKS TO READ ... ..	376
NOTABLE NOVELS AND SHORT	
STORIES ... ..	382

[ALL RIGHTS RESERVED]

**"Survisca"**  
REGD  
**SHIRTS**  
**PYJAMAS & SOFT COLLARS**  
*are suitable for all occasions; they possess wonderful strength and durability, and are economical wear for*  
**MEN.**

Look for the  
**"LUVISCA" TAB**  
 on every Gar-  
 ment. None  
 genuine without.

If any difficulty  
 in obtaining write  
**COURTAULDS,**  
**LTD. (Dept. 42M.),**  
 19, Alderman-  
 bury, London,  
 E.C.2, who will  
 send you name of  
 nearest retailer  
 and descriptive  
 booklet.



## & NEW ZEALAND LINES

### MAIL, FREIGHT AND PASSENGER SERVICES.

*P. & O. and B.I. Tickets Interchangeable, also Tickets of P. & O., Orient, New Zealand Shipping and Union Companies. All sailings subject to change with or without notice.*

- 1 London & Marseilles to Bombay, Karachi & Persian Gulf.
- 2 London to Colombo, Madras and Calcutta.
- 3 London & Marseilles to Ceylon, China, Japan & Australia.
- 4 London & Marseilles to Port Sudan, East & South Africa
- 5 London to Queensland.
- 6 London (cargo) & Southampton (passengers) to New Zealand & (by transshipment, passengers only) Australia via Panama Canal.
- 7 United Kingdom (by any Atlantic line) via Vancouver or San Francisco to New Zealand, Australia and the South Sea Islands.
- 8 London (one class only, third class rates) to Australia via Cape of Good Hope.

#### ADDRESS:—

Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4 & 5.—For Passage, P. & O. House (Manager, F. H. Grosvenor), 14-16, Cockspur St., S.W. 1.; Freight or General Business, P. & O. & B.I. Offices, 122, Leadenhall St., London, E.C. 3.

No. 6.—J. B. Westray & Co., Ltd., 138, Leadenhall Street, London, E.C. 3, or P. & O. House (first floor,—General Passenger Agent, W. L. James), 14, Cockspur Street, S.W. 1.

No. 7.—Union S.S. Co. of New Zealand, Ltd., P. & O. House (first floor,—General Passenger Agent, W. L. James), 14, Cockspur Street, London, S.W. 1, and for Vancouver Service, any office of Canadian Pacific Railway.

No. 8.—P. & O. Service, Australia, via Cape, 32, Lime Street, E.C. 3, or P. & O. House, as above.

B.I. Agents, Gray, Dawes & Co., 122, Leadenhall Street, London, E.C. 3.  
Paris (All Routes)—Société Française, P. & O., 41, Boulevard des Capucines.

**P. & O. HOUSE, 14-16 COCKSPUR STREET, LONDON, S.W. 1**



# The Adelphi

---

VOL. III. NO. 5.

OCTOBER, 1925

---

## FROM MAN TO GOD

By John Middleton Murry

LET me press on. I must say my small say quickly, or it will never be done.

I have said that the life of Jesus enables us to believe in man. Since he veritably was, we can believe in, and we can work for, the creation of a new man. It is the only thing in which we can believe.

"That is impossible. What of the War?"

The war proved one thing, and one alone; but proved it finally. The old man, the present man, is doomed to disaster. Somehow man must be changed. We have a breathing space; for ten, for twenty years this blasphemy of humanity which is modern war may be spared us. We have a breathing space. We can use it.

Somehow man must be changed. To change man: that is the problem.

"It cannot be done. Man is not; he is millions of men and women."

No, we cannot change millions of men: perhaps we shall need millions of years for that. But to change millions is not required. One man, who was changed nineteen hundred years ago, wrought wonders. Is it not a wonder even to think that if one man in a thousand of those who professed to follow him had taken but one

## THE ADELPHI

step on his road, the war could not have been? Think therefore not of changing millions, but of changing ones and those ones—ourselves.

“Oh, but it was not we who were responsible for the war.”

By God, was it not? Who, in very deed, but we! We, the clever ones, we, the thinking ones. Not the politicians, not the priests. We knew them for what they were. Can *we* blame the Church, when we had left her? Can *we* blame the politicians, when we despised them? Were we prepared to do what we knew they would not do—to cry aloud that this thing was a blasphemy, and *take the consequences*? I pity the man among us, the clever ones, the thinking ones, who has not known, in his hour, that he, and *he alone*, bore the guilt of the war. It is we, who have had that knowledge, or a glimmering of it, who must be changed. We who have wrung our hands over the mud and blood of the muckheap of the world, and have had a sudden sight that it is we, and we alone, who were the muckheap—we who knew and felt, and did not act. There is no one for us to blame, but ourselves. *Nostra culpa, nostra maxima culpa.*

Think therefore of changing ones, and those ones, ourselves.

I have thought of it now, it seems, for years : I have thought of little else. How can one man be changed?

I can see but one way to do it : to take the life of Jesus as the reality it was.

First of all, then, to *believe* that his life was a reality.

Well, we cannot do that unless we have a sense of its reality. Without that we shall not even be interested. I take the sense of its reality for granted. From that sense we must work, loyally, according to the conditions of a grown mind. We must ruthlessly reject from his story all that makes him incredible to a grown mind. There must be no compromise. Some

## FROM MAN TO GOD

will say we are thereby rejecting all that makes him "divine." Let it be : we do not care. The "divine" that is incredible to a modern mind is for that mind an inoperative divine. All that we cannot honestly accept as true of a living man must go. Something happened, something of infinite import to humanity, it happened in one way, and one alone. The Jesus we can believe in must be a historical Jesus. It is no use saying, as one sincere correspondent has written to me, that a Jesus without a resurrection is inoperative for men. For heaven's sake let us not be pragmatical ! If we are to judge by results, where are we ? Has a Jesus with a resurrection been so greatly operative among men ? Let us think again of the war : and begin by believing only what we can *believe*.

A historical Jesus, then. But what do we mean by that ? Only a little of his earthly course can be recovered from the darkness. Let us recover all we can, working like men of science. It is our duty : we desire to recapture a *fact*. But the fact of Jesus cannot be recreated on a chart. Where he went is little known ; what he did, but little more ; what he was—let us wait for this.

But of what he did, one thing is certain : he died, and deliberately died, for his belief. We are ruthless with the story, rejecting miracle, pious legend, everything in which we cannot believe. One fact remains. Do what we will to the story as we have it, there is a moment when his face is set to go to Jerusalem—to proclaim the new truth, and to die proclaiming it. He went—no one understood why he was going ; he died—no one understood why he died. The historical criticism which would destroy that part of the story is negligible. He deliberately died for his belief, and died for mankind. I have tried to shake that certainty : I have played the devil's advocate against my own exceeding desire, knowing that I cannot afford to build



## THE ADELPHI

upon a lie, however dear. I am getting on in years. I was once young : the war put an end to that. Whatever I find to live by, there must be no lie in it. The death, the decision and the purpose of the death of Jesus stand firm. It *was* so.

*Also gut.* Here was a *man*. He found it in himself to do what no man, as far as we know, had ever done before ; what no man could ever do again. He died lonely, utterly forsaken, by his followers, by his God. That could never be again. The Christian martyrs died : they had him with them. The non-Christian martyr has died : he, no less, if he died lonely for humanity, has had Jesus with him. They were not *alone*. Jesus was.

*Also gut.* Here was *the man*. This is no lie. That despairing cry of his was never invented. I know not the mind among all the early Christians from Paul or "John" to Augustine who could have invented that : who would have *dared* to invent it—not that extreme of human suffering. If I am told the words come from a Psalm, I shake my head. The words of extreme agony are ever the same. "And thou, Brutus!" was not spoken once alone in the world's history. Nor was *Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani*. But once alone by a man who deliberately died for humanity. Against all my devil doubts, that cry vindicates the reality of Jesus' death. It *was* so.

Here was *the man*. We must look again. Much, infinitely much, depends on this. What was he? Did he die for a dream? If he did die for a dream—may be we also are dreamers, too, and have to die for ours—to make our dreams come true. If he did not die for a dream, what then . . . what then?

Here was *the man*. What was he?

A man who loved all things and all men, who believed that God was the Father of all men, who knew himself the Son of God, who called himself the

## FROM MAN TO GOD

Son of Man, who deliberately risked, and endured, a death in agony, in order to proclaim to men that the God of his belief verily existed, and who was forsaken by his God at the last. Those are the *facts*, strange facts, simple facts. What can we make of them? Somehow they hang together : mysteriously they fit.

Let us begin therefore at the beginning—his love. Perhaps we shall find the way into the heart of it.

Love—it is a hard thing. Hard to achieve, hard to understand. But his love loved *everything*. And loved everything *naturally*. That seems to me, as an adult man, the prime reality of the historical Jesus. To make anything of it we need to know a little about love—to have loved, something or somebody. It is no use *trying* to love people or things. You either love them, or you don't. Sometimes a condition of not-loving passes into a condition of loving—miracle of miracles!—but your effort had not much to do with it. It happened. Suddenly you saw that such a person or such a thing was *to-be-loved*. That he in himself, it in itself, compelled love from you. That is the cardinal fact of love.

That Jesus loved everything means, above all else, that to him everything was *to-be-loved*. He loved, not by a tense effort of will, nor in a sentimental swoon, but as a man who saw the divine—yes, the divine—particularity of men and things. “Behold the lilies of the field : they toil not, neither do they spin ; yet Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.” There is the secret of the love which is in all great art, without which all art is lifeless and worthless, so spoken that a child may understand. As with things so with men and women. The man who called James and John the “Sons of Thunder” was laughing at them, for the naïve children they were. But laughing with love ; seeing them as precious and absurd, as they were indeed, clamouring that he should call down fire and

## THE ADELPHI

brimstone on a village that would not receive them, clamouring that one should sit on his right hand and the other on his left in the kingdom. James and John, "Sons of Thunder": let us muse upon that name. It may convey more to us of the reality of Jesus' love than many volumes. A love that could laugh; a love that must laugh.

Such a love, of all things and all men—a finding of all things and all men in themselves lovable and lovely. A sense that men could not help being what they were. Could not help it, do I say? Rather, that it was divinely appointed that they should be what they were. Divinely appointed, but only up to the moment when he appeared, seeing them thus divinely appointed—not *an instant longer*.

For when he first wholly saw that lovable creation, he knew in that same moment that it had been created with love. There was the lovable creation; there must be the loving creator. No doubt at all: no possible doubt. He saw the creation: he loved the creator. No illusion here: not the vestige of an illusion. Any man who, for a moment of time, can see the whole creation as Jesus saw it, knows that it is the handiwork of love. Knows it for that moment. All supreme artists have known it for that moment. But they cannot remain there: they cannot *believe in* their vision. Jesus could and did.

Into the presence of that divine and loving Creator he went when he came up out of the waters of Jordan. The Son had found the Father—a God in whom his love could find rest.

No illusion here: I say it again. This was inevitable; this was true. God the Father had been created, because God the Father had been seen; because God the Father had been seen, God the Father had been known. Jesus had not merely loved; he had recognized the lovable. Knowing God's creation, he passed



## FROM MAN TO GOD

into the presence of its Creator. The Father had found the Son, to know him.

At that moment the divine necessity that men should be what they were was at an end ; from that moment it was completely changed. Now men had to be something different : they had to become new men and follow the new man into the knowledge and presence of the new God. They had to see that all things and all men were to-be-loved : the moment they saw that, they would be changed. They would have to change : they could not help it. If they saw, they could not mar the beauty which they saw ; they must cease to be discordant, once they had heard the harmony. Once they could see the lovable creation, they must know the loving creator. Then they would know that God was their father and they his sons.

No illusion here : not the vestige of an illusion. Love makes no mistakes, whatever the wise of the world may say. What can be seen as lovable is lovable—now and for ever—even though only one man has seen it. A loved creation compels a loving creator.

Is that an illusion? Never. We who cannot love much, but have loved a little, know that in that which we loved the handwork was divine. Though all the best were the devil's business, so much was divine. Divine that woman whom we loved ; that little child divine—that bird, that glint of sky.

Love alone can know love. Love tells us that this man loved all. The whole universe was lovely for him : he loved it and laughed. And it *was* lovely while he was there to see it.

But Pain? The Pain of the world? Was that also lovely?

Wait with that question. It cannot be answered now. Remember only this : that the man who saw a divine and manifest necessity that all things and men should be what they were, saw also a divine and mani-

## THE ADELPHI

fest necessity that, *from the instant of his seeing*, things and men should be no longer what they were. The moment a man saw the harmony, he must be subdued to it ; the moment a man knew the Father, he became a Son.

The Son had found the Father ; he could not fail to find him. He had created Him ; he was bound to create Him. A God for the new man that he was : a loving God who should have, who could have, not subjects but only sons. He the new man, the man of the new love, had created the new God.

Sublimest of all creations ; never-ceasing wonder to the seeing eye ; miracle of miracles. You who cannot believe in this man, except as one who changed water into wine, or made one loaf into a hundred, can you not turn for a moment and discern how little is this faith of yours ? This man whom you would make a street-corner conjurer wrought a miracle whereat the stars shot from their spheres. This man created God the Father ; out of his new human nature he was compelled to create him. Here was he, and he could no other. And because he was, verily and indeed, what he was, the God the Father he created does exist and has existed ever since that moment when Jesus came up out of the waters of Jordan and knew him—but as the God of a new man, known only by a new man. When any man can see the world—the birds, the beasts, the fishes, and mankind—as Jesus saw it, then he too is a new man, and he too is bound to create for himself a new God. He adds existence to the God of Jesus ; and that God will wholly be on the great day towards which the whole creation groans and travails,—the day when all men love all things as Jesus loved them. Then every man will know what it is to be the son of God, and be it, and in that company of sons will God the Father have his consummation and his being.

There is the miracle ; and there is none beside it.

## FROM MAN TO GOD

Let a man take this into his soul, and the miracle will begin once more to be in him. Nothing is asked of him, save that he should be a man. Let him deny nothing, surrender nothing of what is truly his; reject no knowledge, accept no faith; only be loyal to the greatest man who ever lived, who spoke the truest words and lived the truest life. Strive to understand him. It is your duty. You believe in knowledge; you believe in history; you believe in *fact*. What of his *fact*? Be loyal; be honest. Look at the fact, and look at nothing more. Throw everything away that an honest man of the twentieth century cannot believe; reject it utterly. The fact remains. Stick to the fact. What of the *fact*?

Was ever love on earth like this man's? Was ever life or death on earth like his? Ever pain? Ever loneliness? Be loyal: be honest. There is but one answer. Never!

What then?

What think you of love? Is it not the highest we know, or dream? Something we touch for a moment and it departs? Something we could give our souls, our lives, to possess?

To love all things, all men. Have not all our greatest striven for this alone? Shakespeare—for what else did he go through his hell and win his victory? What else do his works reveal? What else is revealed by the work of any man whose utterance lives in the human soul, and is not as sounding brass and a tinkling cymbal? What else than love manifest, in the magical creation of love's seeing, distinguishes the true from the false among the words of men? Keats's wasted and put down his pen with the words: "I have loved the principle of *beauty in all things*." What else can a man love? What else is love?

What all our greatest have seen in part and known in part, this man Jesus knew wholly. He lived and



## THE ADELPHI

died for love of the whole world. For that love, for the God whom that love created, he endured agony of agonies. There is your *fact*.

Will you now talk of the pale Galilean? Will you condescend to him? Will you say of this man that his God was a dream? Because his God forsook him at the last?

Look closer yet. As surely as that man lived, his God lived; as surely as he died, his God died also. But his God had been. While Jesus lived, he *was*. Whenever Jesus lived again, where alone he can live, in the hearts and souls of men, whenever the love he loved of all things and all men broke into tiny birth again, his God was alive once more. His God is as real as his vision: no more, no less—the most real thing that has ever descended into the soul of man. When he was forsaken at the last by his God, he had paid the last sacrifice of love. It was necessary that the great fact of his life should be completed by that crowning *fact*. By his cry that God had forsaken him, he made God exist. On the fact of that cry, the fact of his whole life rests secure. This was a *man*.

Gone are the centuries of faith. Let us be glad. We need no faith any more. We need only to know. This was a man, wholly and forever a man. Rejoice, again I say rejoice! What could faith give to the faithful that was like this knowledge for them that know? This is how man can love, this is how man can live, this is how man can die, this is what man can believe!

*Lift up your heads O ye gates: be ye lift up, ye everlasting doors! for the King of Glory shall come in.*

*Who is the King of Glory?*

The man Jesus, and his brothers in ages yet to be, who will love the wonder of this world in time as he loved it, love the lily of the field and the sparrow and the ass and the harlot and the publican and the sinner. Men who will see, like him, all things new—each single

## FROM MAN TO GOD

ing, each single man, bright with the bloom of birth. These are the new men ; these are the sons of God, and Jesus was the first-born. Because he was the first-born son he had no Father ; his father forsook him in his need. That to all perfect things that were, one wonder at the last might be added—a perfect life of man. The agony that drove God the Father from the Universe, established Him there for ever. Out of the depths of defeat, victory was wrung ; out of a discord that jarred the foundations of the world, harmony ; out of death, life.

This man who lived and died for love, who lived and died to reveal to men the God of love's creation, brought at the last one thing beyond his knowing—the beauty of absolute pain. What love could not love, Jesus by his death revealed as to be loved before all things else. Love could love its pain, love could love its death ; but not its brother's pain, not its brother's death. But on the day when Jesus died with a loud cry on the Cross, the last great barrier of love was flung down. For the first time love could love his brother's pain, and love the absolute of his pain. The pain of Jesus was Pain : no pain was like that one, nor ever can be—utter, unmitigated Evil. But no man who will see that pain will ever shrink before the mystery of pain. On that day, Pain was conquered.

Then, for the first time love could love his brother's pain : and then for the last. Once only is it required of him ; once only is it necessary. For the one blinding and ineffable moment when he may see that all things and men, all life, in the height and the depth, are to be loved. Pain absolute was only once here in this world of men : in that pain is all pain : then it too was lovely, lovely beyond all dream.

Such was the victory of love : it made its own destruction the loveliest thing that love can ever know. Nothing so beautiful as the life and death of Jesus has ever

## THE ADELPHI

been, or ever will be, revealed to man. Utter love  
utter loneliness, utter pain, utter annihilation. Look on  
it well, look till your eyes cannot see for tears.

“ I cannot look ! ”

Look, look ! Have you no love ? This was a Man  
Do not turn your eyes away. Hold on, I conjure you  
though your heart be ashes and your mind a frozer  
thing. It is nothing to what he suffered for you. Suffer  
this for him. Not for him—for your own soul’s sake  
What do you see ?

“ I see Beauty, Beauty Absolute ; I see Perfection  
of all Perfections—the love of a loving God.”

### *Towards the Coast*

WE leave the intricate earth. White butterflies  
Blundering low over the wind-tossed vetch,—  
The road,—the dust,—the windmill,—all are touched  
With a simplicity of coming strangeness.  
For there, across the dunes (take in your breath)  
Under the dove-gray sky,—as wide as death—  
The Sea.

Fall, fall away, all soot and dust ; despair,  
Turmoil abroil, uncertainties that rend,  
All grinding pain and sound be ever still,  
Here is the end :—

Unmeasured sands to walk, as spirits may—  
With washed, unweighing feet for ever free.—  
The hush of waves almost unreachable  
By mortal sense, as is Eternity.

FRANCES CORNFORD.



# “A MATTER OF FAITH”

By Horace Newte

MIRIAM LAZELL joined the drab throng which dumbly waited in a drizzle outside the chief entrance to Chelmsford gaol.

A woman of slow comprehensions, her heart was both heavy and light : it was heavy because she mourned the child she had lost : it was light because she was to meet her man who had served a term of imprisonment for following the letter of his belief in failing to call in a doctor for the son who had been sick unto death.

And over and above these emotions, Miriam was not unalive to a sense of importance among her brother and sister “Peculiars” in being the wife of the man who had suffered for the faith that was his.

“How you be !” said one or two acquaintances ; and on her replying to these salutations with the inevitable formula of “Nicely, thank you” heads sympathetically turned in her direction, and the Chapel Elder honoured her by offering the shelter of his shabby umbrella.

Miriam and the others waited the heedless rain, but her Daniel did not come ; and those who had lost good money by neglecting their work, impatiently stamped their feet, and strained their ears for the next announcement of the impersonal Town Clock.

“Should be out by now,” muttered the Elder who was wondering if his wife had forgotten to milk the goats in the hoppet.

“Sam Willingate were out at eight to the tick,” repeated Miriam, who devoutly hoped she had not plodded for miles of miry Essex lanes for nothing.

## THE ADELPHI

"We'd best bide a bit. Cruel and hard as the law oppresses we, it do do things 'parliament way,'" declared the Elder, and added as an afterthought—"And He never forgets His true believers."

Miriam, who had not been born in the faith; and was the daughter of a mother with a "head-piece," who spent more than she could afford on patent medicine was not so sure; but did not venture to say so, for fear of giving offence to Daniel's fellow worshippers: she had known from the very beginnings of her baby's illness that the doctor should have been sent for; but had foolishly put her trust in her husband's and the Elder's assurance that anointing with oil, and prayers, and whole-hearted faith in the "Lard" were all that were necessary for her little one's recovery.

His death and the remarks of the Coroner to the effect that the life could have been saved by adequate treatment had hardened her heart against her husband but his arrest and trial, and more than either of these the six months' separation, brought about by the serving of his sentence, had inclined her to him once more: and now that she waited and waited, and he did not come her resentment was well nigh forgotten; and she ached for the sight of his face.

Doubtless the Elder was alive to a failing of spirit, not only on her part, but also on that of the others; for after the Town Clock had struck the quarter, and one or two had remarked it "weren't much use waiting any longer," he said:

"I'll ask help of the 'Lard,' and see what He in His infinite mercy will do for we."

Thereupon he raised his puffy face and unctuous voice in fervid prayer, and as though his appeal had not fallen on deaf ears, he had scarcely finished, before the ponderous doors were opened, and Daniel Lazell came forth.

And because the "Peculiars" believed his coming

## “ A MATTER OF FAITH ”

was the result of intercession, they lifted their voices in a hymn of thanksgiving for the latest mercy vouchsafed them.

Miriam sang in a quavering voice with an eye on her husband's spare figure ; and she noticed that instead of joining in, Daniel glanced from one to another in that rain-sodden assembly in the hope of discovering his wife.

Apart from his love of his Maker, she was always first in his heart.

Miriam stayed where she was, and did not advance to greet him ; for much to her surprise, she knew a sudden coldness for her husband ; and if she had been blessed (or cursed) with a habit of self-analysis, she would have known this aloofness was solely owing to a natural reaction from the suspense that had weighed her down.

She nodded and scarcely smiled when he caught sight of her, and at the conclusion of the hymn, she stood solitary, whilst the others, headed by the Elder, gathered about him, and pressed his hand in token of their admiration for his having suffered for the faith.

And upon his presently joining her, they walked together for a space in the direction of the town before either of them opened their lips.

She knew well enough he was longing to hear her voice, but she could not forget the emptiness in her heart for which he and his brother “ Peculiars ” had been responsible.

Daniel was the first to break the significant silence.

“ Baint yu glad to see I, Miriam ? ”

“ May be.”

“ I be mortal glad to see yu.”

“ Yu be ! ”

“ I be.”

A further silence followed, during which Miriam was aware that sooner or later, and probably sooner, she



## THE ADELPHI

would be compelled to have it out with her man : the grievous loss she had sustained rankled, and at times it was as though the pent-up emotion within her must incontinently break its confines.

Perhaps he was alive to the resentment that welled within her, for he not infrequently fearfully glanced at her face ; and made as though to speak ; and changed his mind.

And it shortly came about that Miriam stopped from sheer weariness of the flesh, and leaned against a doorway for support : she had had no breakfast, and had walked and waited in the rain on nothing more substantial than a cup of stewed tea.

Wherefore her husband took pity on her extremity, and headed her into a coffee shop of the humbler sort across the road, where he ordered a substantial meal of tea and eggs and bacon for her and himself.

Fortified with this, she was more herself ; yet because of Daniel's furtive attentions, and the dumb pleading look in his eyes, she almost found it in her heart to hate him for having been at the back of the tragic turn of events.

" Yu kep' going while I was away ! " he presently hazarded.

" Yes, I kep' ' going, ' " she returned sullenly.

" Yu worked at great housen ? "

" I worked there, and your master didn't forget I. "

She referred to Daniel's employer, who knew him for a sober and reliable tree feller ; and apart from his pig-headed opinions, conscientious and hard working.

" Ah ! If the master would see the Light, " commented Daniel.

" The Light ! "

" The Light as is found in the Gospel, and told by those who hold to our hands. "

" You mean *your* Light, Dan ! "

" Baint it yours, Miriam ? " he asked ; and on her

## "A MATTER OF FAITH"

ailing to reply, he was blind to the clouds that darkened her brow, and fatuously repeated his question, and the storm that had gathered broke.

Miriam was ordinarily a woman of few words, but, perhaps for the first time in her life, a torrent of bitter reproaches flowed from her lips : the flood gates of her anger were unloosened ; and heedless of who might hearken, her astounded Dan heard things of his beliefs he had never heard before.

He and his like had as good as murdered their child : if he didn't think so, her mother did ; and for swallowing all the rubbish he heard in Chapel, he wasn't a man with any sort of " head-piece," but was no better than the village " shanny."

She stopped as suddenly as she had started, and after he had recovered his mental wind (it took a lot of doing) he said to the irresponsive Miriam—

" See here, Miriam ! You believe in the Book ! Baint it all there in black and white, for all as can read, how the Holy Apostles cured the sick ? "

He continued ardently, if haltingly, to expound his simple faith, which was the literal interpretation of healing as set down in the New Testament : and because she made no sign, and spoke no word, his heart quailed within him, for he feared that he had lost his Miriam's love for him : and being a simple homespun man, this loss was no light thing.

But astounded as he had been by her outbreak, he was yet more astounded by what happened next : for without any hint of what was coming, her head sunk on his shoulder, and she blurted between her sobs—

" I do love ee, Dan : I do love ee, dear. An' I've said bitter words I can't unsay, and I wish it were me that had died instead of he."

Dan did his best to comfort her with tender words, while he wondered at the incomprehensible waywardness of women ; and at the dawning knowledge that

## THE ADELPHI

now and henceforth he and Miriam would be all the more to each other.

And for this he was duly thankful ; and regarded it as a sign that God approved of his ways, and had thus signally rewarded him.

“ Baint yu well ? ” asked Miriam, who did her best to conceal her concern at her husband’s altered appearance.

“ I been better,” he returned evasively.

“ Why yu leave your work ? ”

“ The Master told I to go home, an’ not to come back till I were right, an’ wished me better.”

“ What be going to do ? ”

“ Go to bed and send for Elder.”

“ Him ! ” she cried with a note of contempt in her voice.

“ Why not ! ”

“ Yu got the ’fleunza : lot o’ good the Elder’ll do ’ee.”

“ I shall send for Elder,” declared Daniel with the obstinacy that as good as told Miriam that it would be sheer waste of words to endeavour to divert him from his purpose.

Daniel duly went to bed in the room in the roof, and was ministered to by his wife within the compass of her rule of thumb knowledge : and because he got worse instead of better, and asked that the Elder might be sent for, Miriam complied with his wish and took counsel with herself.

Miriam was not going to lose her man as she had lost her little one, if she could possibly prevent it ; and by the time the Elder had arrived, her mind was quite made up.

She regarded the buffoonery that went on in the bedroom with scornful eyes : buffoonery that consisted of the Elder anointing Daniel with oil ; laying hands upon



## “ A MATTER OF FAITH ”

he patient ; praying by the bedside ; clumsily capering about the room, the while he clapped his hands ; and then saying to the sick man—“ Be yu better ? Be yu better ? ”

And after the Elder had consumed the best part of the homemade cake, and swallowed three glasses of elder-berry wine, and taken his leave, Miriam put on her hat and cloak and went up the creaking stairs to the room on the roof.

“ Yu going out,” said Daniel as he turned his fever-brightened eyes on his wife.

“ Jest down the street. Yu’ll be all right while I’m gone.”

“ Yu won’t leave I long ? ”

“ Not longer than I can help, Dan. Yu may be certain sure o’ that.”

Daniel laid his hand on her arm, and Miriam bent to kiss her husband’s brow.

“ Give I a promise,” said the sick man.

“ What is it, Dan ? ”

“ Don’t give I any doctor’s stuff. If yu do, I’ll surely die. Faith and the Elder’s works will make me whole, and narthen else’ll do ut.”

Miriam nodded, and in order to avoid her Daniel’s appealing glance, she kissed him again, and this time on the lips, before she quitted the room.

And on leaving the cottage in the village of Willingale Doe, she was thankful the night was dark, and the moon was late, for it would never do if her errand were discovered by prying “ Peculiars,” and inevitably reported to her husband.

Miriam did not go by the shortest way to her destination, but fetched something of a compass : the doctor lived on the outskirts of the village, and she wanted to approach his house from a direction other than the lane leading from her cottage.

She did not look forward to seeing him, for the doctor

## THE ADELPHI

had been instrumental in having her husband convicted, and was a man who did not mince his words.

Miriam counted herself lucky in finding the waiting-room untenanted ; and on entering the surgery, and encountering Dr. Horn's penetrating eyes, her heart went into her shabby boots, and she wished she had not come, and had trudged to a neighbouring village doctor.

" You !—What do you want ? " said the doctor ; and on seeing the hesitation of her manner, he went on : " Sit down and tell me all about it."

Miriam did as she was bid, so far as her limited vocabulary and lethargic habit of thought would permit ; but the doctor was a man of quick comprehension, and was not ill-pleased at this abject surrender of the wife of a staunch " Peculiar."

" You admit you are all wrong ! " said the doctor after she had done.

" Mebbe : mebbe not be. But mother takes pink pills, and they always puts her right."

" Pink pills are another form of faith healing. But that's by the way. What I gather you're after is something you can give Lazell without his knowing it, and will really do him some good."

Upon Miriam nodding assent, he gave her two white powders, and told her to mix one at night in something hot, and to keep her husband in bed until he was better.

" We can't afford to lose Lazell," he said. " He's a good fellow for all his wrongheadedness ; and you can't afford to make another mistake."

The doctor would take nothing for his services, and let her out of the front door ; and, getting home, Miriam heated some milk, added one of the powders, and took it upstairs to her husband.

And if she had feared he might question her, her apprehensions were wasted : he scarcely knew she was there, and more than once rambled in his speech.

## "A MATTER OF FAITH"

But he greedily swallowed the mixture ; and when Miriam got into bed, he had fallen sound asleep.

The fever had left him in the morning, but he was yet very weak : and in the time she could spare to be with him, he put down his marked improvement to the ministrations of the Elder.

There was the same mummary in the evening when the Elder made his call ; and after he had finished the rest of the cake, and gone, Miriam gave her Daniel the second powder in a glass of hot milk.

Again the unsuspecting Daniel slept soundly ; was sore himself in the morning, and was already talking of returning to work.

And upon the Elder calling in the evening, and perceiving the change for the better, he capered clumsily about the room, clapped his hands, and repeatedly cried :

"Then praise the Lard ! Then praise the Lard."

He seemed not a little surprised that Miriam did not share his devotional enthusiasm.

"What did I tell yu !" said Daniel when the Elder had left to spread the good news to an evening gathering of his flock. "Didn't I say that faith would make I whole?"

"Indeed yu did, Dan. Don't worrit 'bout it now. All you have to do is to get well and strong again."

"If yu'd sent for the doctor, I should have been mortal bad, if not dead, Miriam."

And because she did not reply, he went on :

"Yu stick by the faith an' the faith'll stick by yu. What be matter, Miriam? Yu look mortal bad !"

"'Fraid I be, Dan."

"Yu baint going to be bad !"

"I'm sure I hope not.—I'm—I'm certain it be arthen."

She had scarcely spoken before she was convulsively



## THE ADELPHI

shivering and her head was stabbed as though with a sharp knife.

Miriam was taken so ill there was nothing for it but to send for her mother who lived in a village some ten miles away : she was a redoubtable old dame, and she duly arrived with her no-nonsense manner and three boxes of her beloved pink pills.

And she had not been ten minutes in the place before the Elder came and was brought up to the bedroom by Daniel.

Mrs. Amwright had old-fashioned notions and did not hesitate to let Daniel know what she thought of him for bringing a stranger to his wife's bedside ; and upon the Elder flopping on his knees and praying in a loud voice, she caught him by the collar and bundled him down the stairs.

"None of that nonsense for me," cried Mrs. Amwright. "My gal's my gal, and if pink pills don't put her right, I'm off to the doctor to see what he can do."

Single-hearted Daniel protested, and protested in vain : there was no gainsaying the old lady's forcefulness ; and as she pertinently said, she had reared eleven children, and not lost one ; and that she'd stake her opinion against all the "Peculiars" in Essex.

Miriam did not benefit from the many pink pills she was compelled to swallow, whereupon Mrs. Amwright trotted off for the doctor while Daniel was at work ; and after the former had come and looked over the patient, he said he would send some medicine it was imperative Miriam should have.

This arrived after Daniel's return from work : he was having his tea in the kitchen, and took in the stuff, and presently brought it upstairs to the room in the roof where Mrs. Amwright was attending to her daughter.

Miriam was feeling so "mortal bad" she had not got it in her to worry what Daniel might think of this

## “ A MATTER OF FAITH ”

challenge to his lifelong convictions : she was a work-loving woman and hated lying abed, and therefore the sight of the medicine that was to make her whole heartened her even more than her mother's comforting presence.

She gratefully swallowed the white powder mixed in hot milk, and went to sleep in the firm conviction she would be up and about in a day or two.

Miriam did not recover so soon as she had expected. She was weaker than she had thought ; and were it not for the tonic the doctor had sent, she was quite sure she would have been some time on her back.

And on getting better, and collecting her scattered wits, she rather feared her husband would take it ill that the Elder had been given short shrift ; that Dr. Horn had been consulted ; and that she had taken the stuff he had prescribed.

Greatly to her surprise, Dan was mum on all this, and what amazed her even more, he was kinder and more devoted than ever he had been.

His attentions went to her heart ; and because she loved him much in her dumb, elemental fashion, she was troubled by the fact of her deception over the medicine she had given him in the milk.

The pricklings of conscience kept her awake at night, and worried her by day, until a time came when she could no longer suffer in silence.

Something she had heard in Chapel about the confession of sin had been as a light in her path ; and on the Monday evening, she sat silent at the supper-table, while Daniel stolidly munched his bread and cheese.

“ Baint yu hungry ? ” he asked presently.

“ Not very, Dan, dear, ” she replied.

“ You're eating narthen. ”

“ Don't feel like it, Dan. ”

He put down his knife, and regarded her with so

## THE ADELPHI

much concern, that she was perforce compelled to admit her double dealing.

“ Dan, dear ! ” she began.

“ What be ut, Miriam ! ”

“ I did wrong to yu.”

“ Yu did wrong to I ? ” he asked, and as though striving to take in the meaning of her words.

“ Yes, Dan. When yu was ill in bed.”

“ When I was ill in bed ! ”

“ Yes, Dan. I feared for yu, and went to the doctor, and got stuff, and twice I put it in the milk.”

And as he did not reply, she went on :

“ I was afeared, an’ didn’t want to lose ’ee same as —same as—— ”

A flood of tears completed her sentence.

He comforted her with clumsy attentions, and when she was more herself, he said :

“ See here, Miriam : I be no better than yu.”

“ What say, Dan ! ”

“ I be no better than yu. When doctor’s stuff came, I obeyed the voice of the Lard, an’ put flour in place o’ the powder, an’ some stuff I coloured for the medicine I poured away.”

“ Yu did, Dan ! ” she exclaimed in no small surprise.

“ I did, Miriam. But I spent whole nights in prayer. ’Twas that that made ’ee whole.”

Miriam, as has been said, was a woman of slow comprehensions, and was a long time taking things in.

Therefore it came about that many a day dawned before it was borne in upon her that whereas her husband, who held to healing by prayer, had been cured by medicine ; so she, who believed in doctor’s remedies, owed the fact of her recovery to nothing other than faith.



# CHAPLIN AND THE HICKS

By Henry King

MR. ROBERT NICHOLS has lately contributed to *The Times* a series of interesting articles on the men and conditions controlling the cinema industry in America. Mr. Nichols has been making a long sojourn in Hollywood, California, where because of climatic advantages the production of American films is centralized; and he himself has been engaged there, I believe, as a writer of film-scenarios. He therefore speaks with more authority than most writers on the cinema.

Nevertheless he has come, in the main, to what may be called a foregone conclusion. The great American film-producers strive to give the public what it wants, and that is the reason why the standard of American films (which, as we all know, form the great bulk of the films exhibited in England) is so deplorably low. But Mr. Nichols adds a spice of novelty to the general conclusion by his revelation that the public which the American producers aim to satisfy is an American public: it consists of the millions of American citizens who are picturesquely called Hicks, the mighty stream of standardized humanity that flows through Main Street, the stream against which such a one as Mr. Sherwood Anderson puts up a pathetic and heroic struggle. "Speed, hurried workmanship, cheap automobiles for cheap men, cheap chairs in cheap houses, city apartment houses with shining bathroom floors, the Ford, the Twentieth Century Ltd., the world war, Jazz, the movies." *The movies*: it is the art of the Hicks. The Hicks pay the piper, and the Hicks call the tune.

## THE ADELPHI

Whereat the English Press is greatly moved to scorn. It has somebody else to blame for the desperate condition of the cinema. Those Hicks! Those gum-chewing, Cluett-Peabody-collar-wearing, pie-eating Hicks!

As though we had no Hicks at home, in this free and enlightened country. Dear old Hicks! Why it is even possible that our own home-grown Hicks may be a little more Hickory than the originals, inasmuch as they stubbornly prefer the American film to the home-product. And if we do not call them Hicks, a rose by any other name may smell as sweet.

Not the Hicks, therefore, are responsible for the condition of the cinema, but something altogether less distinctively American—Democracy. Does anyone seriously imagine that if the great American producers were to aim at giving the English public what it wanted, the films would be better than those which satisfy and delight the dwellers in Main Street? Have the indigenous British films ever shown themselves to be better by a single caption than the imported Americans? They are on the same level as far as subject and treatment are concerned, and infinitely inferior technically.

The cinema is, through and through, a *democratic* art: the only one. It costs so much to produce a modern film—sometimes a million pounds is sunk in a single one—that the largest possible public is the only public which can concern the producer. He must aim at producing a household commodity. It is as though a publisher could *exist* only by publishing best-sellers. But in the case of books the conditions are quite different. It costs very little, relatively, to produce a book. A publisher may sleep happily if one in fifty of his books is a veritable best-seller; he may be prosperous and respected and comfortable even though he never hits upon a best-seller at all. Books that are bought by two, three, and four thousand people are very profit-

## CHAPLIN AND THE HICKS

able to him in comparison with his outlay. It actually pays him to cater for the discriminating public. Not so the cinema-producer. With him it must be best-sellers all the way.

What is the remedy? Mr. Nichols abandons himself to the old cry: "Educate the public." Since he puts it in the form: "Educate the Hicks!" the English Press echoes it, forgetting that to educate the public would be to compass its own destruction, or perhaps rather with the cynical knowledge that it has nothing to fear, because nothing will ever come of "educating the public." "Educating the public" is, indeed, pure humbug. No amount of public education will bring the public to like better films, or better books. And what, anyhow, is the good of its liking *better* films, or *better* books? There is no such distinction in the world of art: there are good films and bad ones, good books and bad ones. The public cannot be brought by easy stages from liking bad to liking good. That only leads to the worst condition of all: pretending to like that which is neither bad nor good, but simply rotten.

Let us away with the pious humbug of "educating the public" to like anything: and above all with the particular humbug of educating the public *outside* the cinema to like better things *in* the cinema. It can't be done; and if it could, the result would be merely nasty—the singularly putrescent hypocrisy that masquerades as "artistic culture." If the cinema public is to be educated it must be educated *by* the cinema.

So we are locked in a vicious circle. The great film-producers supply what the public wants; therefore the public can never learn to like anything better than they supply. Apparently cogent and conclusive; but only apparently. The vicious circle has been broken, year after year, with unfailing regularity by a single man—Charlie Chaplin. Chaplin is the only genius the cinema has produced: it is worth while examining what he



## THE ADELPHI

has done. Much depends upon that slight and girlish-looking man.

I need hardly refer readers of *THE ADELPHI* to the remarkable article he wrote in its pages in January, 1924. It should be, by now, the *locus classicus* of cinema criticism. It is more worth, for profundity and direct insight into the essential problem of the cinema as a democratic art, than all that all the professional critics of the cinema put together have written.

Quite frankly (he wrote) I do not believe that the public knows what it wants. . . . The public has no specification for films. The demands of the public are negative at best. Entertainment is what "they" really want. . . .

Just about this time, when I had decided that I knew what the public wanted and my success encouraged me to that belief, I received a jolt in the form of a letter from a man I have never seen and whose name I don't even know to-day, though his letter I can write here word for word. He had seen me in *The Fireman* in a large theatre in the Middle West, and wrote :

"I have noticed in your last picture a lack of spontaneity. Although the picture was unfailing as a laugh-getter, the laughter was not so round as at some of your earlier work. I am afraid you are becoming a slave to your public, whereas in most of your pictures the audiences were a slave to you. The public, Charlie, likes to be slaves."

This letter was a great lesson to me, and I took stock so to speak. My work could be no good unless I got the right spirit of joy, joy in itself. And since that letter I have tried to avoid what I think the public wants. *I prefer my own taste as a truer expression of what the public wants of me than anything that I can fathom out of the things that I observe, either in my own work or in that of others who are unmistakably successful.*

"My own taste" : there is the root of the matter. Chaplin is an artist, working out his own salvation, and lo ! the democratic public responds.

But we must look a little further. After all, Chaplin's own taste is Chaplin's. What is at the bottom of it? What, over and above his prodigious technical

## CHAPLIN AND THE HICKS

accomplishment as a mime, distinguishes Chaplin's work absolutely from that of the rest of the cinema stars?

Simply this. Chaplin believes in the great democratic public ; his faith in democracy is wary and sad-smiling, but ineradicable. He believes in it, because he believes in himself. He is, and he never forgets that he is, a child of democracy ; he comes from the multitude, and he knows the multitude. Of what he is capable, as artist, they are capable as audience. So long as he is true to the truth that is in him, so long will they respond to him, for the same truth is in them also. He makes the great act of faith, and he is abundantly justified. That is why he alone of all his fellows can actually hold an audience of Hicks, in Illinois or Hoxton, spell-bound and poised for an hour between laughter and tears, by a technique the like of which for sheer subtlety is unknown in all the world of the cinema.

Chaplin is, first and foremost, a democratic artist. (So, let us not forget, was Shakespeare : an artist who sought for the biggest audience he could get, and *accepted* it.) The rest of the American films come from the Hick-exploiters : they are, essentially, mere dope. The German film, at its best, is an intellectual exercise, or at a lower level an exploration of the art of photography, strictly of the same kind as Reinhardt's *kolossal* theatrical experiments, that never fail to empty the baby with the bath-water.

Chaplin is utterly different : an *artist* of the cinema. There is no other. We have come slowly to recognize that. But it is still more important to recognize that he is an artist of *the cinema*. There is no other. He creates out of a *true* relation with the true audience of the cinema—the democratic audience. He cannot help himself ; but he has consciously and gladly accepted his destiny. He knows something which the Hicks know, which is the best they know, better than which

## THE ADELPHI

the best do not know. "La pitié, voyez-vous, M. le Professor, c'est le fond même du génie." And pity, of a brother for a brother, is the very essence of Chaplin's creations. It is not the Hick, but the organized contempt for him, that is the curse which rests on the modern cinema. Chaplin alone has had the power, and shown the way, to lift it.

AN EDITORIAL EXPLANATION.—The Editor owes his readers an explanation of the condition in which the second part of "As It Was" was placed before them in the last ADELPHI. It appeared with a number of omissions which, in fairness to the author, had to be indicated; the indications of these omissions gave to the narrative a flavour of suggestiveness which was completely absent from the original.

For this neither the author, nor the Editor, was in any way responsible. Objection was taken by the printers and publishers to certain passages, not on the ground that they considered them objectionable, but that objection would be taken and they, as printers and publishers, would run the risk of prosecution. Accordingly they refused to print and publish the narrative unless certain deletions were made.

In the circumstances, the Editor had no choice but to comply. He considers that a true and beautiful piece of writing was, by these enforced deletions, not merely mutilated, but rendered suggestive. And he offers his apologies both to the author and the readers. But in making these circumstances public he wishes it to be understood that the printers and publishers are in no way to blame. The state of the law is such that they alone would have had to bear the consequences of any legal action. They acted in perfect fairness in refusing to take the risk.



# AS IT WAS

*By* H. T.

## III.

During August I went away with the Scotts to Sandgate, and I got to know the country about there very well, taking the child long walks on to the chalk hills behind, and along the coast to Dymchurch, and other villages in the Marsh. I forget when it was that David went in for a scholarship at Balliol and did not get it, and went in for one at Lincoln and did. I think it was while I was at Sandgate. However, I know that he was very soon to go to Oxford, when at end of six weeks at Sandgate without any holiday, I was given a few quite unexpected days leave. It was too good a chance to be missed, and all in a hurry we decided to go away somewhere together for a tiny honeymoon. For me it was simple, but David had to invent some tale of having to go to Oxford or something. He was very eager to show me his beloved Wiltshire Downs, and so we decided to go to a little place he knew very well among the Downs just outside Swindon, and put up in the cottage of his old gamekeeper friend. All this we arranged in the greatest secrecy and joy. We took the train to Swindon, and from there walked with our few belongings in rucksacks, the seven miles to the Downs. I shall never forget the wild excitement we felt at being all alone and free ; no one knowing where we were, our time all our own. There was a little risk too that added to our enjoyment, for David's grandmother and aunt lived at Swindon, and he had often stayed with them, and was well known by quite a

## THE ADELPHI

number of people. But we risked that, walking quickly through the town until we came to the solitary country road leading through a cleft in the Downs.

I do not remember the hamlet to which our cottage belonged, but of the cottage itself and its immediate surroundings, I remember every detail. It stood like a fairy tale cottage right in a wood, and quite off the road, a track from the lane taking you to it. It had a deep thatched roof almost hiding the little windows of the bedrooms with its deep eaves ; a porch with a little bench let in each side, and covered with traveller's joy and briar roses that filled the air with their musky scent. It belonged to the wood, and the wood to it, as if it had been in reality the brown fur-covered creature that it looked, whose eyes peered out from under its overhanging brows shyly and kindly. All along under the thick untrimmed hedge of the garden was a row of bee hives, one or two of the painted wooden new kind, but half a dozen or more of the old-fashioned skeps with earthenware pans inverted over them. The garden was full of bees and of flowers for them, red and blue and yellow. I had never seen anything so lovely, so exactly what I would have chosen for my honeymoon. The old man was full of fun, and he and his old wife, who welcomed us as though we were her children, could not make enough jokes at our expense. They had an enormous tea ready for us, of bacon and eggs and honey and lardy cakes and strong tea with cream in it, in the living room of the cottage. This room had a flagged floor, with a big open range in it in which burned even at this time of the year a huge wood fire ; the walls were covered with pictures and guns and traps. Bunches of herbs in paper bags hung from the raftered ceiling, for the old man was very proud of his herb medicines and ointments for men and beasts, and on a little table in the window, covered with a fox's skin, stood a huge Bible, and on the Bible a

## AS IT WAS

book in which he had written down all his prescriptions and remedies. He and David talked eagerly over old times of birds' nesting, and fishing in the huge reservoir near by. And there were jokes and nods and winks every now and then which we all laughed at. I was so glad they liked me, for they had known David since he was a little boy, and loved him, and I had felt afraid that I might not be the sort of girl they would like. But we got on splendidly. David sang some of the old songs in his clear deep voice, and then the old man sang some that he knew, "The Farmer's Boy" and "Turmut Hoeing" and "The Seeds of Love," and we all joined in at the chorus. Just before bed-time the old woman brought out a bottle of mead, made from their own honey, I do not know how many years ago. It was like cloudy amber to look at, and had the softest, most subtle taste you can imagine. We drank it like a liqueur. It was very strong, and they were delighted that we liked it, and took it as a compliment that we dared not drink much of it; though they tried to make us, telling us it was a right proper drink for lovers. They told me I must call them Dad and Granny as David had always done, and they called me Mrs. Davy.

Our bedroom was just as right as all the rest of the cottage was—a small room almost filled by the four-poster, with such a thick mattress and feather bed on it, covered with a patchwork quilt, that I had to climb on a chair before I could get into bed. The hangings of the bed were chintz in a pattern of the rose, the sham-rock, and the thistle, all in bright colours. There was a little dressing-table with a white dimity flounce all round it, and a little corner washstand. The tiny window was draped with dimity curtains, and the window was kept open by a large dried sunflower head. The scent of the briar rose over the porch mingled with the smell of lavender of which there were two vases full on the dressing-table. For me it was enchanting; I



## THE ADELPHI

had never been in such a cottage before. David was as happy as I, and overjoyed at my delight in it all. It was so lovely, too, to be together like this. So little of our courtship and love-making had been indoors, and it was a delicious experience to be together in this sweet little room, all to ourselves, chatting and laughing together, unpacking our rucksacks, and finding places for our things all so intimate and homely. We washed in rain-water, and even the rough towel smelt sweet. Outside the owls hooted about the cottage, and bats twittered, and starlings stirred in the thatch. No other sound was to be heard, no trams, no people, no traffic, nothing but the sounds that do not spoil silence, but rather deepen it, and a little breeze wandering through the wood, and a leaf flapping against our window.

As we stood together by the window sniffing the sweet air, and looking into the dark wood, David took the pins out of my hair, and when I was going to plait it into two plaits he said: "No, let it be loose." I got into bed first and sank down into the thick feather bed. All night we were to be together, and all day, and all day and all night again. I sighed a deep sigh of content and happiness. "Happy?" David asked, as he blew out the candle and got in beside me and took me in his arms.

David was awake early and, half-dressed, and went down to the reservoir to bathe. As soon as he was gone, Granny came up with a huge cup of tea, and a tiny doll's loaf just out of the oven on a plate for me. While I sat up and ate and drank she stood talking to me about David, and her sons—three of them, all doing well—and of her young days. Of how Dad was a bit wild when he was young, and how she had had to work hard to keep things going, though many's the time she and the children had sat down to a dish of boiled turnips and bread for their dinner, and not much bread either, for flour was dear. But though he had been a bit wild he

## AS IT WAS

had never been unkind to her and the boys, and as he got older he settled down, and they had been very happy ever since. She told me they loved David as much as their own boys, and showed me letters that they had had from him when he was a little boy, and a handkerchief, bought and chosen by himself, which David had sent her one Christmas many years ago. We were gossiping away when we heard David's step, and he called to me from the garden to come out. So Granny left me to get dressed saying, with a wink, "Drat the men, they never leave a poor woman in peace!" and we laughed at the joke. But I knew that all my life my only peace would be to be needed by him. And so it was.

For there were to come dark days when his brooding melancholy shut me out in a lonely exile, and my heart waited too eagerly to be let into the light again. When these days came, with no apparent reason for their coming, bringing to him a deep spiritual unrest and discontent, he would be silent for hours, and perhaps stride out of the house, angry and bitter and cruel, and walk and walk far into the night, and come home worn out with deadly fatigue. When these days came my heart trembled for what might happen, and I, suffering his terrible spiritual loneliness, had no thought, or seeing, or hearing, for anything but his agony and my own despair. Then my strong body that he loved so came to my rescue, and in hard house work, scrubbing and washing and digging in the garden I would force myself to be, so that when the cloud left him he would find me to welcome him. I did these things mechanically—cooked the food, took the children out walks, spoke to them, picked flowers with them, but I did not know afterwards what I had done while my spirit waited in the dark.

But this was to come, and it was only now and then had I had hints of this darkness in his soul, this fierce

## THE ADELPHI

unrest which beyond all found peace in Nature, but not in me. Alone he had to be in his agony, but when he emerged from it, exhausted by God knows what bitter contest, he looked for me and needed me, and our love was always the firm ground on which we stood secure and that no storm ever swept away.

But now I washed and dressed and ran down, and as I ran through the kitchen where Granny was cooking the breakfast, she shooed me out. "Get along, you hussy," she said.

All that day we were out, fishing in the reservoir, and bathing in it and walking in the deep woods, not talking much as I remember. We brought home some perch for supper, which Granny pretended to be cross with David for bringing, "Such trashy fish, all scales and guts," she said. But she cooked them, and while we ate them David read how Izaak Walton would have cooked them, to tease Granny with the white wine and this and that ungettable spice. When Dad came in he brought a dead jay so that I could have the beautiful wing for a hat. I didn't like to think of the lovely bird being killed for such a purpose, but I kept that to myself, knowing it would be incomprehensible to him, and appreciating his kind thought for me. After tea Dad showed me the garden and the bee-hives, and all the bees swarming over the comb. They filled me with disgust. They are such ugly creatures in a mass like that, and their highly developed social life, so ordered, so cold, so lacking in impulse, repelled me then as it does now. Dad laughed when I tried to tell him how I felt about them. "Ah, but what about the mead and the honey?" he said, and, of course, I said, "Yes, I like that," but could regard the bees almost as one does machinery. But I loved the hermit, home-making bumble bees—humble bees of the earth, primitive and indolent and beautiful.

While Dad and I had been flirting over the bees and



## AS IT WAS

flowers, and his collection of dried skins of ferret and weasel and rabbit and squirrel, David was helping Granny to wash up, much to her amusement and delight, and she had tied her long white apron round him. At the end of our little round he said, "Now give your old Dad a kiss, but don't tell that boy of yours, for I be no fighter these days." So I kissed him and promised I wouldn't tell, and we had our little secret; but Dad, with such winks and significant looks, soon let the cat out of the bag, and all had to be confessed. Then David had to kiss Granny to make it quits, and we were very happy together with our jokes and fun. I had never met people like these before, and though the things they said sometimes startled me because they were so new to me, their coarse, simple talk full of proverbs, and shrewd observation and wit, did not shock me at all. I felt perfectly at home with them, and felt that they didn't feel they had to make a difference for me, but were with me as they had always been with David. He was glad too, I could see. I loved them just as I love the earth, and the rain, and the bumble bees.

After we had all had some mead, Dad and Granny got very jolly and gay, and Granny got up and began to dance and said, "I be as young as any, aren't I, Dad?" and Dad said, of course she was, and they got up and danced hand-in-hand up and down the kitchen, Granny holding up her apron and Dad looking at her with admiration. And as they danced some old dance they had remembered from their courting days, David whistled the tune, for he was too shy to dance, and so was I. I wonder when again that lovely old tune was whistled in that cottage, and when again that jig was danced under that roof, for those who danced are dead, and he who whistled the tune is dead, and I think that those who live in that cottage now have forgotten these old things, as soon all will have forgotten them. So

## THE ADELPHI

we lay another night in the great bed, and slept in each other's arms, slept the sound sleep that lovers sleep, so sound and yet so light that like a dream the consciousness of the other is always there—the only dream that enters the deep sleep of lovers.

After breakfast we had to leave, and Dad was all ready to go with us as far as the market-place in the town where he had business. Dear old Granny had all ready for me a little neatly arranged posy of all the sweet-smelling flowers and herbs from the garden—an outside fringe of “old man” and in the middle a tight pink rosebud surrounded by a circle of mint. She told me it was to smell in London and remind me of them and the garden. As if I should ever forget them, though I have never seen them again! They insisted on our taking a pot of honey, and half a dozen of big apples and two great lardy cakes, and Granny gave me a length of fine crochet lace that she had made long ago, with much joking and looking sideways at David, and he pretending he didn't know what on earth she meant by all her hints. Dad gave David a little old book of all sorts of receipts he had collected for food, for medicine for beast and man, for curing skins and all sorts of things. All these with difficulty we packed into our rucksacks, and off we set, with Dad insisting on carrying our traps, and Granny waving to us from the gate.

And soon in the train we left the long line of downs behind us, and were in London.

I have passed those downs since and have seen the places where we walked, and from the train have found, as David showed me how, the glint of the sun on the reservoir where we bathed. I have never seen them again, but I know it as I know no other place. I have my jay's wing still. I never put it in a hat, but the lace I used again and again on my babies' clothes, and it has never worn out.

## AS IT WAS

Then David went to Oxford, and I stayed on in my job. We wrote to each other every day, and his letters were full of his new life, and I could tell how he was enjoying the society of his fellows, and also the freedom from home rules which he experienced for the first time in his life. He had always been kept very short of money, and it was a quite new experience to have a small allowance to manage himself. Of course, he thought it would do much more than was possible. He loved beautiful things, and his own home was so devoid of beauty, and he at once went the way of, I suppose, most undergraduates. He spent in his first year much more than he could afford on editions de luxe, pictures, and china. I was always on the look-out for odds and ends for his rooms—brass, and pewter, and bright cushions, and books all the time as I could afford. He now read Pater, and Oscar Wilde, and John Addington Symonds. It was *The Yellow Book* period, and he was very interested in the movement, though never carried away by it. I was rather repelled by it, though being young and healthy, something in its breaking away from the old conventions appealed to me. I read *The Woman Who Did*, but having done likewise I was not impressed by it—it seemed to me a lot of fuss about nothing. I detested Aubrey Beardsley's drawings and loved Max Beerbohm's essays as they appeared in *The Yellow Book*. It was an interesting time to be growing up in, and David and I were both quick to respond to any new ideas in art and literature. But David was much more influenced by the old than the new, and I think *The Anatomy of Melancholy* and *Urn Burial*, *Tristram Shandy*, *Lear* and *Macbeth*, and Keats and the Bible, to name a few, were the foundations of his taste. These were the books we read at the same time, and in our letters we wrote about them and about ourselves and our love and our future life together.



## THE ADELPHI

At this time I became an intimate of a circle of people living in Kensington. The centre of the circle was a friend of Mrs. Scott's, but it was through an old friend of mine that I was introduced to it—her name was Mrs. Halliday. They were artistic Bohemian people, young mostly, though Mrs. Halliday was not. She had three lovely daughters, the eldest about sixteen or seventeen when I first knew them. This household and their ways were a revelation to me. I loved their large spacious rooms with very little furniture in them, the polished floors bare except for a rug or two, and the almost bare walls ; the absence of stuffy upholstery and curtains, and the simple beauty and comfort of everything delighted me. I had, of course, read William Morris and been very attracted by his ideas, but I had never before seen a house decorated and furnished with his designs and in the way he advocated. The beauty of it delighted me, and I thought it the perfect setting for these people, with their freedom of manner and thought. The house was always full of men and women living in delightful freedom of intercourse—all people interested in some form of art from Church embroidery to acting. There was a poet who has since achieved fame, an actor who is at the top of the tree, a painter who is now an acknowledged master, and several notable craftsmen whose work is now known to connoisseurs. Folk songs were just being collected, and it was here I first heard these beautiful old songs being sung. They were eager, enthusiastic people, and I admired them immensely. I look back upon this household as having been—after David—the strongest influence in my life. It opened new windows for me on the social and artistic world, a world I was strangely unfamiliar with, and because they liked me I felt at ease with them and found pleasure in talking to them, and looked forward to the discussions which took place in their beautiful drawing-room. There were no servants ;

## AS IT WAS

but everyone, men and women, helped in the house, and everything ran smoothly.

I introduced David to these people, but he didn't get on with them. He was too reserved, and sat among them like some judging Sphinx. But I, being so much simpler, and so frankly admiring, was accepted at once. I was often there when David was at Oxford, a humble disciple of what seemed to me a higher ideal of freedom than I had ever imagined possible. David used to make fun of their serious cults of purity and freedom and nakedness, but I thought it very fine, and admired and loved them. They regarded no convention, and I did not see till later that their unconvention was almost as intolerant as my parents' convention. But they were kind and gracious people, and proved good friends to me when I needed friends, which I was soon to do.

I cannot quite remember how events hurried on, but I think the estrangement between Mrs. Scott and Beatrice did not happen till David had been at Oxford some time, and I cannot remember individual vacations. Mrs. Scott disliked my going to see Beatrice, and because I would go she became suspicious, and after a while I found that she had been reading David's letters to me. She never confessed that she had done this, and I could never prove it, but I gathered that she had discovered what our relationship was. So I asked the advice of Beatrice, who of course knew that David and I were lovers, and she advised me to leave, and offered me a post in her own household, which I gladly accepted. My duties were to do anything that wanted doing, and included cooking and housekeeping, as well as sewing and helping the children with their lessons. David did not wholly like this, but it had certain very great advantages. I was with friends, and as long as certain things were done I was free to come and go as I liked. David in his vacations spent

## THE ADELPHI

a good deal of time here, and gradually got on better with the circle, who welcomed him and found him an interesting and stimulating participator in their discussions about art and life. But though he got to know and like them better, and they him, something always kept them from becoming intimate. Here I had a very nice room of my own, half bedroom, half sitting-room, where David often spent the night with me. From here, too, we had many lovely days in the country, though we never had another chance to go to our honeymoon cottage, for the old couple had had to leave it, and had moved into the town, near the railway works which employed their son.

So here I lived a jolly Bohemian life, working hard, and liking and being liked by the people I mixed with. I would have done anything for Beatrice, and did, in fact, work very hard at anything that came along to be done. The eldest girl was on the stage—a very beautiful and very selfish girl, and I was the one person she had some consideration for. She knew how I admired her beauty, especially her lovely hair, which I used to brush for her, and my natural good temper somehow softened her hard, spoilt heart. Her beauty was to bring her nothing but unhappiness, and I saw it coming, and so used to mother her, and she who was so imperious to her own mother used to be yielding to me.

All this time David was working fairly hard at Oxford, and rowing for his College, and experimenting in all sorts of experiences. He tried alcohol and opium, and used to write to me and tell me everything that he went through in these various phases. He was influenced by the æsthetic school, and his dress and taste in colour and design were all very much affected by that. He had made a large number of friends, many of whom he kept all his life. He had a wonderful capacity for friendship, and inspired love and admira-



## AS IT WAS

tion wherever he went. He exacted a great deal, and gave a great deal.

He was enjoying it all enormously, and this life helped to overcome his natural shyness and reserve. He never wore his heart on his sleeve, as I did, and people had to meet him more than half-way, but this they always found worth doing. He was earning about £80 a year by writing. He became a more or less regular contributor to *The Speaker*, *The Academy*, and *The Literary World*, so that his life was very full. His style was at this time very much influenced by Pater, and he wrote, besides nature studies, romantic and imaginative essays in an ornate precious style which he afterwards dropped entirely. His writing was always full of a deep melancholy; even in his Oxford days this melancholy and spiritual disquietude were becoming more and more characteristic of his temperament.

He had been at Oxford two years, when, shortly after the end of the spring vacation, I found I was pregnant.

THE BUSINESS MAN OF SYRIA.—I have found the following advertisement in the *American Bookman*:

### THE BUSINESS MAN OF SYRIA.

By Charles Francis Stocking, E.M., and  
William Wesley Totheroh, A.M., LL.D.

A "Life of Christ" from a business point of view  
that is now helping thousands in the business world.

I suppose the basic text is: "Make friends to yourselves of the Mammon of unrighteousness." But I should like to see the book.—O. B. E.

# ARISTOGENIC EVOLUTION

*By* Henry Chester Tracy

ALL sympathy can be enlisted in the search for better forms of living. It is the intimate concern of society and of every individual that composes it. Not so universal is the search for better forms of life—of better individuals, that is to say, to do the living that is to be done. We are, for the most part, rank fatalists in regard to the human best: it comes, or it does not come, out of that cosmic process that gives us birth; and we do not feel ourselves concerned to tamper with or direct it. Better animals and plants we know can be bred, but the human person is unique. His traits and propensities we leave to God and necessity, deeming it enough to care for ourselves when alive. In this respect the common man and the philosopher—not excluding the humanist—have often taken much the same ground. A purely philosophical expression of belief in the development of the best was given by J. S. Mackenzie in the Dunkin Lectures\* when he said of the humanistic conception of ultimate reality that “it amounts to trying to think of the universe as an efficient unity in which the most excellent forms of life are developed through a continuous process.” There is a good deal of voluntarism about this, and it is also too broad to satisfy the demands of the scientific humanist who knows something of the processes—in detail—by which new forms are produced, and something of the distri-

---

\* Humanism, 1907.

## ARISTOGENIC EVOLUTION

bution of types that results from these processes. He seriously questions whether more and more excellent forms will be developed by a *laissez-faire* system and no clear notion of the qualities that tend to better the breed—no social conception of the best.

There is a certain utility in the term proposed by Sutherland for the process of breeding from the best. He observed that when "best" is defined as the individual possessing the completest nerve development, it is found that the natural process does not always favour it. *Aristogeny*, he called the process, when it occurs. In a preponderant number of cases (confining his observation to the lower vertebrate and invertebrate forms) he found that the advantage lay with changes that represent no real progress in the organism but are superficial adaptive devices; and the process of breeding from these he called *dology*. Both are useful terms in this discussion, although neither has taken any great hold on the literature of selection; partly because there are so many gradations and types of selective values that cannot be included under either term: as, for instance, the variations noted by John Gulick in the species of *Helix*—no advantage either way, and no trick or device for protection, but merely the result of segregation, giving the tendency to vary full play. In the face of a multiplicity of forms, with so many and such varied kinds of survival values, the technical biologist is not likely to admit that there is any "best" but an arbitrary one, imposed by one class or another according as its interests are conserved. Of that position we have to take account.

There was, we easily see, a direct and Darwinian advantage favouring individuals of higher nervous organization—a natural aristogeny—when man was becoming expert and inventive in the use of tools. Now that the mass of mankind live as beneficiaries of such superior organization and intelligence, while slow wit



## THE ADELPHI

and the power to endure endless monotonous labour are at a premium for manning the machinery, it is not so clear that aristogeny holds good. Further, a preponderance of unintelligent consumers serves the purposes of the speculative élite ; and the democratic ideal holds the flag of approval over all. What can be better than the common man? To what end should he be improved?

One is tempted to think that dologeny rules ; that even in human matings the trickiest has the best chance. Certainly the modern usage in the matter of cosmetics is dologenic in the extreme. It was another generation, not the present one, that held an unhealthy complexion to be a disgrace. But perhaps the preference for the unreal and the function of "concealing coloration" has passed to a psychic stage, where the value is no longer a passive but an active one. We like to be deceived. So much for lip-stick and rouge ; they prevent the wearer—at least in the United States—from being distinguishable in a feminine crowd. It is interesting to reflect that the quality of fraud or artifice has been used by the lesser organisms from the earliest times ; and by such means those that are by no means either strongest or best have managed to live. There seems no reason to suppose that this resource has failed, or is failing, in the case of women and men. How shall we say that there is for human beings, any more than for animals or plants, any process that tends toward a *numerical* preponderance of the best? Certainly the best are produced—but in the smallest numbers. The advantage of fecundity lay always with the lower types, the organisms that had the least to pass on to the individual by way of inheritance or social protection and care. It is one of the greatest (and least noticed) of the Darwinian laws. Its application is this : if you wish to reduce the numerical preponderance of a given race, educate the individuals and raise the social level of their lives. Automatically their progeny will decrease. The

## ARISTOGENIC EVOLUTION

garden-tilling coolie that is felt to be such a menace to the American West, loses his fecundity when "the laws of social capillarity" elevate him to a position of wealth. Conversely, persecute the inferior populations and they become veritable human weeds. As plants that survive in spite of every handicap have their waxes, resins, spines, scales, their glandular hairs, their poisons and, above all, their endless fecundity, so the offensive human types breed with a Malthusian fecundity in the situations that industrialism creates and would spread—thanks to a barbarian system of politics—over the entire Eastern world. It is easy to predict the result; but neither Malthus nor the economies based on his hypothesis offer any remedy for that disturbing end. There is a remedy, and it has been hinted above. We cannot throw the responsibility either upon Deity or upon Natural Selection. There is, however, something in the latter which we can use, just as there is something in our conception of the former that moves us to use it. Nature has a place for the best.

This principle is recognized by Mr. Julian Huxley in his chapter on biological progress, when he remarks that "*a certain fraction*" of the guiding force of Natural Selection will be felt in the direction of the progressive change, the fundamentally finer organization or more perfect functioning—in short, the selection of the best. In the same essay he calls attention to the fact that the "*upper level* of attainment" will be raised even though some of the changes that are selected for survival occur at right angles to or against the stream of progress. This is true. Applied to human evolution it means that "*a certain fraction*" of the force, for example, of sexual selection will be effective in the production of the better bred. It must be borne in upon even the most pessimistic of philosophers that a percentage, perhaps not negligible, of those finely endowed persons who appear from time to

## THE ADELPHI

time on the earth will form harmonic Mendelian attachments and some fine recessive traits be conserved.

The drift of the discussion just quoted is in favour of the recognition of a distinctive biological progress that is to include man as a part of its movement. Ignoring the historic period as too short to furnish data for or against the notion of progress, it finds a life movement that does inevitably produce what may fairly be called better forms ; incidentally it contains a clear and admirable account of the part played by the *adjustor mechanism* in adaptive improvement—that mechanism having found its chance in embryonic nutrition in the placental mammal. On that chance our whole psychic evolution is certainly based. However, as Mr. Huxley himself points out, consciousness, having entered the field, *must* function if we are to reach any levels higher than the one that ushered it in. And if, as this writer has himself said in an earlier paper, “ the level of independence is the measure of individuality’s perfection in living things,” then in consciousness of present and past—consciousness of the life of others as well as one’s own—must be found the key to that social best which it was the object of this chapter to explore. Its attainment will be a non-Darwinian process : if you like, an arbitrary one : a difficult objective, in any case. How can we raise the “ level of independence ” and yet keep our social orientation intact ?

The rationalization of this search for a social best is, one supposes, a part of the task of humanism. It is an involved and arduous work, which only those persons will feel like undertaking who feel that “ a certain fraction ” of the directive force of Natural Selection ” is not adequate to social needs, and whose responsibilities have compelled them to feel the sag in standards of all kinds.

Granted, with the late Mr. T. E. Hulme, that perfectibility is a heresy for which the humanist has a



## ARISTOGENIC EVOLUTION

peculiar weakness : there must still be a direction of movement, which is neither backward nor down. It is a part of the charm as well as the perpetual tantalization of conscious life that we never reach the objectives toward which we aim. There is always the incentive to go on. This incentive, and the ground of it, is the distinctively human characteristic, the supra-moral nature that leads us to form ideals and break them, forming others instead. It is therefore the core of humanism, and to be distinguished from all those tendencies that crystallize about traditional moulds, in practice or in belief. Fixed ideals tend to produce conformists, and it will always be fashionable to pretend to conform. The popular "best" will therefore be letter-perfect, according to some social code ; and that code will have no universal intent. But we shall learn to recognize another consciousness that carries its own principle of growth ; has its own tropisms and is always alive. It fulfils the ancestral tradition, is not suppressed by it. It expresses the life-inheritance ; is not inhibited by it. This is not romantic individualism, it is the maturing in the form of personal consciousness, of generations of life. This is the kind of consciousness that was meant when it was said that " love is the fulfilling of the law." But we have yet to liberate the conception of love from that of a contracted ethical function to a spontaneous impulse, warm toward all that is vital and significant and productive of æsthetic delight. When we have done that we shall have laid the foundation for an individual as well as a social "best."

The life of "the dead," as we call them—our ancestors—has to be fulfilled. It is the law. But they are many and we are one. We have to modulate their lives. Determinism is a philosophic bogey, effective only with those who can believe in it. All others are free. The impulse which, in our forbears, was murder, we dissipate by a look or a word. Other impulses we

## THE ADELPHI

school and develop, because we deem them to be socially fit. True, we have nothing but our impulses and our tissues, as an architect has his materials and his tools ; but out of them, as he erects various possible buildings, we may build our choice of lives. Thus the field of natural selection has shifted to ourselves, and to the conscious plane. Behaviourism has nothing to say of self-determination, but has only to show us our tools. And this is an important function, because, by the misuse of a single tool or organ, a whole life plan may be marred.

The selection of the best, then, is not merely a concern of Eugenics, but also an affair of individual lives, and of society, so far as it is able to furnish inducements for a wise selection of impulses and lines of self-fulfilment. We seem to have got that far along the evolutionary road. Some, of course, must live in a stage of incompleteness, because they are not psychically matured. One feels this of certain populations in Southern Europe—that they are carrying a vast potential of human energy that may not, for many generations, be unlocked. Their best in life will be a very different one from that of the sensitive Westerner who is strongly psychic very soon after birth, and the more precocious of the Northern born. M. Stanislavsky, the distinguished director of the Moscow Art Theatre, wrote : “ My ancestors came from the glebe filled with a strength that was the accumulation of centuries, and lived through their lives in an incomplete way, unable to take advantage of their natural endowments.” This advantage he himself was able to take ; but it required stimuli, which he found in an urban environment, out of which he selected those that were to his taste. In his autobiography much is made of the world of childish impressions—strains of music, the opera, dramatic productions. It is an instance of the evident truth that no individual is realizable as a unit apart ; in and through

## ARISTOGENIC EVOLUTION

a social environment, by means of interactions, he develops and he *becomes* something more than "in the course of nature" he could ever have been. He efficiently realizes "one of the most excellent forms of 'life.'"

It is a common saying in competitive circles that "there is always room at the top." What I wish to point out here is that with every realization of the human best in an individual, room is made for the others just below. The real best never competes. The real best, however, may cease to breed its like. There was no reason why Jesus should have left a line of physical heredity. He became a social factor for elevating the status of man. Believers or disbelievers, we have to admit that his drawing influence has been felt by the crowd, and that until the principle of that magnetism is confused with *organization* the Christian "elect" do not compete with the secular groups for existence on the earth. Nor does any rational and social best. It is a confusion of thought to suppose that those persons who are to be social best of the future will have to survive by means of the elimination, by competitive means, of the less fit; or to suppose that the world would be better off if we were less humane, and more scientific, and found some means to exterminate the worst. The social best do not survive by means of a Darwinian fitness, nor are they necessarily the finest genetic types. The category of quality, so generally neglected, lies, as Mackenzie remarked (in the lectures quoted) at the basis of the humanistic point of view, and it is characteristic of the humane quality that it tolerates the imperfect and the incomplete types with whom it comes in contact, and refuses either to compete with them or to use them as tools.

There is no prevailing process of aristogeny. The true aristocracy do not form a competitive best, or survive by displacing inferior groups. Proletarianism



## THE ADELPHI

mistakes all aristocracies for evil ones, and so abolishes spiritual symbolism along with the insignia of caste. Its measure of satisfactions being purely quantitative, it is blind to the *quality* of humanity—which alone counts. That is why a philosophy of humanism, and one that is grounded on science, must penetrate every level of education if we are to promote the emergence of life's most excellent forms, raising the level for all life.

### *Women Too Proud*

THEY pass me by, women too proud to speak  
To such a thing as I ; beneath their brows  
Their eyes neglect me as a thing too weak  
For them to care what pangs and dreams they rouse.

They pass me with the steadfast scorn of ships  
Driven full-sail beneath the sun's wide eye,  
Turning with arrogant sway of throat and hips,  
Scorning my pangs and dreams as they pass by.

My mind, a hapless gull, flies in their wake,  
Beating behind them for a crumb back-thrown,  
Drawn by desires I cannot overtake,  
And tossed by winds never to be outflown.

They pass, and they alone know whence or where,  
Shrines of a hopeless hope which never dies,  
Leaving a fearful fragrance in the air  
And torturing memory of neglectful eyes.

GEOFFREY H. WELLS.

# THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

## *An Anonymous Letter to the Editor*

THE ABSOLUTE CHANGE.—I find the conception of the possibility of “an absolute change” in the human consciousness, hinted at in the article “Science and the Control of Life,” valuable to me.

I am a parson, who elects to remain in the Church. (I am sure that there is more in the belief in God the Father than you have yet touched, or perhaps better, grasped.) I have been for many years, like many others of my cloth, preoccupied with an attempt to discover the real Jesus. I owe a great deal to Albert Schweitzer, whose work may be known to you. But Schweitzer leaves me unsatisfied. His attempt to make an absolute separation between the “eschatological” expectation of Jesus and his ethical teaching; his argument that obedience to ethical commands as it were “qualified” the disciple for entry into the Kingdom of God when it miraculously appeared, has always seemed to me *wrong*. The more wrong because I could not define its wrongness. With age I have become more and more convinced of an absolute unity between Jesus’s preaching of the Kingdom and his teaching of individual morality.

This is where your conception of “an absolute change” in human consciousness seems to me extremely helpful. As I say, you merely hint at it. And I may be wrong in my interpretation of your brief sentence. But in reading it, it suddenly struck me that here was a solution of my difficulty. First, because such “an absolute change,” though difficult in the extreme to conceive, is surely possible. At some point in the evolutionary process, the human consciousness appeared. That surely was “an absolute change.”

## THE ADELPHI

At all events, I can attach no real meaning to a *gradual* change from the animal to the human consciousness : bring the animal as near to the human, and the human as near to the animal as you will, there is still an abyss between them. From which I conclude that an absolute change has been, and may be again.

Now, suppose that this second change not only may be, but has been already. Suppose not merely that Jesus, as you say, " was able to conceive an absolute change in human life," but that he had himself experienced it : that he was, in fact, *a new kind of man*. (That is what most of us feel, however obscurely : but suppose it literally and, as it were, scientifically true.) Now I think I see that it would follow, necessarily, that Jesus must believe that what had happened to him must be on the point of happening to all men. It would—would it not?—be impossible for him to believe that he was alone. Only bitter experience could teach him that he was, in fact, a freak or a sport. At the beginning of his ministry he would simply be full of " the *glad* news " that the Kingdom of God was at hand—the Kingdom of God being the universal attainment of this new consciousness, or new condition, which he knew and in which he lived.

Is that clear? If it is, may we not suppose, are we not compelled to suppose, that the supreme fact of the new consciousness was a consciousness of the Fatherhood of God? You cannot *understand* that, neither can I : but that is because " the absolute change " has not occurred in us. But suppose " the absolute change " itself *consists* in the knowledge of the Fatherhood of God? As I read the story of the synoptics, it was in something of the kind that Jesus's crucial experience did consist when he came up from being baptized by John. If that were so, what wonder that neither you nor I nor most men can understand the Fatherhood of God? We belong to the old order ; and the words



## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

“ Except ye be born again, ye can in no wise enter into the Kingdom of God ” do literally apply to us.

Then it would follow—would it not?—that there can be no valid appeal to human experience to deny the Fatherhood of God. We judge our experience by the old consciousness ; it might be utterly different if we could judge it by the new. Simply : if the Fatherhood of God were a real fact of our consciousness, would it not give a wholly different quality to our pains and catastrophes? We should *know* that there was a meaning in them. It is the apparent meaninglessness of our disasters that makes it impossible for us really to believe in the Fatherhood of God. *But if we really believed in it that apparent meaninglessness would no longer exist.*

Further, it follows—does it not?—that you cannot appeal even to *Eloi, Eloi* to invalidate God's Fatherhood. It is surely possible, nay, even probable, that Jesus himself did not wholly know the Father's purposes. All that you could fairly argue from that cry is that something which Jesus expected to happen did not happen : that some extreme of bodily agony was not spared him, or that some miraculous translation did not occur. Yes, surely *he felt* that his God had forsaken him. I would not mitigate or shirk that for one moment. But how could that invalidate his former knowledge? Not to have known the Father's purpose to the depth—how can that disprove his knowledge of the Father? It can disprove it only if you appeal to the old consciousness.

One step further and I have done. Does not the mere fact that you, after all your wanderings in the wilderness, stand staring at the Cross, with the conviction that everything depends upon your answer to the question, “ What think ye of Christ? ”—strike you as in some sort an indication that God's purpose was indeed supremely revealed *in* the Crucifixion. Here, you feel—your article on “ Christ and Christianity ”

## THE ADELPHI

proves it—is the key to the mystery. I remember clearly some words of yours written when you began the ADELPHI magazine, concerning “the secret harmony and high design that lie within all human discomfiture.” Is that, I wonder, anything else than an unconscious confession of the Fatherhood of God, which your consciousness denies? May you not be hovering between the old consciousness and the new? There is more to say than you have said : and perhaps you may yet be called upon to say it.

I do not wish to occupy your space further : only to remind you that I have been dragging out the implications of *your own words*. If my ideas and deductions are correct there is not much point in arguing whether Jesus was human or divine. He was, literally, *more than human* : of what “divine” may mean, I have no idea. But I find a profound truth in both his great titles : Son of Man and Son of God. And since I try to believe, and at moments do verily believe, in what he knew, I can and do say, “I believe in the God the Father Almighty” with an absolute conviction of my own honesty. Nay, I feel that then only am I truly honest when I do say it. Therefore, I remain in the Church, though I would the Church were otherwise.  
—A PARSON.

THE “THING” OF MR. HARDY’S POETRY.—In the world of Mr. Hardy’s poetry his conception of Deity is so dominant that it must be faced if there is to be an adequate and sympathetic understanding of his work. I know of no one other line equal to that from *The Dynasts*, which presents the Deity as a “purposive, unmotivated, dominant Thing,” for revealing the dark, lidless-eyed Omnipotence, everywhere oppressively evident. It is richly suggestive, recalling, as it does, a knowledge of the Wessex mind gained by a life-time’s experience of the men and women whose county the

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

poet has so assuredly and sympathetically claimed for the Republic of Literature. Of course Wessex has the religion of its Churches. But the fact remains that the Church religion has either absorbed into itself the Wessex conception of Providence, or else has superimposed its own upon a philosophy and theology native to Wessex. In Wessex, Providence looks with cold, un-winking eyes on men and women who are but puppets. What will be, will be, however men and women act. Not their mightiest effort can alter their destiny, nor can it affect "one grief-groan, or pleasure-gleam." They do but work out what was set them before they were born. Is a man slain by lightning, it is Providence who strikes him down. It is Providence who compasses a man's end at some level crossing. But the Wessex man does not regard his view of Providence as distinct from the Church's; and would probably accept no proof that it is.

Mr. Hardy's mind has led him into apparent opposition to orthodox and organized religion. I say apparent, advisedly, for his antagonism is no more than apparent. Fundamentally there is no opposition. The real antagonism is to accidentals. And the "dominant Thing" is the cause of that. That conception originates in a revolt against the popular conception of God which did not agree with the poet's experience of life, or with his interpretation of that experience. In Wessex, Providence is conceived as a dominant Person; and Mr. Hardy has stripped off its anthropomorphic garments and exposed the naked Thing which plays haphazard with Wessex loves, hopes, and lives. And the result of this very natural revolt against that tyranny is that he has circled back to the fundamental orthodoxy of Wessex. It is the poet who sees that the Deity—

heaves through space, and moulds the times,  
With mortals for its fingers. . . .

It is the Wessex mind that is the abode of the "pur-



## THE ADELPHI

positive, unmotivated, dominant Thing." And the distinction between the poet's heterodoxy and the orthodoxy of Wessex is the distinction between Person and Thing.

It is probable that few people are at home with a de-personalized God. To my feeling, the poet himself, though he rises superior to It in so many ways, is no exception, but is perplexed and oppressed by that dominant Thing. It is an obsession. That this is so, one certainly feels when one enters Mr. Hardy's world. And the reason why one so certainly knows it for an obsession is probably (I think certainly) found in the poet's frequent use of words for their logical meaning alone. The number of prose lines, though the artist so often disguises them by strict metrical pattern, is the probable explanation of a pronounced philosophical-theological element. At any rate there the element is and may not be ignored. To be exact, the poet's interpretation of life and his conception of Deity seem excessively materialistic only because they and the feelings aroused by them, are in many instances only partially transmuted, and in some others are not transmuted at all. Consequently the atmosphere of Mr. Hardy's poetic world is charged with the ominous influence of the Thing. Where we meet with compassion, we know it is the poet's. His Deity has none; for compassion is of person and not of Thing. And neither could it be looked for in a Deity, "a Clairvoyancy that knows not what it knows, yet works therewith."

How fundamental the Thing concept is to Mr. Hardy's poetic world is most conveniently illustrated by examining one poem. One of the most recent is "On the portrait of a woman about to be hanged." It is at once a protest against the Thing and an appeal to It. The poet asks why "It sent a worm to madden Its handiwork, when it might well not have assayed you." In this poem, as everywhere in his poetic world, Mr. Hardy refers the evils he sees to a First Cause.

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

As in the earlier thought of the Old Testament, of which much of the poet's thought is reminiscent, so here, there seems to be no place for secondary causes. Here too is the poet one with his Wessex. It is the Lord who hardens Pharaoh's heart. And the poem illustrates, what other poems show explicitly or implicitly, how Mr. Hardy "attempts to explain or excuse the presence of evil and the incongruity of penalising the irresponsible." The creature is but a puppet and therefore irresponsible. But is this true outside the poet's world? Is there no such thing as secondary cause? Some of the best minds of our time propose to us that there are secondary causes, that the individual is a responsible being; and if that be true, what of this poem? Granted choice (however limited) the structure falls and the motive fails. The emotion aroused by the contemplation of apparent injustice holds good; but except for Mr. Hardy's obsession with the Thing, its expression would have been different.

No one can read Mr. Hardy's poems, as they deserve to be read, and remain in ignorance of his handicap. It were easy to sing when one held—"God's in His heaven—All's right with the world." But weighed down as he is by consciousness of a "sense-bound" Thing "working evermore in his unweeding way," it is astonishing that he can sing at all. And the most astonishing fact (for me) about his poetry is that more than a Thing is apparently striving in him. His spirit is deeper than his philosophy or theology, and touches realities undreamed of by either.—J. A. HALL.

# THEATRE AND CINEMA

“ TESS OF THE D'URBERVILLES ” (*Barnes Theatre*).

A most pleasing reflection is that the enthusiasm of both the actors and the audience of this production is a tribute to Mr. Hardy's genius. It may be late perhaps, but it is none the less sincere.

To style this play an adaptation of the novel seems incorrect. It exists in an inevitable dissociation ; and a recognition of this fact is necessary for its proper apprehension. It is not intended to reproduce the richness of the Frome water-meadows, the haziness of the Blakemore Vale, or the searching quiet of the downs above Batcombe. Those are certain settings, wherein Mr. Hardy's characters may appear inextricably woven. And upon the removal of these things the question is left : are the lives, the emotions here presented so understood and moulded that they can stand alone, complete and essential ? If dissociation be understood, there is but one answer, and that in the affirmative. That there should be a background of the novel in the mind is natural ; indeed, there are lines which in some curious way speak suddenly of the Tess who has long since dwelt in the consciousness, but once the first realization is over the new Tess emerges. She may not be so graciously formed ; that is not possible in three hours, but she is a vision for which one is truly grateful.

It is almost a commonplace to say that Mr. Hardy's attitude to life has been formed by his native earth. But anyone who has passed a time in his county must know that there are no two ways of expressing its subtle airs, its warmth, the most majestic indifference of its personal life. It gives its own firm impress to the characters ; yet here, concealed, part removed, half-known, it leaves Tess more swiftly tragic than before. That third phase of her life, so full in Nature's seeming kindness, is almost non-existent. Yet given such characters, thrown



## THEATRE AND CINEMA

together fatefully, Mr. Hardy shows them vibrant, tuned the one to the other, until they are overwhelmed by the very life which courses so visibly in their veins. The final phase, that of a love passed beyond desire, is deeply and movingly portrayed. The whole stands, a true story, without need of a setting.—A. G.

“HAMLET” IN MODERN DRESS (Kingsway Theatre).—The production of *Hamlet* in modern costume is intended chiefly, Sir Barry Jackson explains in the official *News Letter* of his company, for the man in the street, that he may the more easily realize “Shakespeare’s nearness to himself.” Through the removal of the barriers of traditional mounting, the dim, bare rooms of Elsinore, the remote dress, the unnatural music of versified speech, it is intended to afford him “a real conflict of credible human beings”; and perhaps a new angle of appreciation to the scholar.

As an experiment, whose every step is capable of awakening an interest in the real Shakespeare, it is fully justified, but each aspect of the presentation appears to announce that Sir Barry Jackson has either misread his man in the street, both in his constitution and in his requirements of dramatic art, or has not yet found the means of reaching his mind. Yet, even so, if it only slightly pierces the core of faithful, romantic, apathetic acceptance of Shakespeare in the average man it will have performed a signal service.

It is upon contact with this core, which is harder and greater than the traditions of Shakespearean production, that the experiment wavers—the conservatism of the man in the street for Shakespeare’s method. He knows or does not know that Shakespeare wrote in blank verse for a reason, chose an historical setting for his tragedy with a reason, and was deeply aware of the significance of costume, as Oscar Wilde pointed out in *Intentions*; but he does know, in some curious fashion,

## THE ADELPHI

that these are methods by whose operation the play is lifted into the highest realms of human achievement. Generally he is well content at their use, and to lose his play as too dear for possessing; now he is given the plot, wearing thin to syncopated music, and the characters, of slurring, hurried speech, once woven to it in the poet's insight.

Thus he has either to accept this as Shakespeare's tragedy—truly it can be easily accepted so—or to satisfy his conscience by stepping over it to the fuller, beautiful conception in the music of blank verse. He is not usually troubled by his conscience, however, and it becomes doubtful if the experiment will precipitate an understanding in him with which he will feel bound to make further tests. It has this capacity, for the play stands strong as ever with its profound problem; but the reactions seem too delicate. Shakespeare is not allowed, by his "nearness," to lift the whole work into the complete beauty into which he projected it, any more than would Goethe if his *Faust*, even in its traffic with essentials, were robbed of its mediæval setting.—A. G.

"THE GOLD RUSH" (*Tivoli Theatre*).—Once again Mr. Chaplin has appeared before a world sodden with the "photo-play." He brings a contribution which is but one more definite, confirming indication of life in the cinema. Unlike the Germans, whose true ability in this art cannot be questioned, he brings the aspect of the little, intimate, tiresome life of the overwhelming commonplace. Nothing is presented but that which is credible to the poor imagination.

It is his old self, graduated from the slight infirmity of the curate's garb in "The Pilgrim," shown in the midst of brutality and senselessness in Alaska. It is a treasure which shines with some of the old tricks, and a surprising number of new ones. Yet told with a

## THEATRE AND CINEMA

technique which neither he, nor anyone else, has yet equalled.

That is perhaps the most surprising aspect of the film. However the humour is derived, logically or intuitively, it all conforms to a remarkable technical skill, each fragment being adjusted into delicate balance. And it seems that it is just as possible for each part to fall into pure fun, as into heart-searching sympathy. Such a definite bond is established from the very first, when he is seen pursuing a lonely but cheerful way into the snowfields, that it is impossible to disregard his dangers, although one is glad of them. One knows that he will triumph, but each conquest, so near complete failure, is achieved so unexpectedly, so shrewdly, so accidentally that in some way it seems the very behaviour and substance of life. Each action is intensely related. The sharing of his boot, as the only edible substance, with a fat, ravenous prospector, is no passing joke. Its complexities overtake him, and require profound attention on many occasions. Upon the loss of a braces button hangs the romance of his poor, solitary life ; and such worn, haphazard threads as supported it are symbolic of his later joys.—A. G.



# ON BEING A CLASSIC

*By* The Journeyman

I had often wondered what it would mean to be a classic. If Shakespeare were alive to-day—and who knows? (I said to myself) he may be somewhere about, smiling at the mess we have made of things since his time, cutting his lawn with a blunt mower of an evening, and waiting patiently for the day when he can write another play with a chance of getting it produced. At all events, after that sentence, he was alive enough for me to ask him what he makes out of it.

“Enough to rub along with, thank you,” said Shakespeare. “About a thousand a year.

“That’s very little, you think? You forget: my plays don’t run for very long in England. I suppose they aren’t such good plays as I thought them.”

“The world’s great playwright? Is that so? That’s very kind of them. I have heard that I do rather better abroad. I remember some of our fellows made a fair thing out of a tour in Holland and Germany. But I don’t get anything out of that. You forget there was no Continental copyright in my day.”

“Mr. S—— makes twenty thousand? What a lot of money! But you forget. I am a classic: he is not. You mustn’t judge my income by non-classical standards. I assure you I do very well. A thousand a year—it’s a great deal of money. And I don’t pay income-tax.”

“Why ever not? Not for want of trying, I assure you. But when the income-tax came in—that’s rather

## ON BEING A CLASSIC

before your time, I imagine—I wrote on the form : *William Shakespeare, gentleman, player and playwright*, and the inspector sent me another, and said I was liable for a fine of £20 for giving false information. I filled up the other : *William Shaxper, armiger, histrio et fabulator*. He sent me another, saying I was liable to a fine of £30 for using a foreign language. I filled up the third, *William Shakespere, author of 'Hamlet.'* (You have heard of it, I daresay. It always went well : I don't know why.) The inspector did not trouble me again. Things have changed since my time—

the insolence of office and the spurns  
That patient merit of the unworthy takes.

I could *write* : don't you think ? ”

“ Oh, you're one of the Shakespeariolaters, are you ? And that's why you think I should have more than £1,000 a year. Bless you, boy. It's kind of you to think that. And you are one of those who write kind things about me, I'm sure. People are very kind : but I sometimes wish they would read me before writing about me. But I suppose it shows a good heart.”

“ A million ! Good heavens, boy—forgive me, but you are a good deal younger than I, aren't you ?—what on earth should I do with a million ? I am independent, and a gentleman. I never asked for more.”

“ You think it strange I should have asked so much ? I suppose I had to prove to myself the world was not a dream—not altogether. But I say that, now, looking back. I did not think like that when I began. I had to pull myself out of the gutter, the veritable gutter. So you've heard the story of my holding horses for two-pence ? It's true. ‘Put money in thy purse.’ Money ! It's terribly important. It gives a man whereon to stand. Money enough to stand on—no more—but that I slaved for. They can't understand that ? I'm afraid they don't understand many things, even

## THE ADELPHI

now. They don't understand that there is a difference in kind between the man who has known poverty, and the man who has never known it. They're like Lazarus and Dives on the painted cloth : between me and thee is a great gulf fixed, so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot ; neither can they pass to us that would come from thence."

" They call me a snob? I think the people who call me that belong to Dives' company. When you are in the gutter, you fight your way out of it, or you die. A good many of our fellows died. Hardly a snob, I fancy. I don't like well-to-do writers. A writer must never lose sight of the gutter, never forget that how thin is the ground on which he treads."

" Yes, they come to see me sometimes. I like the young ones best—Keats and Chatterton are my favourites. I think they're happy in the garden here, above all in the evening."

" What do we talk about? Oh, nothing much. When you grow older, when you've learned a little more, you'll understand that at the last there's nothing much to say. We dream and hope and believe. There are a great many flowers in the garden here, you know, sweet-smelling evening flowers. Sometimes a nightingale sings. I'm glad of that, for Keats' sake. One evening he told me a poem, as though it had been a dream. Oh, you know it? I'm glad of that. Even I never wrote a poem like that one. Have you ever thought what it meant that a boy should have written that? Terrible, terrible ; but wonderful, wonderful. You have? Well, I am glad. So you do really think about us sometimes. Love us? Ah, that is the word. But don't waste it on me, boy. Love them. They suffered much for you. And yet—perhaps your love of me is not wholly wasted. No true love is. It keeps your own heart sweet, if nothing more."

" That's hard? There is nothing harder, boy : nor



## ON BEING A CLASSIC

anything more precious. A sweet heart alone can know that it is not all in vain."

"You would like to come and listen? You are truly young; you still think there is a secret somewhere that we might speak and you might hear? No, no! All that we could *say*, we have said, even the youngest of us. You would be disappointed, boy,—you are young—to hear us say: 'These are good apples,' or 'The sky is red to-night.'"

You are still looking for a sign. You remember: An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and no sign shall be given it. Oh, no; I did not mean it for you. But there's a tinge of the old Adam still, isn't there? It's the hardest thing of all to learn: that there are no signs, because everything is a sign.

Prospero? Was I Prospero? No, you shouldn't ask such questions; you should know that I cannot answer them. Not that I would not, but simply that I cannot. Shall I say 'Yes,' when I made Prospero? Can I say 'No,' when he was of my making?

You love Miranda? Well, so did I. You knew it, did you? Why not? I couldn't keep it out—"The fringed curtains of thine eyes advance, And say what thou seest yond." You know what those words have in them. And Perdita. I made things lovely for her to see:

O Proserpina,

For the flowers now that frightened thou let'st fall  
From Dis's waggon! Daffodils  
That came before the swallow dares and take  
The winds of March with beauty; violets dim  
But sweeter than the lids of Juno's eyes  
Or Cytherea's breath; pale primroses,  
That die unmarried, ere they can behold  
Bright Phœbus in his strength—a malady  
Most incident to maids. . . .

Yes, that is lovely. "Behold, I make all things new."

## THE ADELPHI

Perdita, the lost one ; Miranda, the one to be wondered at.

Why did I make a new woman, and not a new man? Boy, you press your questions home. Why? I wonder. It happened so. I loved women. And the new man must be *born*. The woman who should see loveliness, her I knew : but the man who shall do loveliness, he is yet to come.

"Take these," he said suddenly, filling my pockets with apples from a dish. "These are good apples." And he smiled.

I understood his meaning, and went my way.

## BOOKS TO READ

CARLYLE ON CROMWELL AND OTHERS (1837-48). By David Alec Wilson. Illustrated. (Kegan Paul.) 15s. net.

Mr. Wilson has reached the period when Carlyle, now a celebrity, is lecturing in London. The breezes of "Northern pulpit" eloquence are at their strongest. Mr. Wilson's weakness lies in his lack of the critical sense; his indiscriminate acceptance of all Carlyle's philosophizings; his failure to envisage or estimate his subject *intellectually*. He has a brisk, direct style and a dry humour of his own; and his arrangement in short chapters heightens the effect of a vivid yet thorough presentation. The most brilliant figures of the age throng these rapid scenes, and whether or not one shares Mr. Wilson's view of the hero, interest cannot flag. Very notable is the evident domestic happiness of Carlyle and his wife at this time. Yes, the latest and longest biography (over-eulogized though it has been) is worth while. But we cannot help wondering more and more what Froude would think about it all!

A GRAMMAR OF POLITICS. By Harold J. Laski. (Allen & Unwin.) 18s. net.

It is difficult, in an essay of such vague and unlimited scope as this, to avoid the impression of sometimes overleaping oneself. But Mr. Laski has given us a careful and exhaustive work, in which the very fundamentals of the social order, as well as the present question of reconstruction, are dealt with and no feeling of superficiality is left. He has an international training in politics and economics, yet neither obtrudes nor abuses it. He is a singularly unbiassed economist, and this negatives the effect of that political *arrière-pensée* which one has come by experience to look for in every writer on practical themes. He is an obvious Liberal, and does not exploit his science to propagandist ends. "We have to make a world by deliberate plan" is his assumption and, broadly, the impression he leaves with us. The alternative is disaster. Mr. Laski is optimistic; especially about the unity of nations and the potentialities of education. On his favourite theme of sovereignty he is particularly good; and though he is by inclination a theorist some of his practical suggestions seem to be excellent—and workable.

# NEW TAILOR MADE COATS *for* EARLY AUTUMN WEAR

Well cut and finished and made from materials that we can guarantee to give satisfaction in wear.

STREET COAT in good quality velour cloth, cut with double breasted effect and novelty pockets, lined throughout with silk to tone and finished with collar of selected American Opossum or other real furs to tone. In a good range of colours.

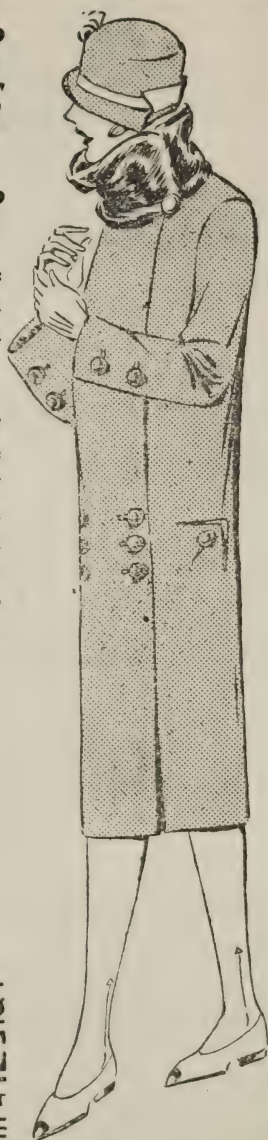
PRICE

**£5 18 6**

THEATRE TICKET BUREAU  
on the lower ground floor  
now open.

**MARSHALL &  
SNELGROVE**

VERE STREET AND OXFORD STREET  
LONDON W.1



CATALOGUE POST FREE



## CONTENTS

	PAGE
A SIMPLE CREED. By JOHN MIDDLETON	
MURRY           ...           ...           ...           ...           ...	385
 A LEADER OF FASHION: POEM. By	
THOMAS HARDY   ...           ...           ...           ...	395
 NIGHT AND DAY IN THE BIG WARD.	
By MARTIN GILKES ...           ...           ...           ...	396
 DEATH: POEM. By JOHN STILL ...           ...	404
 THE ARCHANGEL GABRIEL'S CHAF- ING DISH. By VSEVOLOD IVANOFF.	
Translated by S. M. KAZARINE   ...           ...	405
 BATTALION IN REST: POEM. By	
EDMUND BLUNDEN ...           ...           ...           ...	417

# CONTENTS—*continued*

PAGE

## THREE MEN.

The Fears of Bing. By Richard Dyer ... ..	419
The Minor Poet as Lecturer. By Geoffrey H. Wells	423
Clatworthy. By John Thornton ... ..	425

## THE ANCIENT TRACK. By M. ROBINSON 429

## CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB.

Max Beerbohm as Prophet. By John Shand ...	439
A Novel of Jewry. By Herbert Palmer ... ..	443
"Twelfth Night." By C. B. Davy ... ..	445

## THE WISDOM OF TCHEHOV. By THE

JOURNEYMAN ... ..	448
-------------------	-----

## BOOKS TO READ ... .. 454

## NOTABLE NOVELS AND SHORT STORIES ... .. 456

[ALL RIGHTS RESERVED]

**"Luvisca"**  
SHIRTS  
PYJAMAS & SOFT COLLARS

*leave absolutely nothing to be desired either  
in the matter of wear or appearance.*

Look for the  
"LUVISCA" TAB  
on every Gar-  
ment. None  
genuine without.

If any difficulty  
in obtaining write  
COURTAULDS,  
LTD. (Dept. 42M),  
19, Alderman-  
bury, London.  
E.C.2, who will  
send you name of  
nearest retailer  
and descriptive  
booklet.



## & NEW ZEALAND LINES

### MAIL, FREIGHT AND PASSENGER SERVICES.

*P. & O. and B.I. Tickets Interchangeable, also Tickets of P. & O., Orient, New Zealand Shipping and Union Companies. All sailings subject to change with or without notice.*

- 1 London & Marseilles to Bombay, Karachi & Persian Gulf.
- 2 London to Colombo, Madras and Calcutta.
- 3 London & Marseilles to Ceylon, China, Japan & Australia.
- 4 London & Marseilles to Port Sudan, East & South Africa
- 5 London to Queensland.
- 6 London (cargo) & Southampton (passengers) to New Zealand & (by transshipment, passengers only) Australia via Panama Canal.
- 7 United Kingdom (by any Atlantic line) via Vancouver or San Francisco to New Zealand, Australia and the South Sea Islands.
- 8 London (one class only, third class rates) to Australia via Cape of Good Hope.

#### ADDRESS:—

Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4 & 5.—For Passage, P. & O. House (Manager, F. H. Grosvener), 14-16, Cockspur St. S.W. 1; Freight or General Business, P. & O. & B.I. Offices, 122, Leadenhall St., London, E.C. 3.

No. 6.—J. B. Westray & Co., Ltd., 138, Leadenhall Street, London, E.C. 3, or P. & O. House (first floor, General Passenger Agent, W. L. James), 14, Cockspur Street, S.W. 1.

No. 7.—Union S.S. Co. of New Zealand, Ltd., P. & O. House (first floor, General Passenger Agent, W. L. James), 14, Cockspur Street, London, S.W. 1, and for Vancouver Service, any office of Canadian Pacific Railway.

No. 8.—P. & O. Service, Australia, via Cape, 32, Lime Street, E.C. 3, or P. & O. House, as above.

B.I. Agents, Gray, Dawes & Co., 122, Leadenhall Street, London, E.C. 3.  
Paris (All Routes)—Société Française, P. & O., 41, Boulevard des Capucines.

Telegrams  
ORIENTAL  
STEAMSHIP  
LONDON

P&O. HOUSE, 14-16 COCKSPUR STREET, LONDON, S.W.1

Telegrams  
ORIENTAL  
STEAMSHIP  
LONDON



# The Adelphi

---

VOL. III. NO. 6.

NOVEMBER, 1925

---

## A SIMPLE CREED

By John Middleton Murry

IT is as I feared: that once embarked upon this ocean, the voyage would never be done. Whatever I write upon this subject, so soon as the words are in cold print, appears to me altogether insufficient; and I dare not leave it there.

In the two previous papers I have tried to convey two attitudes of mine towards Christ and Christianity. I hold these attitudes simultaneously, knowing well that they are contradictory. I make no apology for that, because I believe that a religious *truth* is, by nature, incapable of being formulated save by means of contradictions. As Keyserling says, "Remote truths in particular can only be represented in powerful contrapuntal opposition."\* And as though immediately to prove the truth of that statement, I must qualify it by saying that the remotest truths are always the nearest of all. We reach them by long and tortuous journeyings; but at the last we see them face to face: closer than that—for the final realization is that the truth is

---

\* I beg my readers to obtain, by hook or by crook, Keyserling's "Travel Diary of a Philosopher" (Cape). It is expensive, 36s. net for the two volumes. But they should insist on their various libraries supplying it. For this is one of the few *necessary* books for a modern man, outside the domain of pure literature.

## THE ADELPHI

ourselves and in ourselves. To know what we are is the end of all the search for religion and for wisdom—the end; not merely the beginning, as the old Greek said.

I have tried in these papers to follow the spontaneous movement of my mind in its effort to extract a real meaning for itself out of the contemplation of Christ and Christianity. I have found my mind working—in a manner now familiar to me—by means of contradictions, such as that the completeness of Jesus' triumph is apprehensible only through a realization of the completeness of his defeat. The choice is between contradictions and silence. Perhaps if I were older and wiser than I am, I should have chosen silence.

The contradiction in my last two papers may be summed up, in personal terms, thus. On the one hand, a contemplation of the life and death of Jesus makes absolutely impossible a belief in the existence of God the Father Almighty; on the other hand, the life and death of Jesus are the supreme revelation of a loving God. To those two assertions in their fullness, and in the fullness of their opposition, I adhere.

The life and death of Jesus reveal the love of a loving God. There is the emphasis. The love of God is not as the love of man. We have a blinding glimpse of its nature in the perfection of the Crucifixion, which is the archetype of the perfection of all true tragedy. In the Christian conception of God as the Almighty Father, a human love is ascribed to God. That conception is to me utterly impossible. I do not even desire it. The extreme of human love was manifested once for all, as it must be manifested, in a man. Him I worship. A man can worship a man. God he can only know.

The worship of Jesus, as the perfect exemplar of human love, and the knowledge of God as revealed by his life and death are two utterly different things; they belong to different orders. What is unacceptable in the

## A SIMPLE CREED

Christianity of the Church is that these two distinct things have been somehow fused into one, to produce an amalgam—a divine Christ, a loving God the Father Almighty—in which few if any professing Christians really believe, if their lives be regarded (as they must) as the test of the reality of their faith.

I think the time is past for these half-beliefs : they stick in my throat, and they stand in the way. We have, as modern Europeans, to accept ourselves for what we are. We can think, and we can think more clearly than our forefathers. Let us think, therefore. But, precisely because we can think, let us not be cockawhoop about our thinking. Simply because the old statements of the Christian verity are empty, were in fact emptied four hundred years ago, let us not imagine that Christ or Christianity is out of date. The old statements are useless to us. The “ intellectual ” *convert* to Catholicism to-day is a renegade to humanity. By his works ye shall know him : and there is always something rotten in his works. The man who is born and bred a Catholic, on the contrary, may well achieve within his religion, as final a knowledge as any man outside it. The Protestant is in a different case. His business is to follow the Protestant spirit to the bitter end, and on his journey thither to restate frankly, in a manner that admits of no equivocation, the Christian verity for to-day.

What I believe to be that verity I have tried to show. But I will state it again. God exists. The cardinal revelation of his nature *for a Western European* is in the life and death of Jesus, considered and pondered as credible historical fact. It was so in the past ; it remains so to-day. What has changed is the method of conceiving historical fact. We do not have, for instance, to complete Jesus’ life by a bodily resurrection : simply because we can resurrect him in our own way by striving to understand him. To the early Christian the



## THE ADELPHI

mighty fact about Jesus was not what he said or did, not that he died, but that he rose bodily from the tomb. To us the mighty fact is that he said what he said, and did what he did and died with a loud cry on the Cross. But, so far as the religious verity is concerned, the early Christian belief in his bodily resurrection, and ours in his bodily extinction, have the same potency and value. They are both means to a knowledge of that which is beyond both life and death—of God. The difference is really on the side of the subject, not of the object : we no longer need to distort facts to make them symbols of the divine. To us facts themselves, if we have eyes to see them, are divine—"the garment we see Him by."

God exists : Jesus existed. The further question is whether and to what extent we shall follow the man Jesus along the road which he declared—the road of universal love. This again is a question to be pondered by men as men. There are clear-sighted and deep-thinking men who do not believe at all in the gospel of love. They envisage the history of mankind very much in the same way as I do, as necessary, inevitable, and beautiful ; but, they say, as wars have been, so they must be : the pattern changes, but the elements are the same. Evil and pain are necessary.

Here, it may be, I confess my limitation, and prove myself no philosopher. But I cannot and will not accept this. Though I fully and freely accept the fact that "truth on one side of the Alps is falsehood on the other," that Christianity is the professed religion of but a portion of the world, that to men of other climates a different revelation of the nature of God and man from our own is and probably will always be necessary,—still I know that I am, in my own sense, a Christian. Christian culture is in my blood, and, I hope, a spark not to be quenched of Christian love in my soul. I cannot see the universe as the Moslem sees it, I cannot

## A SIMPLE CREED

know God or myself as the Hindu knows them. I belong to my race : no more than the Ethiopian can I change my skin. For this race to which I belong, the very constituents of whose blood have been altered by two thousand years of Christianity, Jesus remains the prophetic man. Its problems are not the problems of the Moslem and the Hindu. It is travelling along a different path into the unknown future : the woods, the trees, the rivers, the sky, the joys, the dangers—all are different.

In other words I am a European, and I believe that the conceptions, the habit of feeling, the spiritual atmosphere of Christianity is, and will for ever remain, an essential part of the European consciousness. I am not merely a European, but an Englishman : therefore the Christianity which is native to me is a Protestant Christianity. That is to say : I am not vitally concerned any more with the great Catholic tradition. I am the heir of a long succession of rebels against spiritual *authority*. Christianity is for me simply what I can find in it that is of use to me in my effort to live my own practical and spiritual life. I am, by nature and by consideration, opposed to the Catholic ideal. It has served its turn ; I recognise that it was a great ideal—once. But my forebears abandoned it centuries ago : I am glad they did, and I am convinced that any movement of return is a movement backwards.

Whether or not Protestantism will move forward to a religion of personal loyalty to the man Jesus, is of course beyond my power to prophesy. I hope it will. For that is the least incomprehensible way I can find to describe the only path I see of escape from the abyss that suddenly yawned under our feet in the war. The morality of Jesus is the morality we can follow with some faint hope of achievement. I do not mean that we should follow the Sermon on the Mount literally : a great deal of it depends upon a belief in God as a loving

## THE ADELPHI

father which, in spite of all professions, not one man in a million truly holds. Not one man in a million *can* hold it.

Not Jesus as son of God but Jesus as son of Man—in the non-eschatological meaning of the phrase—is our ideal perfection. And we have the right and the duty to distinguish between his own native morality, that which made him what he was, and the morality that sprang from the combination of his native morality with his God-consciousness. When we have learned to love as Jesus loved, then it will be time for us to talk of our loving God, or of God's loving us. By that time he very likely will.

For, though it may sound a queer proposition, I hold that we humans have it in us to make God what we desire. If we truly desire a loving God, we can have him—at the price. What we do, God does. If we could get that primary truth into our souls, perhaps a new illumination would come to us. Then we should see quite simply why and how God the Father was Jesus' own creation. If we also want God to be our Father, then we must follow Jesus, the living man, implicitly, not as a pattern, but by our own spontaneous impulse, though the impulse may have been kindled by him. The existence of God the Father depends absolutely upon the number of his veritable sons.

For my own part I do not desire God to be a father. I am too conscious of the price; and I am by no means a hero. But I love my fellow-men sufficiently to desire actively that God should be a good deal more like a father than he actually is. So I am prepared to do something towards making God what I want him to be. The method of God-creation is simple: you have only to remember the simple fact that what you do, God does; what you are, God is. Even to the uttermost: if you disbelieve in God, then God *pro tanto* disbelieves in himself. Every man has the responsibility for God upon his shoulders.



## A SIMPLE CREED

That is my creed. Until this moment, strangely enough, it never entered my head to express it to myself in this simple fashion. It is a red-letter day to me that I have said something so clearly to myself as this : What I do, God does : what I am God is. Perhaps it may give others something of the simple satisfaction it gives me.

I am afraid it will not sound very logical. What I am to-day differs greatly from what I was three years ago : therefore God is greatly different from what he was three years ago. Well, why not? My part of him, his whole of me, is greatly different from what it was. I am content. I am not offering a faith for everybody, though it is one that everybody can hold. This creed of mine is meant only for those whom it suffices : I aim at no proselytes.

Yet it might be a good thing if this simple creed were to gain adherents? It is pleasant to imagine that the landlord of a slum-tenement who has kept the place in a foul and filthy condition should suddenly realize, when praying with the rest of his respectable fellows in church on Sunday, that what he is, God is : and that he should have a sudden sight of the heavenly mansion reserved for him, without a sink or a privy. Or that the fire-eating journalist who will not rest till he has done his part in creating another war, should see his God with a bayonet sticking in his vitals. There is room for laughter in this religion.

But, above all, it is a practical creed. It adjusts itself to every issue in a man's life. If he wants to find God, then God wants to find himself also. The unfortunate thing is that the simple truth of the matter will not have dawned upon him in that condition ; nor will it greatly pain a man who disbelieves in God to be told that God disbelieves in himself. I do not think it would have greatly pained me ten years ago. Which serves me as a reminder how great is the distance I have gone

## THE ADELPHI

—hopping, skipping, jumping, wriggling—ever since I began my *confessio fidei* in these pages ; how innumerable have been my attempts to formulate to myself the one reality of whose existence I have long been convinced, how desperate my efforts to avoid being committed to a formulation I could not accept, how close I have seemed, even to myself, to come to Christianity, how certain nevertheless I have been that that haven was not mine. Perhaps I have found my resting-place.

A resting-place in my own creed : a fit end for an individualist. A resting-place which has no rest in it : which is what I have always desired. *What I am, God is : what I do, God does.* Yes, I think that will last me my time. And now that I have it, and read it, and stare at it, I wonder whether it can mean to any other soul, what it means to me, whether indeed for another it can have aught of meaning at all. For I think I can see some of the ways in which it can be misunderstood : I can imagine the lifted eyebrow of disdain for the complete romantic, who believes that the divine endorsement descends upon all he is and does.

That is not what my creed means ; it is, indeed, the very opposite of what it means. Yet I look at the words : *What I am, God is ; what I do, God does.* What other meaning can they bear ?

I do not know that I can explain, or even that I care to try to explain. But I may put the difference as simply as I can in this way.

The obvious meanings of my creed are two. One is, that I put the responsibility for myself upon God ; the other is, that I take the responsibility for God upon myself. The second is the meaning which my creed has for me. But what inclines me to believe that there is more in this creed than I can ever explain is that both these interpretations are true. Only the first belongs to one phase of growth, the second to another ; or, again, the first belongs to one kind of perception, the second to

## A SIMPLE CREED

another. Any man can say, and say truly, God is responsible for all he is and all he does. God is responsible. If he be a liar, or a coward, or a lecher, or a doer of cruel deeds, God is what he is, by the same necessity whereby if he be the servant of the truth, or a hero, or a man who will die for his friends, God is what *he* is. But there is this—and the mystery and the simplicity of the mystery lies here—that if a man can truly say to himself: “What I am, God is”—then from that moment he will cease to be a liar, or a coward, or a lecher, or a doer of cruel deeds.

But, by going on in this strain, I may only add confusion to a simple thing. I do not want to defend my creed; though I should be happy to think that anyone had derived from it a fraction of the peace it has brought to me. I am prepared, I shall be delighted, to be told that it is obvious—after all, a creed that is obvious would be a welcome change—or that many men have thought of it before me. In this matter I have no desire to be original; nor have I any overwhelming anxiety even to be understood. Those who are fated to understand me, will understand, in their own good time: and in them the meaning of the title of this magazine (which I did not choose) will have its justification.

Now, with this simple and unforeseen conclusion, let me put the matter finally behind me. I am not concerned any more to describe or define the God in whom I believe. If anyone is still concerned about my belief—for I did not embark on this last providential voyage at my own desire—he will be referred back to this sequence of papers, wherein I have said as much as I could say. It might have been said better, I do not doubt. But in waiting to say it better, I should have lost the desire to say it at all.

Therefore, in future, by the terms of my creed, all that I can say about the nature of God, and much more than I could say, will be found under totally different



## THE ADELPHI

rubrics, and by other hands than mine, in the pages of this magazine. Just as any other magazine, just as the commercial press, it is—if my readers understand me—one of God's voices : the only difference that I can at this moment see is that it will be a little more aware of its responsibility than some of the others are.

That, alas ! sounds solemn and almost pharisaical. It is a pity : for solemnity is very far from me at this moment. I should like rather to crack a huge joke—an enormous joke, in commemoration of this attainment of the *gay savoir*. Unfortunately the best I could do in that kind, at this moment, would be like the smile of the patient who has recovered after an operation—a good smile, a true smile, but a weary one.

So there is bound to come the period of convalescence in which I live myself into my creed : I shall try to occupy it by surveying the new world before me. I am become a friend to the universe. It has no mysteries ; or it is altogether a mystery, as I am myself. It comes to the same thing in the end.

But one thing it seems to me I can surmise : the telegraph-pole I's with which my discourses have been streaked may largely disappear. They have been ascribed to egotism and vainglory : in fact they were due to a genuine scrupulousness. I had, for honesty's sake, to remain rigidly within my own ego : he was my one chance of salvation. Now he has served his turn, and a faint butterfly fans his wings over the broken shards. He may be an I ; he may be a we ; he can make no promises.

## A LEADER OF FASHION

*By Thomas Hardy*

NEVER has she known  
The way a robin will skip and come,  
With an eye half bold, half timorsome,  
To the table's edge for a breakfast crumb :

Nor has she seen  
A streak of roseate gently drawn  
Across the east, that means the dawn,  
When, up and out, she foots it on :

Nor has she heard  
The rustle of the sparrow's tread  
To roost in roof-holes near her head  
When dusk bids her, too, seek her bed :

Nor has she watched  
Amid a stormy eve's turmoil  
The pipkin slowly come to boil,  
In readiness for one at toil :

Nor has she hearkened  
Through the long night-time, lone and numb,  
For sounds of sent-for help to come  
Ere the swift-sinking life succumb :

Nor has she ever  
Held the loved-lost one on her arm,  
Attired with care his straightened form,  
As if he were alive and warm :

Yea, never has she  
Known, seen, heard, felt, such things as these,  
Haps of so many in their degrees  
Throughout their count of calvaries !

# NIGHT AND DAY IN THE BIG WARD

*By* Martin Gilkes

LAST night they told me that I must sleep in the Big Ward and moved my bed from the little room where I had been alone. It was my first experience of the Big Ward and one not easily forgotten. A long room, like a vaulted cave, lit by one shaded light in the centre, at the far end it seemed to melt away in shadows ; the middle of it filled with tables, bearing bottles like the windows of a chemist's shop, that somehow manage to convey a sinister suggestion. On either side, running away into darkness, the orderly lines of beds, each with its blanket : a study in scarlet, a symphony in red. Red is a cheerful colour by day, but see it in the half-light, it seems as if the whole place has just run with blood. It is the good colour in a hospital, too ; the bad is black. Later on in the night I remember waking and in the semi-darkness thinking that my blanket was black, and how my heart had what the nurses call a turn. For they put black blankets on those who die, to mark them for carrying to the mortuary shed. . . .

The nurses come and go, walking tip-toe, talking in whispers, so as to avoid disturbing the patients perhaps ; but a whisper penetrates the whole big ward like winter wind in a chimney. And sometimes they laugh, softly, of course. And one wears shoes that have the faintest creak.

But after a while these things cease to trouble. It is the human freight this long room carries that absorbs one. How it groans ! How it sighs ! Some keep up



## NIGHT AND DAY IN THE BIG WARD

a steady moaning, inarticulate like dumb bewildered beasts : others cry aloud, seemingly determined that if they can't sleep, no one else shall. And whilst they had their way, I lay and listened ; how different, I thought, from a hospital in the war ! Once I lay at Béthune beside a man whose legs and arm had been shot away. Not a single moan. I travelled in a train cheek by jowl with a boy whose stomach was a seething cauldron of shrapnel. He might have been peacefully lying in his bed at home : only he was not. But these men fresh from civilian homes take their troubles like children. (I had almost said "like women," but a nurse from the women's ward told me that the women bear their pain far better than the men.)

It is not always those in the most pain that groan the loudest. The man on my right has a silver tube passing down into his vitals. He has too the certain knowledge that he will not recover. When he stirs, the tube bites him, just as the fox bit the Spartan boy. He said to me this morning :

"It fair made me holler all night !"

And yet I had never heard a whisper from him. I told him so.

"Not through my lips, but inside !" he answered with a fierce gush of scorn and pride.

But my neighbour on the left ! He has a simple fester. Yet every time he hears a nurse's step, "Nurse ! Nurse !" in the voice of a drowning man ; and when she comes, he tells her that his mouth is dry.

### §

You may take your fill of humanity in the Big Ward.

At ten they brought in from the theatre a motor accident, just beginning to come round. By twelve he was in full cry. A nurse sat by his side to prevent his climbing out of bed. "Seventh lap ! only three more to go . . . give her more gas, you—we'll get the prize

## THE ADELPHI

and then retire . . . never no more. . . . God, what a bump! Who are you? Why, nurse! You're a nurse. . . . You've ridden a ride as has never been ridden before. . . . No, that's wrong! Nurse, kiss me, nurse . . . ouch!" (I presume she didn't, but the ether took him again by the throat) "ouch! I feel sick!"

A racing motorist, I thought, from Brooklands, but this morning I found that he is a clerk in the local bank. Merely the ruling passion slipping out of the unconscious mind!

He is quiet after one, sheer exhaustion locks his tongue, but a new voice takes up the solo, dominating the general chorus. I can just distinguish him across the way, a white face lying back on a heap of pillows, the mouth fallen open, making a great round O, like some gigantic megaphone. From it come fearful ster-torous breaths, "Ah—ah——ah—ah—ah"—an inhuman noise that if it resembles anything, resembles the bellowing of tortured cattle. It would not be so bad if it came at regular intervals or continuously without pause. A man can sleep through the ticking of a clock, but this intermittent roaring, sometimes breaking off altogether, sometimes coming in groups of three or four or five, is rest-and-soul-destroying. It is heavy laden with such a weight of agony: every breath proclaims itself for what it is: the last fight, the last flicker before that which still lives and lingers in him can shake itself free from the tormented flesh.

And how it lingers! Everywhere in the ward, I know, men trying themselves to forget their pain in sleep, are praying that he may die; and after an hour of it I find myself too praying the same prayer. I try to persuade myself that I pray for him to find peace, but the humiliating thought is with me that it is for myself, to find some sleep before morning comes. So we lie, and the longest of long nights passes.

## NIGHT AND DAY IN THE BIG WARD

As a matter of fact, he died (no man in the ward but heard him), just when the false dawn came and the nurses began to wake the ward to the abominable duty of rousing and washing at five o'clock.

### §

Morning in the ward comes in with a whirlwind, long before true morning outside. Everyone has fallen at last into a troubled slumber, some perhaps only five minutes ago ; but at the hour of five we are awakened as effectually as the last Trump wakes the dead. We waken to wash and say good-bye to sleep. At least I do. For I find that water and sponge do banish sleep : and if they did not, the voices of the nurses would, that cry "Sleep no more," and breakfast and bedmaking and cleaning of the ward. By nine o'clock we seem to have been awake for years.

But the day-time has its compensations. At least it is not the time when sick men dream. What at night were moaning, crying shadows, by day become shapes or shapelessnesses, neatly blanketed in beds. They talk a little, from bed to bed. One sees that they are human, with minds and feelings of their own. There is the hour of exercise when such as are allowed may wheel about the ward in chairs, and thus one has the little excitement of a round of visits.

Bed number three is due for an operation this afternoon. Two friends came in to see him yesterday, to cheer him up. They did their work only too well.

"Operation?" they said, "what's an operation? One touch of the anaesthetic and there you were."

"Yes, but where?" (Bed number three is not yet eighteen.) "Does it hurt? Can you feel?" They laughed. (Queer how visitors can be so light of heart and smile so easily!) "Feel?" they answered. "Not you—but you can see. Nice to watch them carving you up and never feel anything at all!"



## THE ADELPHI

Bed number three spent the night in seeing and feeling too : in the way in which we feel all our keenest pains, in the imagination, in the mind. So he came to his breakfast—it was only milk—sick, and he could not drink it ; and most unluckily, to extract a crumb of comfort, took to reading his medical sheet that hung above his bed.

I found him, literally chattering with apprehension, and I told him how an anaesthetic really worked : “ Like sleep,” I encouraged him. “ You know nothing. . . .”

“ Ay, but that’s worse ! I’m for it, I am,” and reaching up he took down the medical sheet. We read it together, until his trembling finger came to rest at the last entry. “ Nepenthe,” it read : then a scrawl of cabalistic signs : then, “ S.O.S.”

“ S.O.S.,” he whispered. “ What they put on ships. Sinkin’ ! That’s what it means. Sinkin’. O my God, I’m a-going to die !”

I nearly laughed, but the sight of his face stopped me in time. “ Nonsense, man,” I said. “ Don’t you know what S.O.S. in a hospital means ? If there’s need. It’s Latin. *Si opus sit*.”

“ Sea-what ?” he asked, out of his own thoughts, his mind still running on ships in trouble on the sea.

“ No, no, *si opus sit*,” I said again. “ To be given only if there’s need. They don’t waste sleeping draughts on patients for nothing. . . .”

But he would not listen and went to his operation still muttering, “ Sinkin’, sinkin’. . . .”

### §

The ward makes one think. There are so many old men. Some ruddy and outwardly healthy, some drained and sapless, but all have a worm somewhere at the core. It makes a man think of the innumerable

## NIGHT AND DAY IN THE BIG WARD

phalanx of ills that lie in wait when he shall have crossed the threshold of old age.

Here they lie.

This one, venerable, white-bearded, might be a bishop : he has the pastoral eye ; a black embroidered skull cap on his head, a relic of home, I think, that lends a touch of colour and of something else perhaps to the nakedness of the ward. He lies very still, his eyes looking back into the pleasant days of youth, as old people's eyes always do ; but every now and then pain takes him and he shrieks aloud like a little child. Strange contrast between the stern agony we know he suffers and the mindless cries he utters ! It seems as if God were using a hammer to crush a fly.

And this one, thin and sullen, with a high cheek-bone from lack of flesh, has eyes that have the wicked helpless look of a rat in a trap. He has been under two operations and to-morrow he will have a third. He is caught fast between the teeth of the gin ; for he lies in bed too weak now to move a finger. But he thinks. His eyes tell you that, though his lips tell nothing. He thinks, but of what ? *Dulces reminiscitur Argos* ? Surely not. One has only to look at his eyes.

All these old men are " Daddy " to the nurses. Some like it : others, to judge by their faces, must hate it. I believe the nurses think of them as children. Certainly they treat them so. They like them too. Their old bodies make no protest : they are light to lift : half their time they lie quite quiet, and quiet men in hospital are presumed to be asleep.

We have ten old men in the ward. I can lie in the daytime and see them all. They are so beautifully quiet, as if they had no desire any more to be out and see the sun. And as I look round, I feel inclined to say, " God grant that I may do nothing to bring upon myself such sufferings as they suffer in order to live

## THE ADELPHI

painfully three or four more years in the land that Thou hast given them ! ”

Vainest of prayers ! For when I ask of doctors or of nurses how these old fellows came by their troubles, they have but one answer, “ Oh, old age—just old age ” ; as if it were the most natural and inevitable thing in the world ; as indeed it is.

### §

They brought a stretcher case into the ward. We had just a glimpse of his face ; it was of the colour to which we have grown so accustomed, and it bled sullenly from nose and ears. Motor accident, we said : a bad one too. For the house surgeon behind the screens was an unconscionably long time working over him, whilst we speculated as to what he had to do. It made a kind of morbid diversion, as we lay in bed. Then he came out, like a white ferret out of a burrow, biting his underlip with a long front tooth. He was hardly gone before he was back : with him one of the bigger doctors and the opening in the screens swallowed them up. Then came another and another doctor. “ Where the carcase is ” . . . one could not help thinking of the quotation. A long time later they all left in a swarm.

“ Pretty bad smash,” we said to the nurses.

“ No smash at all,” they answered. “ But what’s the matter with him no one knows.”

The aristocracy of the ward are those who are dangerously ill. Whether you will or no, you come to regard them almost with admiration ; but a man suffering from something quite unknown wears a sort of halo. So we used to look at the screens round his bed, peering through when we got the chance, much as savages look at a wooden idol. He had the look too of a wooden idol, as he lay back rigid on his pillows : his face had no more expression, his eyes might have been glass.



## NIGHT AND DAY IN THE BIG WARD

I began to think over all the diseases that I know and wonder which of them was his ; or it might be something I had never heard of, even something absolutely new and strange. When one lies in bed all day, a little thing becomes a mountain, and it astonishes me now to think how I came to fret over the answer to that question.

It would be answered, of course, in time. That became clearer every day. For, "How is he?" we would ask, and "Can't last, poor fellow," was the invariable reply.

It was merely a question of time, but what a time ! Three days, four days he fought. He might have been dead already, the nurses said, but for the thin breath he laboured so to draw.

That evening the doctor, having time on his hands, came and sat by my bed.

"But haven't you," I asked him, "an idea of what's the matter?"

"Not the faintest shadow ! And he's too bad to be put on the table. Funny how excited one gets, waiting for a chap like that to die ! Sounds callous, doesn't it ? The scientific mind ! It's like a collector after some rare animal that's got to come to his hand at last. You don't know how keen I am to get that fellow to a post-mortem, just to know, to be certain. . . ."

But I did. The doctor's fever was our fever in the ward, but we had less honourable reasons. It fretted and consumed us. We scarcely liked to sleep, even the little time we could, at night. Whilst we slept, the question might be answered for us. One could never tell. But still he put it off. If one had had thoughts for it, there was something magnificent about the fight that he put up. But for myself (to my shame I confess it), all other thoughts were drowned in curiosity. . . .

He did not die until the sixth day, and as I saw him being wheeled away to the mortuary shed, I remember

## THE ADELPHI

saying to myself, "Now soon, very soon, we shall know!" But that very afternoon, whilst the doctors were at work upon him, they gave me my discharge. And somehow with the order of release my mind was filled with thoughts of home and the great question ceased to be of importance any more. So I never knew after all.

### *Death*

I FEAR not death, for death can but deprive  
My soul of things that torture me alive :  
The sadness of a body drawing breath  
May well find faith and friendliness in death.

I flutter for a little while alone,  
A bird far out to sea by tempest blown :  
And then, I dip once more, and touch the sea,  
And share forthwith that immortality.

Come sleep ! Come death ! Forgiveness come to me !  
My wings grow weary : solemn smiles the sea,  
As smiles a nurse who lulls her babe to rest,  
I stoop to join my shadow on thy breast.

JOHN STILL.

# THE ARCHANGEL GABRIEL'S CHAFING DISH

*By Vsevolod Ivanoff*

BETWEEN the Ural Mountains and Turkestan there lie thousands and thousands of versts, and all the way there are quicksands—deep as the height of a man. Depths.

Yet one-eyed Cosmo, with the pock-marked face, mouthed : “ I am going to the town Verny ; it has fallen through the earth, so they say, and a lake has swelled there, and in the lake there are thousands of ducks. And round the lake the bullrushes are gigantic—each noddle weighs five pounds. . . .”

Cosmo was the district tailor and stitched pea-jackets and pants after the Austrian fashion, with pockets as large as carts and buttons as big as wheels. But in the district people argued : “ Cosmo is a rotten tailor but a wonderful shot—with a charmed eye : he strikes true and to death.” And more faith was put in his cartridge than in his needle.

It happened that in the days of Koltchak the moujiks summoned Cosmo and expounded :

“ Take a rifle ! ”

And Cosmo asked :

“ Where to ? ”

“ To thrash the Whites ; the Whites are marching on our district and are hanging Christians up to the sixth generation on the cedar trees.”

He took up his rifle and went.

“ Shoot ! ” they said. They showed him whom.—One.—Another.—Five. He picked them off the



## THE ADELPHI

ground, as buttons are snipped off clothes, and went off hunting into the *taiga*.\*

After that, no more Whites ventured on the march, and the Bolshevik regiments beat them hollow on yonder side of the Urmán.

And Cosmo went about, stitched pea-jackets and boasted :

“ I am off to the town Verny that floats under water.”

Semilujki† lies amongst the cedars—its huts are of five walls with beams as thick as a cow's carcase, but the Chapel of All Saints is as small as a cedar seed. On the left side of the altar stands the ikon of St. Gabriel, who holds a candle and a mirror. The latter means “ God sees your soul, as in a looking-glass ” ; as regards the candle no one pondered, and it burned in his hand no one knew why.

No, Cosmo did not like St. Gabriel ! Now, take the Archistrategus Michael, for instance—the warrior, exterminator of miscreants, or Nicholas the Saint—the bearded Saint ; but this one . . . puny of body, beardless, and charged with unsavoury mission to the Mother of God on Lady Day. . . .

Yet Cosmo kept his thoughts to himself ; they stirred deep within him, midst warmth and sultriness, and therefore probably loomed large and impenetrable as a winter's night in the *tundras*. Only the one thought of the wondrous town Verny struggled out to the surface, and he believed in it fiercely.

So, on the eve of St. Gabriel's day, when the bark of the cedar trees was bursting, the trees sweating, the giant roots curving the earth underfoot into humps, and the resin running on to the cedar leaf carpet, spreading a joyful scent, Cosmo was winding his way along the track through the *taiga*.

---

\* Vast marshy forest land in Siberia.

† A village (literally, “ Seven puddles ”).

## ARCHANGEL GABRIEL'S CHAFING DISH

He thought of to-morrow's festival, covered the Saint with abuse, and raged at himself for not having laid in a supply of *samogonka*.\*

"With good Saints galore, to do obeisance to such trash!"

There was a close and joyous smell of cedar tree roots, which crept headstrong and shaggy, ruthlessly heaving up the turf. At the top—the branches entangled the wind, and tossed it whistling from summit to summit.

Said Cosmo,

"There's some irreverence in me anyhow!"

He spat, and cast his only eye up and along the footway.

And lo! there—on the path—was a puny moujik, turned up God knows from where. . . . His clothes—rag upon rag. On one foot—a bast shoe, on the other—some hay tied on with string. As for his eye . . . quite an incomprehensible eye! Half an *archine* one from the other, and on different sides of the face—just as if there were two eyes, and just as if there were more than a dozen, hidden up there—in the hair . . . craftily.

"It's up to Semilujki that this road will be?"

Cosmo replied:

"It will. . . ."

"I am going there for the day of Gabriel, the All Wise, that is the Saint too.—I have heard that he is high enthroned there."

Cosmo said:

"Well?"

"I am faring from the Turkestan lands—from the town Verny. . . ."

"I hear tell. . . ."

"It has, brother. Fallen through the sands it has, only one Mussulman mosque has been left behind, because its Mullah, so they tell, was a traitor; and

---

\* Home distilled vodka, usually wood spirit.

## THE ADELPHI

generally . . . there's a lake there and all as it should be. . . ."

"It's not known why?"

"Why it's gone—eh?"

"Well?"

"It bores me, it said, to look at you and no more bones about it.—It vanished; I am witness to it, and have taken five hundred oaths on it!"

"At that rate all Russia will go. . . ."

"Not our business that, brother, not ours. . . . My craft is to paint ikons and Archangel Gabriel is held in great esteem by me. . . ."

He turned up the path. On his back—a cloth bag . . . a metallic rattling in it.

Over the footpath—a mist, and out of that mist jumps at Cosmo's eye a strip of torn coat on the scraggy back of the stranger, his body showing through the rent. A voice as thin as autumn grass . . . and so weird.

Cosmo quaked,—his feet cleaved to the earth. "God," says he. "Whence and wherefore?"

And darkling, the mist crept into his chest, and then along his cheek bones—into his skull. Sweat broke out on his jaws and Cosmo passed his hand along them, and his hand was wet, and the hair on it was sleek—had stuck to the skin.

"God," he says, "what for?"

The sluggards' footpath runs deep into the *taiga*—does not hurry amidst the cedar trees, and along it the moujik of the twenty eyes is disappearing.

### §

In the cloth bag—a pinch of tobacco, tiny paint brushes, newspaper for rolling cigarettes, and a rolled-up towel—with a metallic rattling in it.

"Here it is!" says the moujik.—"The Archangel's chafing dish."



## ARCHANGEL GABRIEL'S CHAFING DISH

"What for?" asks Cosmo bewildered.

"For mixing paints to renew ikons, I tell you. The paints are most sacred, and the chafing dish is Archangel Gabriel's—so it's called. Many generations of ikon-painters have handled it, and it's full of saintliness, brother!"

He unrolled the towel. In it—a chafing dish, like any other: the brand obliterated, one handle broken off. . . .

The stranger is sitting by the window—in the shadow, in silence; and his face is as dim as the chafing dish, and eyeless. . . . Cosmo waits. A tremor passes from his bowels through the room, along his clothes, not to mention his body. . . . Now—presently—a miracle will happen before his eyes.

The stranger is silent; he has unwound the linen strips from his legs, preparing for sleep.

Outside—it is night, and in the hut too.

The stranger has started to snore—so plaintively, as if on purpose. His leg has twitched, and from the wooden bench on to the floor cockroaches have fallen down—heavily. Cosmo is lying on the sleeping shelf above the stove—all of a tremble, and waiting. . . . He lifts his head, glances down: the moon is shining in the yard, through the window; and on to the table too—hard, quadrangular—and in that moon—a chafing dish, and a thin stick and a piece of nibbled bread. . . .

Nothing at all.—Mist again; a forest path is discernible. . . . The pungent smell of cedar. . . . Terror overwhelms Cosmo at the presence of the vagrant man, at the thought of his outlandish words. . . .

### §

Early in the morning rose the moujik. Cosmo took to cleaning his gun.

"I am off!" said the moujik.

## THE ADELPHI

“ Where? ”

“ To do my craft, brother,—around and about Gabriel the Archangel. Our community has sent me ; that’s how it is. Your folk are rich—love majestic saints. . . . Their saints should be fat, fleshy ! ”

“ Blasphemer, you ! ”

The moujik pulled up his trousers, glanced into Cosmo’s only eye and piped :

“ Don’t you get crusty—You’ll get paid for the food all right ! Do you understand ? My name’s Silas—and my family name is Odoinikoff. Good family name—what ? ”

The moujik has gone up the village road and is poking around the huts ; his scanty beard is like moss under the trees, first sombre—then light . . . indefinite. He spouts a great deal—enough for all. . . . Quite a strange man, and by his strangeness—incomprehensible.

For ten years the roof had not been thatched—it had gone awry ; and the earth, among the rotting straw, had burst forth into grass. Cosmo mended it. He bricked up the chimney too, then ate two dinners. . . . But no ! . . . It won’t go ! Something aches near the heart—gnaws, burns. . . . And the folk are celebrating St. Gabriel’s Day.

It was difficult to say on what was founded the especial renown of the ikon of Gabriel at Semilujki ; but—as for the celebrations—why not celebrate a bit ? The feast may make the belly ache, but what is the belly there for, if not to ache ?

Crude vodka is drunk, songs are sung—and all is as it should be.

Cosmo threaded his way along the village road, and his thoughts were steady, but as apprehensive as during the insurrection—yet the people were sauntering about and didn’t complain.

Near the little chapel stood Silas with the chafing

## ARCHANGEL GABRIEL'S CHAFING DISH

dish behind his back, addressing the moujiks in a piping voice, waving flimsily with his hand in the air.—

“ To fashion ikons—requires intelligence ! One takes for the paints—the ashes of the *likhvan* grass ; then—a wifeless man, in three pairs of pants, must pluck the leaves of the Wayfaring-tree on St. John’s Eve. . . . And then, brothers, on my chafing dish—the Archangel’s that is,—a brew is made from the yolks of eggs that come from hens about which even *I* had better not speak. . . . So I’ll go—let us say—into the *taiga* now, and will look all night long for the *likhvan* grass—and will find it at dawn, and will be all over sweat, that’s certain. . . . ”

And hitching up his sack he went towards the *taiga*.

Whilst the peasants looked at the chapel, then at the *taiga* and praised Silas :

“ A clever fellow . . . and all’s well. ”—

But Cosmo winds his way carefully alongside the forest path—fast on the trail of the moujik. And Silas is strutting, brushing away the mosquitoes with a branch of bird-cherry tree and all the mystery has fled from his face. A fellow, like any fellow—a cleft nose, a shaggy beard, and above the mouth, of course—a moustache. And then, Cosmo watched to see how Silas would go about it—looking for *likhvan* grass ; and he would like to observe something else on his face. And Cosmo’s only eye is large like two eyes and he winds his way like a wild beast—not noticing the trees.

But the moujik is not hurrying—is not searching ; is intent upon himself ; has lit a pipe. And his gait—is like that of a woman : mincing, springy with a jerk . . . and hence probably the rattling in the bag.

And fear and sadness comes over Cosmo—Surely, the other will turn round presently, and ask :

“ And you—Where are you going ? ”

But no,—he still goes on puffing at his pipe. There !



## THE ADELPHI

—He plucks a branch off a Wayfaring-tree ; puts it into his bag, and then some moss and some bilberry leaves !

Thinks Cosmo :

“ Ah—that is the *likhvan* grass ! ”

Behold !—the moujik has gone up to the cedar tree and has scraped the bark—in all likelihood from boredom ; then—picks another twig off a Wayfaring-tree.

Thinks Cosmo :

“ Aha, that is the other stuff ! ”

He is close upon him now—and is waiting. . . . The path has dropped to the river, has lost itself in the sand.

Silas has stopped ; has cast down his bag, cast off his clothes—and has gone into the water to bathe.

And as he started to splash in the water—Cosmo stretched out his hand for his gun. No gun—he has left it at home ! He picks a branch off a fir tree, breaks it in his hand so that the pitch glues the skin.

Whilst the other is snorting—disturbing the water, giggling softly, “ Hi . . . hi . . . hi . . . ” Is beating the water with his arms. . . . Clearly the man can't bear unruffled water !

Above the stream a sweet briar is hesitating—is stretching its branches to the water. The sand is eluding the water. It smells of the herbs of the forest. . . . Depths—aromatic.

### §

Long did Silas pray before celebrating the day of St. Gabriel—so the folk said in the village. And to reward such piety the inhabitants of Semilujki decided that he should paint an ikon of the Archistrategus Michael—of all saints the most formidable.

But Silas refused.

“ I fear,” said he, “ to paint such saints : I respect soft hearts, birds' hearts, I might say——”

## ARCHANGEL GABRIEL'S CHAFING DISH

And he held forth about the Turkestan lands, about the town Verny, which had fled from torments. . . .

But Cosmo roamed about three days in the *taiga*—hunting for a beast : to drown his anguish, his anger in its blood. But there were no beasts. No beast took pity on the man.

And as for Silas—it was as if he had forgotten all about Cosmo and—one must say—he scarcely left the chapel. With a wise expression and drunken look he would rush out on to the porch and gaze at the sun with his many eyes.

And it was as if he alone saw what should be transferred from the sun to the visage of the saint for it to be bright as the orb of day, and what to do for the luminary to be reflected in the mirror.

In the evening Cosmo met Semionovna, an ancient woman who hankered after truth.

“ And our stranger,” said she, “ has made himself drunk—and says that that town Verny truly exists and stands on its place—has never stirred ; bless it ! ”

“ It’s gone—Verny—it has ! ” said Cosmo.

“ It can’t, friend—it can’t have gone ! Where is it to go to ?—Where is one to go to from this world ? ”

And the old woman was pleased.

Said Cosmo to Silas severely :

“ Why do you lie about the town Verny ? ”

“ You—hold your tongue ! I know what I am talking about and will take the blame ! Go away !—I should really have to lose my temper with you, but—as I am doing saintly work I have only the right to scream at you—Go away ! ”

A drunken man’s word is a true word—the moujik believes this with all his heart As Silas had said—let slip—about Verny, so the villagers believed ; and no one referred to the town any more. If it stands—God bless it !—there are not a few towns that do.

And at Cosmo fun was poked—“ If he believes—let

## THE ADELPHI

him believe!—the man of unknown Bolshevik faiths!”

And again Semionovna, who hankered after truth, said to Cosmo:

“Come and drink tea with me. I will brew some China tea for you—for your torments. For you were preparing to go a long journey and now—there is nowhere for you to go. Who, tell me, would take that lightly?”

And Cosmo got blind drunk, shouted and beat the table with his fist—to have his say and that all should believe it.

“It *has* fallen through, I say! . . .”

In the pen—moaned a calf, which had just been weaned; it lowed in a thick animal voice and no one understood, no one lent an ear either to the calf or to Cosmo.

At the end of the village—the chapel stands, amidst the cedar trees. Whiffs of damp resin come from the *taiga*.

The sandy streets are overgrown with weeds—dark green, lush. . . .

Cosmo leans right out of the window and bellows with all his might:

“It has fallen through, I say! it has!!”

A red-tailed cock flew off the fence and hurried along the grass, jauntily jerking his comb. He had a drunken gait this cock, and a thick voice like the calf’s. So they screamed all three—two from anguish and the third not knowing why, until they fell asleep.

### §

Cosmo woke late. His dream was heavy, clammy—and endlessly long.

In the dream—Silas rattled his chafing dish, the earth burnt with a greenish flame and it was straight. . . .



## ARCHANGEL GABRIEL'S CHAFING DISH

"Aha!" said Cosmo. "You roam while all Russia is at Mass—who are you to do so? I ask you—well?"

He pulled on his patched-up trousers, slipped his bare feet into a pair of heelless slippers, snatched the gun from the wall and loaded it with a bullet.

The little bitch with a bushy tail, seeing the gun, yelped joyfully. Cosmo kicked her in the ribs—It is not right to send a dog on the trail of a man.

He went through the fields, behind the village backyards, to the little church, trying to alter his step, but it was as if he were on the track of a beast—the heel rose and the body rested on the toes.

Behind the yellow sunflowers stand the dark sheds for cattle and beyond them man had also built sheds for himself from cedar wood. They were taller sheds, but also dark—and they exhaled acrid animal smells.

And Cosmo was saying with fury:

"I will teach you, you will learn what it means—to deceive folk. . . ."

He wanted to say bitter, offensive words, but they came empty—futile. . . .

He grew silent.

The chapel of All Saints lies amidst the cedars, and is older perhaps than the trees; it is greenish-black all over, as the earth is in the early spring, and its porch is overgrown with moss, as land near a bog. The door is narrow and the crosses on the cupolas are eaten away by mould.

Softly, Cosmo walked up the steps; pulled gently at the handle—locked! No lock this side—the door must be locked from the other. He started descending the steps and heard his own footfall—soft, catlike; just the seams of his shoes, probably, scraping against the wood and tapping like claws.

Throwing his gun over his shoulder, he scrambled up a cedar to a window.

The window is open—seemingly the chapel is being

## THE ADELPHI

aired. On the lattice work a tomtit is perched and is wagging his tail. There is a smell of incense and beeswax. Inside—it is darksome ; and in the obscurity . . . a man is dashing to and fro waving his hands about before him—without apparent meaning. On the canvas bag—a chafing dish, and in it—gold ikon settings, a broken collecting box, and further away—ikons : put together like boards. And Cosmo saw here—that the figure dashing about with the hammer and chisel . . . was Silas. A yellow face, yellow hands and the eyes as if covered with dust—indiscernible.

Something struck him inside like a shot in the night—and his body drooped down, bereft of its strength, on to the cedar branch.

“ A thief ! ” said Cosmo—and did not hear his own voice.

He seized the lattice work with his hands, struck it with the barrel of his gun and yelled,

“ Hey ! ”

Flop, went Silas on his knees. Up again he jumped—dashing with a scream to the wall. He stared at the window, bowed his head to the floor, concealing his face in his hands—

“ Brother—it’s from hunger. . . . Brats, seven souls, no food. . . . Brother, the brats—naked—their bellies like water melons . . . a louse couldn’t fasten itself on them. . . . I’m from Semionsky district, brother, I heard. . . . I heard . . . they said there was gold here, silver, they said, on the chasubles—masses ! I was lured by it, brother . . . for the first time—by God ! Cousia—friend, chuck the gun. . . . Cousia ! Well?—What?—Cousia——? ”

Slowly downwards came Cosmo, uncocked his gun, slung it on his back—and went towards the *taiga*.

Again the resin is breathing. . . . Forest herbs. The cedars are straining towards the sky—the earth can’t hold back their roots,

## ARCHANGEL GABRIEL'S CHAFING DISH

Says Cosmo :

“ Perhaps truly it hasn't fallen through—and perhaps there is no such town at all as Verny—just that people have imagined it for their own consolation——”

The cedars are silent, are intent upon themselves.  
. . . Well, so there are no miracles in this world, and the most terrible thing is to live and to believe this.

*(Translated by S. M. Kazarine.)*

## BATTALION IN REST, JULY, 1917

SOME found an owl's nest in the hollow skull  
Of the first pollard from the malthouse wall,  
Some hurried through the swarming sedge  
About the ballast-pond's bright edge  
And flashed through sunny deeps like boys from school,  
All was discovery, love and laughter all.

The girls along the dykes of those moist miles  
Went on raft boats to take their cows afield,  
And eyes from many an English farm  
Saw and owned the mode had charm ;  
One well might mark the silence and the smiles—  
With such sweet balms, our wounds must soon be  
healed.

The jovial sun got up as bright each day  
As fancy's sun could be, and climbed, heaven's youth,  
To make the marching mornings cheat  
Still-hectoring Mars of his receipt :  
Who cannot hear the songs that led the way,  
See the trim companies with their eyes on truth?



## THE ADELPHI

At evening, by the lonely white-walled house,  
Where "Que C'est Drôle" and "Mon Dieu" stole  
to glance,  
One bold platoon all turned to players  
With masquerade and strumming airs,  
The short clown darted nimble as a mouse,  
The tambourine tapped out the stiff-stepped dance.

A shadowed comer suddenly took voice  
As in the dusk I passed ; it bade me stay.  
The bottle to my lips was raised—  
God help us, sergeant, I was mazed  
By that sharp fire your wine—but I rejoice !  
Could I but meet you again at the end o' the day !

Not seldom, fast by meadows deep in dew,  
Another lit my soul with his calm shine.  
There were cadences and whispers  
In his ways that made my vespers,  
A night-piece fitting well that temple blue  
Where stars new trembled with delight's design.

EDMUND BLUNDEN.

## THREE MEN

### *The Fears of Bing*

LIKE all persons of sedentary habits I find that my waist line, as the years go by, has a tendency to do anything but decrease. Having read of the difficulties that pugilists experience in reducing to a limited weight, I naturally inferred that they must be thoroughly familiar with the most drastic ways of removing flesh. As these people are often indigent, it was not difficult to find one willing to undertake the job. I shall call him Bing Hinkey, for his real or fighting name was not dissimilar.

His system, I found, comprised the usual routine of callisthenics and road work followed by a vigorous rub down. This in itself would have been a bore if it had not been for Bing's personality, for he fairly radiated cheerfulness. A more modest man would have been difficult to find. His own account of how close he came to winning the championship was not even dramatic. He is small, but his flattened nose and cauliflower ear proclaim his profession. The reason for his coming to Paris was that, his career being finished in America, he had thought that "the French boys would prove easy picking." One stiff workout had convinced him of his error, and he had resigned himself to the title of ex-prizefighter.

His method of pronouncing French was so original that I was astonished one day when he told me that he had acted as a guide to a lady that morning. "She had a book called *Paris in Seven Days*," he said, "and I was trying to show her the sights in it." "We was

## THE ADELPHI

walking, see? and I turns the wrong way when we comes to that island where Not-re Dame is." "I gets lost in them small streets and had to confess I was stumped." "I finally tells her so, and we takes a cab to get to this here Saint Germin." "While we was in the cab she gets madder and madder, and then she turns on me and says, Why, you dumb little runt, you black Irish Catholic, you pig-headed fool, you always was pig-headed and you'll always be pig-headed."

At this point I must have looked the amazement I felt, for he saw fit to add, "You see, we was brought up as kids together and knowed each other all our lives." "In fact," he explained, "she used to be my wife!" "Do you know," he continued, "that when she started talkin' like that it seemed like old times, and I just wanted to jump out of that-er cab and get away as far as possible."

I sympathized with him, for I felt that no man was safe in such a contingency. Nevertheless I reflected that his failure to win the championship was due to the lack of bull-dog bravery that would have enabled him to counter-attack in this fierce skirmish. But, after all, are there many men who would have dared?

Another day, burdened with heavy sweaters, we were running through the gardens of The Luxembourg. Lack of breath prevented me from being in a conversational mood, but nothing ever prevents Bing from talking. "I hates to see them French girls running round with them niggers over here, don't you?" he asked. "Woof," was the only comment I could gasp out. This seemed to satisfy him, for he continued, "The other day I was talkin' to that-er coloured fellow who shines shoes in the basement of that American bank." "He tells me he's just as good as any white man, and I asks him if he thinks he has the right to go anywhere a white man can, and he says yes." "Then I says if the President of the United States asked you

### THREE MEN

to eat with him, would you accept?" "And he says certainly." (I was still too winded to refresh Bing's memory on the case of Booker T. Washington.) "I told him," continued Bing, "that he was a fool, and he'd better not talk that way in America, and he says, This is not America."

This remark must have struck home, for Bing's tone had then become slightly conciliatory. "You're not such a bad chap in your way," he had said, "and I wouldn't mind going round the corner with you alone and takin' a drink." The negro's gratitude for this broad-minded point of view could not have satisfied Bing, for his tone now became belligerent as he told me of the end of the conversation. "I then tells him," said Bing, "that if I was alone in a restaurant with my wife and daughter (that is if I had one), and there were two empty seats at my table, and you came in with a white woman and sat down on those seats, why I'd spit right in your eye." The negro's retort had been even more drastic, for he had told Bing that in that case he would go straight home, get his gun, and come back and get him cold. Bing turned to me with a rueful smile, and said, "And I believe he would at that, he was a crazy sort of nigger."

Bing's tone had indicated that his own belligerency had cooled considerably on hearing the negro's threat. I wondered if this also indicated why he had only been a near champion.

Bing likes to moralize and I was not surprised to have him follow up the tale of the "bad nigger" with one about the "good nigger." The latter it appeared was a uniformed porter stationed at the entrance of a large American steamship line. "I saw a man come out that door the other day," said Bing, "and give that nigger a tip and say, Here's two francs, mister." "The nigger turns to him and grins and says, Don't call me mister; just say, here's two francs, nigger, here's two francs,



## THE ADELPHI

nigger.” “ And do you know,” finished Bing, “ that chap’s worth all kinds of money to-day and everybody likes him.”

Having no knowledge of the gentleman’s financial status I could not contradict Bing’s statement, but I thought the price he was paying for his affluence rather high. On the whole, however, I had a feeling that in the long run he would prove to be a more comfortable companion than the other negro.

Having been through one unfortunate matrimonial experience it seems sad that Bing meets others of that sex who remind him of the disposition of his former wife. It appears that he has a friend who is a Spanish lady. Her husband having returned to Spain for an indefinite length of time, she has apparently consoled herself with the society of Bing. They were watching a parade the other day and Bing, always the gentleman, had provided her with a box to stand on. This box was placed near a lamp-post to which a man was clinging. The man on the lamp-post, to steady himself, had placed one foot on the box on which the lady was standing. Unfortunately he not only placed it on the box but also on the foot of the Spanish lady. From what I could judge that individual had complained not only shrilly but also with invectives. The gentleman of the lamp-post had then merely remarked, “ Ah, a lady of the boulevards.”

There must have been something about this remark that further irritated the lady, for her hot Spanish blood had been aroused and she had hit him over the head with her handbag. A crowd had gathered and the participants of the quarrel had withdrawn. All the way home the Spanish lady had berated Bing because he had not hit the man of the lamp-post. She had called him a coward many times. “ Do you know,” Bing told me, “ it was just the way my ex-wife used to talk, she’d get into a row and then ball me out for not hitting the

## THREE MEN

guy.” “ Why if I had hit that guy on the lamp-post them French would have torn me to pieces.”

And yet I know that Bing knocked out a man who shortly afterwards became champion and who ever afterwards refused to meet him. What did this fear of women, fear of negroes, and fear of mobs signify? Did it mean that after all none of us are without fears? And as Bing violently attempted to rub away a portion of my increasing waist line I realized that the fear of being fat had chilled my heart.—RICHARD DYER.

### *The Minor Poet as Lecturer*

I could never, despite the encouragement of supposedly fastidious critics, find much pleasure in his verses. They lacked, I thought, both clarity and colour, and their emotion, like its expression, was wholly conventional; their sole merit lay in a certain vigour of line and rhyme, a quality which together with a constant wilful obscurity, assured me that the author must be still young. The promise of these poems, I told myself, like their faults—their egotism, their repeated discovery of the commonplace—was the promise of youth; youth alone could carry them off successfully.

So that when he, as lecturer now, stood before me for the first time, my primary feeling was one of amazement at the gulf between the conception and the reality; I tried to believe that some mistake had been made. I had imagined him as a (probably) good-looking young man, asserting himself as poet with a touch of arrogance, still boy enough to believe that if the world did not care for his verses it was the world's loss more than his. He was, instead, almost pathetically elderly, and his long thin frame seemed incapable of vigour; his eyes, magnified possibly by his gold-rimmed spectacles—they sat his small pinched nose a little askew—were mild and amiable and apologetic. His shoulders were rounded,

## THE ADELPHI

the long neck and small head almost fleshless ; his height even, owing to his extreme thinness, lacked any element of impressiveness and, instead, became absurd. He was clothed in black, a rusty black relieved only by a grey tie which seemed, like his grey moustache, like the greying touches in his dark hair, rather a fading than a deliberate difference.

He read his lecture from beginning to end, making no attempt to conceal the fact, at times bending short-sightedly over the papers on the table till the slight baldness at the back of his head was revealed. But mostly he stood upright, severe in his tight high-buttoned coat, so severe that one saw with surprise how loosely and irrelevantly, beneath the table, his long legs crossed and uncrossed. At first he read carefully and with a clear articulation ; at certain words his lips drew back over his large teeth, yellow like a horse's. As he proceeded his pronounciation grew less certain, and, particularly when he was quoting from " the poets," his enthusiasm swayed him from side to side like a frail tree in a high and gusty wind and he would wave a stiff gesticulating hand, a hand ugly with swollen knuckles and veins. Then he would pause to defer to his audience—" If it will not tire you . . . if you will bear with me. . . ."

He had, it became apparent, nothing to tell anyone who knew even the alphabet of the subject ; his facts were all known commonly, and the greater part of his lecture consisted of quotation in amplification or illustration of those facts. His generalizations, when they were not obvious, were absurd, for he seemed to have a number of indefatigable hobby-horses which had only to be mounted to gallop him away to utterly false conclusions. The exact nature of these steeds was never clearly defined ; their rider, one felt, had only the vaguest conceptions. It became necessary to remind oneself that this man was represented to us as a poet.



## THREE MEN

Above all things I had expected from a poet a certain critical faculty, a certain precision and fastidiousness in the choice and use of words, in the expression of a certain definite meaning. He had nothing of all this ; only an appreciation which he could not define, a belief he had not resolved, a hope he could not fulfil. It seemed incredibly wrong and foolish, immoral almost, that so poor a thing should be sent about the country lecturing with such a pretence of authority upon subjects beyond the grasp of his power of expression.

And then, quite suddenly and inexplicably, I began to like him. He, personally, appealed to me in his thin austerity ; he was so amiable and so anxious to please and so incompetent, he loved his subject and he could say nothing worthy of it, he meant so well and he did so badly. There was, I was sure, no touch of vice or even of intolerance in him, the worst of his faults a temperamental negativeness ; he had such vast enthusiasm for poetry, for the people, for education, for everything that was right and just—he wanted to do so much, he had the power to do so little. He seemed to me like a man striving to smash open a prison gate with an axe of indiarubber. I found him—without any intended touch of patronage, without any reference whatsoever to my own capacities—extraordinarily pitiful.

But it would be impossible for me to return to his verses now.—GEOFFREY H. WELLS.

### *Clatworthy*

SEEING Clatworthy in Angel Court after all these years is rather a feat. The honours, if any, are about equal. To Clatworthy a cake of size is due for being caught still running round for cheques after two decades in the City. Stock jobber's cheques, in sooth ! As for me—mine was a timely shot of memory. I have a vermilion-



## THE ADELPHI

and-gold edition of "*The Ingoldsby Legends*" in very much the same condition as I found Clatworthy. When the children have quite finished with that book I shall know it again I hope—with surprising suddenness.

Never mind what my business was at the moment. Perhaps I felt as out-of-place in Angel Court as Clatworthy ought to have felt. I wish he could realize his misfit: but with him it has become root rather than routine. I was "a foreigner in Temple Gardens," awed in freshness, with the great advantage over Clatworthy that I had the leisure to take thought. The byways of Throgmorton Street on Pay Days fret with footsteps of youth in a sort of scared preoccupation, having a lot to do in a short space of time. They all go home a little earlier on Pay Days. The strain of estimating life by results reaches too fine a point after hearing that all is safely cleared at the bank. Besides, the contending racket of Settlement is terrific. Clatworthy would be a useful fellow at collecting cheques. Anyone paying *his* firm one hundred pounds short could be sure of a chatty enlightenment on the subject in two senses. He had charm of expression where it was least wanted, but never when it was expected of him. He talked and held his tongue in the wrong places. In the other sense he knew the business backwards, and might come away with the disputed hundred without references. A triumphant time-saver, he could not see that he was wasting his own. If Clatworthy could for once talk as brightly to his employer at unexpected moments as he did in office carte and tierce—— But those were his dumb periods. These and his appearance were against him, even in cheap reach-me-downs. Barter was too-too everything to the owner of that wistful countenance. Yet, while barter remains the adventure it is, much more could be made of—and out of—Clatworthy. He is worth what he accepts—to a penny. He will remain, despite opportunity, for ever what he is.

## THREE MEN

Twenty years hence, a spirit of contentment and a collector of cheques, it seems I could waylay him on any given Pay Day.

My concern for the man was born with my instant recognition as we passed. I believe he saw me first—and knew me. His voluble surprise was a full minute or years too late—an assumption foreign to him. And is it servitude that tricks a man out of his manner of speech? In his haste, I could see he was nervous, but—he would have passed on! Not unruffled, I should think, after our ancient intimate association! My concern for the man, I say, was instant. It was the wrong end of the City for such forlorn garments as he wore, such shoddy footwear. Hatless in a hatless crowd, his hair flew in all directions. He had been up and downstairs, in and out of offices in the prevailing public wake, and I had surprised my vermilion-and-gold Clatworthy of old perspiring and so set upon chasing other people's cheques that our meeting was an unwelcome incident. For aught I know, that occupation was important and pressing; it was not his matter but his manner that set me a teaser in contrast. Where was the leisurely debonair Clatworthy? Hurry was as foreign to him as his assumption of surprise. Flurry was his pet prejudice in days when he would stroll up to a wicket and stem an adverse situation. Was this the Clatworthy who annoyed an effete Examiner with "a certain literary precocity"? And was it possible that this nervous, unkempt cheque collector kept, stored in the same brain-cells, the memory of an incisive essay on "The Virtue of Patience"?

Our converse was bald but revealing.

"You seem busy," I said, looking at the long list of names he showed me.

"You're right—first time! There's been a lot doing this Account. And I'm not the only one. There

## THE ADELPHI

are six other fellows and two messenger boys with lists like this."

"Have you had lunch?"

"In the office. Sandwiches—and stuff."

"You mean 'and beer,' I suppose?"

"No time for a considered feed on Pay Days. All these cheques have to be accounted for and paid in before half-past three."

"Well, how about this evening?"

"I'm meeting the wife in Green Park. It's beautiful in Green Park these evenings."

"I didn't know you were married."

"I've been married six years. Got a boy five years old." He paused and we searched each other's eyes for five seconds. In that look, I was appalled at the distance which had come between us. Perhaps he felt this, for he tore off a corner of his list paper and gave it to me.

"Our telephone number. Any time you'd like to ring me up, you know! Glad to have seen you!" And he was off into the next building—without shaking hands.

That lingering, smiling courtesy of his I must somehow reclaim. But Clatworthy is, after all, of the sort who get into a rut by accident and follow it—a besetting capability and far harder to bear than the short sharp struggle that lifts to the honest green turf. Someone ought to guide these Clatworthys!

I am reserving a mental note of recognition for Life itself in the honours of bringing us together. Even in Angel Court, Life sets the stage for these things, playing the fairy—or the deuce—with men.—JOHN THORNTON.

# THE ANCIENT TRACK

By M. Robinson

*" 'Tis mute, the word they went to hear on high Dodona  
mountain."*

ANTLIKE, we crawl on the world, intent on our own concerns : to us so vast, to the sun that lights us on our way so infinitely small. Each a pin-point of colour in the intricate design, we see very little beyond that pin-point ; meanwhile the shifting, changing pattern flows around and with us, in stately curves, and colours rich beyond our imagining. It is well at times to withdraw from the physical body, and on the wings of the mind to fly to a distance, there to turn and look out at the limitless horizon. Then, as the whirling planets rush past us, we see our own, a little spinning ball, go by ; no longer so fast that it cannot be moved, but in a state of flux. Continents rise above the waters, and float there for a little space, to be submerged again. And so with the human procession ; only here the continents are the great movements in religion, art, and philosophy, dawning and setting to rise again elsewhere ; their mountain peaks the leaders of human thought. And then, for all their differences, we see that throughout there is a unifying principle. Diverse as they may appear, they are so only in their process ; one desire moves them all, and that is a longing to escape from the consuming restlessness that shakes individual man, even as it shakes universes in the making ; and to find a passage to the land of perpetual calms that, somewhere, must lie.

Alas, neither religion, nor art, nor philosophy can place in our hands a sure map for that dark and difficult journey ; that painful pilgrimage Everyman must tread



## THE ADELPHI

solitary, as solitary he lives and dies. No man can guide another ; at most he can say ; “ That treacherous river is not impassable, since I have forded it ; I fought my way across the frozen passes ; and from yonder height I caught a fleeting glimpse of the promised land.” And this must be my apology.

My earliest life was a continual conflict ; myself, though hardly conscious of it, the battle-ground. On the one hand it had ideal surroundings ; until I was eight years old I lived almost entirely amongst mountains of eternal snow, where beauty and austerity in nature walk hand in hand through the solitudes, Every child of that age is awake only to the physical consciousness ; but that unvarying majesty of the mountains has its appeal, like Shakespeare, to every stage of consciousness, and it filled me even then with ecstasy and awe. In array against these influences stood the somewhat stern religion in which I was brought up. I was taught to believe in a God who was infinite wisdom, power and love ; yet everywhere inconsistencies were apparent. He could not control the world of his own making ; and his justice seemed to be capricious and at times vindictive. The discrepancy made itself clear to me even at that early age. I proudly asserted on one occasion that I could do anything, even to making some past event never to have happened ; I was rebuked for frivolous untruthfulness. Again I made the assertion, and again I was rebuked, yet more sternly. Then with proud assurance I was prepared to prove my statement : God could do anything, and moreover never failed to fulfil a request ; so that I need only ask him to expunge the event in question, and it would cease to have been. And then I was told that not even God himself could undo what had already been done ; the record stood for eternity. And now, where had vanished infinite power ? My faith in the dogmas was shaken for the first time.

## THE ANCIENT TRACK

School-time followed ; still all was physical consciousness. I remember being stirred to the depths of my being by the sudden revelation of the winter sun, a red ball behind barren branches that barred the sky. And as far back as I can remember poetry and music stirred me in a similar way, though pictures for some reason did not. But now, with the beginning of adolescence, my mind began to wake. I found myself standing before a curtain, and knew that I must find out what lay behind it if peace were to be found. The knowledge of another consciousness, the intellectual, began to stir within me, and I struggled with might and main to penetrate the physical envelope and to find out what lay beyond. It was a time of volcanic disturbances, and I was miserable. Unpopular with my fellows, and still more unpopular with myself, I also found those in authority rebuking me (with perfect justice, since with youthful arrogance the whole horizon for me was filled with myself), for a colossal conceit. Perhaps they handled me wrongly too, to some extent. Brought up in the solitude of the mountains, such solitude was now denied to me ; solitude either of mind or of body was made impossible by the fact that at school every minute had its place and its occupation ; and at home, with plenty of bodily freedom, my soul was guarded with ever increasing watchfulness and anxiety. Harried on every side ; at home deprived of mental freedom, unable to adapt myself at school, I cried with Patrick Henry : " Give me liberty or give me death." But neither came my way. The worst was that my troubles were not augmented by wanton cruelty, but by the very intensity of the affection and sense of duty of those who ruled my life. At last I realized that it was useless to struggle against fate ; I must settle down to a barren level of misery until the advance of years brought release. Meanwhile I preserved as far as possible an equable and docile surface, while below, the turmoil of

## THE ADELPHI

my mind surged and heaved, and I desperately clutched at every straw that might bring peace or enlightenment.

Religion went through the usual stages ; the pieces of the puzzle failed to fit, but the shadow of authority still lay strong on my mind, and I bowed to it. Meanwhile I grew older and with every month entered more fully into the mental consciousness. One incident is typical. At school I was taken with others to see an exhibition of pictures by some modern painter. They meant nothing to me, and I came away empty as I went, feeling nothing beyond an ignorant contempt for the crude shade of green used by the painter to indicate grass in sunlight under trees. But later, as we discussed the paintings, I put forward my sense of this absurdity ; and one of us said that it had appeared so to her too, at the time ; but that later, walking in the woods, she had studied the question, and had found to her amazement that it was as he had expressed it, and that there was in fact something in the colour of grass of which she had hitherto been unconscious. I was out in the woods myself that afternoon, and I, too, looked ; and I, too, found that he was right and I was wrong. In fact, for the first time I looked at the world with my mind as well as with my eyes.

And now school was over, and the question of earning a living arose. It was decided that I should, as a first step, read for a degree ; and as the older universities were beyond what my family could afford, I went to a very modern University College, where sexes and classes of society were both equally mixed.

To that place I can never be sufficiently grateful. Here for the first time I was treated as a human being. There is a tendency to depreciate these new schools as being raw and lacking in tradition. But in this one at any rate I found that courteous patience of age towards youth that serves better than anything else to form minds and manners in the melting pot. When a



## THE ANCIENT TRACK

professor of obvious learning actually asked a student his opinion of a difficult passage, I was incredulous ; it must be sarcasm ; and then it slowly burst upon me that the wise have no need for sarcasm ; that it is only the neophyte who has no more to learn ; and that the professor knew so much that he knew that even the opinion of a callow student might throw fresh light on an ancient problem. At school I had grown accustomed to being treated as a fool, even by people who were obviously my inferiors in intelligence if not in knowledge. Now we were treated with a tolerant deference ; amongst us there might be a Shakespeare. It was a new experience, and it completed my conquest of the mental consciousness—of my own, that is, and not of mental consciousness in general. There is a limit to the amount of water that a bucket will hold.

By this time—my first year at college—I had, in my own mind, definitely taken the step of throwing off my childhood's religion. If God there were, he must be wiser and more patient than I ; and the God in whom I had been taught to believe was neither. But so far there was nothing to take its place. I read copiously, in the hope of discovering something ; Myers's *Human Personality* in particular gave me furiously to think. I had long been aware of some overseeing power that let me know without mistake what my next step in any direction ought to be ; but what it was I did not know. Now I learned that it was my under-mind directing me ; and I began to think that the world held no mysteries at all. At the same time I felt the need of something larger than this ; if my unseen mentor turned out to be only my own mind, or part of the general mind, I still needed something stronger, more stable, on which to lean. My whole being was in a tumult.

My last year at college was the first of the war ; and



## THE ADELPHI

it completed my overthrow. Colossal wrongs ranged themselves, and right seemed to melt away in littleness. People called the men who were fighting and dying "heroes." But to me, heroes or no, it was the men with whom I had walked and talked in youthful light-heartedness who were suddenly torn from life; those of my own age, and in my own family. Blow after blow fell; the world was shattered; justice and reason had left the universe. I had nothing to sustain me; and, far more shattering than my own unimportant griefs, the whole agonized world seemed to have nothing left to which it might cling. Sometimes in my despair I contemplated throwing reason overboard and returning blindly to the old creeds. But faith was gone, and I could not afford to let my honesty, which seemed to be all that remained, go too.

About the second year of the war, I went abroad. The how and why are irrelevant. Although in one sense my mind was still in a state of turmoil, my inward monitor, which had insisted on my going with a vehemence that overthrew all obstacles, also insisted that the time had come to wait patiently for a revelation that was even now on the way. I waited; it would have been harder but that I lived in a crowded world of new sights and experiences.

All this time I was becoming increasingly aware of a certain fact. There *did* exist what the Bible described as "a peace which passeth all understanding"; and there were people who had attained it, and who walked thenceforth "with inward glory crowned." I had first realized this in my college town, where there was a large Quaker community. I often went on Sundays to the Friends' Meeting House, and there experienced that "Quaker Silence," which so impressed Charles Lamb. It calmed me, too, for the moment; but instinct told me that this was not my rest. In the East I met a woman, a Parsi, from whom it shone gloriously, so

## THE ANCIENT TRACK

that although I never spoke to her, and saw her only once, her face remains with me to this day. I also came across the same thing in one or two Christian Scientists; but in all these cases I felt that though such formal religions might suit some people, their finality and their mutual exclusions destroyed their value for me.

At last, after several years, when the world was beginning to lean back towards its normal course, I was again uprooted, and this time found myself in one of the more remote colonies.

I had looked forward without fear to the prospect of being my own general servant after the colonial fashion, though I had never done work of that kind before. There was in me no distaste for manual toil to be overcome, and there was no reason to suppose that I should fail to settle down without discomfort to washing, cooking, and sweeping. But in a very short time I discovered that here was not only no hardship, but a tremendous gain. To my surprise I found that for the first time in my life I had time to think. Up to that period, without realizing it, I had suffered from mental indigestion. I had read books on books and had imagined that I had thought about them; but it had been something very different from the slow, unhurrying meditation that I could now indulge in while my hands were busy. I had burst out of the physical envelope into the mental consciousness with considerable disturbance, which had continued long after; now I filtered through the mental envelope into the spiritual consciousness without pain, but with that gradual and balanced rhythm that marks the year changing through the seasons. Day after day I pondered as to the basis of that peace which I so ardently desired. The good things of life, materially as mentally, seemed on the one hand to be divided with hopeless unfairness; on the other there must be some reason for that sense of

## THE ADELPHI

justice and equality which is so strong in man. How were these facts to be reconciled? There could be only one explanation : those things must be things that did not matter ; there was something else that did matter, and it must be within the reach of everybody, rich or poor, ignorant or learned. Now I had something to go upon, since I had met, in books and art and real life, with people who had acquired it—at least, who had acquired something beside which the rest of the world became a shadow. Socrates had found it in philosophy ; the martyr Stephen had found it in religion, so that even as they stoned him his enemies “ saw his face as it had been the face of an angel ” ; Shakespeare attained it, and thenceforth saw the solid globe to be “ such stuff as dreams are made on ” ; Michael Angelo had it, and Popes bowed before him ; Columbus had it, and it led him through all difficulties to America. Clearly, religion, art and all the rest were not the thing itself ; but they all served as a means by which it could be attained ; and art, at its highest, managed in some measure to express it. And all this while the spiritual significance of the high mountains at the head of our narrow valley ; and the great tree-ferns in the bush ; and the clear air ; and the running brooks on the hillside—was falling, very softly, like snow upon my soul. I can point to no sudden moment of illumination ; but gradually as spring the world was transformed, and I became aware that I, too, had found the secret security. Two years have passed since then ; but for me time has stood still. I live in time no longer ; I roam eternity.

So much for the process ; but the proof must after all lie in the result. “ What,” the world naturally asks, “ is the effect upon your life? Does this new knowledge really help you to live? ” It is significant that this question at first found me inclined to say “ I cannot tell yet—it has not had to stand any strain.” And yet, when I think it over, the last two years have been



## THE ANCIENT TRACK

stormy enough, with at least two serious financial crises. In the first case, as months passed, and the looked-for remittance never came, and money grew short, I can truthfully say I remained indifferent. Here was my vast world a mere speck of cosmic dust, and could it matter what happened to me, a creeping, tiny creature upon it? I felt that I could not concern myself with such a triviality. This sounds an affectation, but it is the literal truth. The other case was harder, in that it was brought about by human dishonesty where there had been trust. One black night on this occasion there was; but after that the six weeks of suspense that followed were a time of unbroken peace and calm.

However, most of us, like Mrs. Gaskell's Cynthia, are moral kangaroos, and find it easier to rise to occasional heights of heroism, than to sustain a daily level of unobtrusive goodness. It is the every-day frame of mind, the question of unfailing content with shadow as with light, that must be the real test. I think it stands. My life would seem dull to some people; getting up before six to cook breakfast, the day spent in cooking, washing-up, making beds, scrubbing floors, chopping wood, digging, and so on, with little leisure and less society. I am supremely happy. A clear light shining does away with the weight of labour and makes it a daily discovery, a constant new delight. Further, whereas both at the stage of physical and of mental consciousness I was obsessed with a desire to know what happens to us at death, that curiosity has now altogether left me. I walk already in the eternal pathways; what could it profit me further to know exactly what will happen to me and those I care for when we shall finally break out of the physical envelope? They are secure as I am, whether they know it or not. It may be that later we shall throw off the intellectual covering, and then the spiritual, impersonal then, to dissolve into the impersonal whole. But that



## THE ADELPHI

is not our present concern. And last, best gift of all, this new light fills the whole world around. Trees, birds, beasts, flowers, even snakes and insects are not merely my brothers ; they are I, and I they. At times the dividing line comes so near to vanishing that it is a distinct shock to find oneself after all still enclosed in a human form. Autumn, once to me in blindness a season of inexpressible melancholy, is now a time of still brooding, awaiting certainty. I *feel* what before I only *knew* with my mind : that it is an essential part of the eternal cycle revolving through time with its own unaltering rhythm.

Everywhere this new spiritual consciousness flows in to explain and to reveal. You enter a third-class railway carriage ; two youths in a corner are giggling over *Tit-Bits* ; opposite sits a drab woman who looks as if her chief distraction were the weekly meeting of the Band of Hope. The light falls ; the rays shift, and are still. That joke to you would be the weariest commonplace ; to them it is exquisite humour. The spirit of exquisite humour distils in their laughter, and you laugh with them. The clothes that drab spinster wears are dreary enough ; yet she bought them once in a glow of innocent excitement ; they seemed beautiful to her then ; they become so to you, too, with the spiritual beauty of that flying moment that can never die. The brave new world is yours, since you have found the truth, and the truth has made you free.

# THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

MAX BEERBOHM AS PROPHET.—As most people interested in the theatre know, Max Beerbohm, besides being a brilliant caricaturist, parodist, and essayist, was one of our finest dramatic critics during the few years he practised. It is not often that the English theatre is fortunate enough to receive the consistent attention of a cultivated mind as wise and as witty as Beerbohm's. When it does receive this attention it cannot be accused of taking much notice of it. Despite, however, the theatre's lack of interest in, even positive contempt for, the comparatively few men of intelligence who have bothered themselves with it (few compared to the number who have devoted themselves to the study of the other arts), the strictures and more particularly the smiles of a G. H. Lewes, a Bernard Shaw, a Max Beerbohm, do have some effect. There were other critics of course during and between the reigns of these three men; but this brilliant trio most particularly benefited the drama by directing the gaze of intelligent and artistic people, whose interest had been alienated by the general worthlessness, vulgarity, and inanity of London theatrical productions, to the appalling state into which the English theatre had fallen; and by making these people realise the potential beauty and value of the stage.

For several years, in the pages of the "Saturday Review," "Max" tapped the current drama with his delicate quill, and listened with great disapproval to the hollow sounds that came from it. Without raising his voice, often with a quite disdainful smile, but always sincerely and truthfully, "Max" analyzed some hundreds of London productions; and inevitably, as must any man of taste have done, in most cases he turned down his thumb. But he did not merely turn down his thumb. With admirable patience he pointed

## THE ADELPHI

out the salient faults and mistakes of the managers and playwrights which were responsible for the degradation of the theatre ; he diagnosed the many diseases which were afflicting and which still afflict the stage, and offered many suggestions as means of curing them ; suggestions which, whenever they have been followed, have proved remedial.

Because of his inimitable manner, " Max " was often accused of flippancy, as, in his time, was G. H. Lewes. He sometimes frolicked up and down the page : but in these moments the sensible will only find a man who, never liable to hallelujahs or loud-voiced comminations, sometimes tried to save himself from madness by treating the tenth consecutive bad play as a joke. But always his fundamental sincerity is obvious. Several things he was always having to say, unfortunately, would still have to say were he still writing about the theatre, though the standard of plays is undoubtedly higher to-day. Some of these points may be summarized. Though the theatre is dependent for its existence on the patronage of the multitude, the worst and the best tastes of the people are not the same thing ; but that the majority of theatre managers, like some newspaper owners and publishers, pander to the lowest average of taste, thereby degrading both the stage and the audience. That this policy, together with the unnecessarily elaborate construction of fashionable plays, frightened away most of the best intelligence and artistic talent which felt drawn to the theatre, leaving it to men who, if they devoted to any other kind of writing such intellect and knowledge of life and sense of style as they possess, would fall somewhere between the twentieth and the twenty-fifth rank. That many of the dramatic critics, like the papers in which they write, are men who in no sense are such leaders of public taste as, by their office, they ought to be ; but are content merely to express the opinions of their readers.



## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

That these critics are therefore accessories before and after the crimes against intelligence and culture which are committed daily on the English stage. That audiences, being always eager for the obvious, are always ready to encourage players and dramatists to measure dramatic force rather by its disturbance than by its significance; and that the players and dramatists are much too willing to be blinded to the truth that pregnancy of action is of more importance than its barren effect, however astounding; and therefore that to put a knife into one's pocket may have in it more of drama than putting it into a man.

Many more fine and interesting diagnoses this wise and witty critic made; too many to be summarised here. He pointed out the main directions in which the stage was moving, along which the stage has undoubtedly travelled as if, obediently, it had followed his pointing finger. One of his prophecies I came across the other day, and it is so apt to the moment, has just been fulfilled so nearly to the letter by the knickerbocker production of "Hamlet" at the Kingsway, that his prophetic soul must be quoted at length. He is reviewing H. B. Irving's "Hamlet" at the Adelphi, April, 1905 :—

" . . . In the past twenty years or so, the tendency in performing 'Hamlet' has been, ever more and more, to present a sensible, realistic modern drama of psychology, and to let the poetry shift for itself. The Ghost, as being a sort of detached figure, is still allowed to drag poetry in, speaking his lines sonorously and with rhythm. But the days of his privilege are surely numbered. . . . Perhaps the First Player will always be allowed to recite rhythmically and sonorously the turgid lines of 'Aeneas' tale to Dido'—just to show us how foolish a thing poetry is, and what fools the old actors were, and how well we are rid of them. And, maybe, one or two benighted souls in the audience will clutch fondly at the one straw not blown away by the tempest of modernity. . . . Queen Gertrude talks in an easy conversational style, exactly as though she were

## THE ADELPHI

gossiping across a teacup . . . poetry, tragedy, queenliness are quite out of it. . . . One would not be surprised if, at any moment, Ophelia entered springing off a bicycle. . . ."

Indeed most of this long notice might be used as a criticism of the Kingsway production. But, to paraphrase some of it, for the sake of brevity : This passion for naturalness leads to sheer nonsense in those places where Shakespeare allows himself, to our eternal gain, to become purely poetical. Shakespeare did not intend that Ophelia's mad scenes should be painful. They are put in, as is the Queen's account of Ophelia's death, just for beauty's sake. What could be more absurd than to hear an agonised lady talking about "cornflowers, nettles, and long purples," with tragic gasps and violent gestures of woe? But elsewhere the realistic method merely deprives the play of beauty and tragic dignity. "Just because," concludes Max, "I might at any corner collide with this Hamlet, I cannot claim this Hamlet as ideal—cannot even accept it as satisfactory. . . . A Hamlet who breaks up his sentences into prose, with no reference at all to their rhythm, a Hamlet, in fact, without style—this is not the Hamlet for me. I crave, first of all, for the beauty which Mr. Irving sacrifices to exact realism. Next to that, I crave the tone of tragedy. . . . In the final scene he behaves just like any other young man in a fencing club. We cannot believe that he and all those other persons are going to die. Our æsthetic sense of tragedy is banished, and consequently, the various deaths, when they occur, seem violently out of place, seem absurd. In 1924, perhaps, these deaths will be omitted, and the whole play trimmed into a comedy. Modern audiences shrink from tragedy. One of the reasons for the great popularity of Mr. Forbes Robertson's Hamlet was that he so notably brightened up the play. Mr. Irving's Hamlet is as much brighter

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

as it is less beautiful than Mr. Forbes Robertson's. I am sure that in 1924 the last vestiges of gloom will have been swept out of Elsinore. . . ."

Is not this a prophecy fulfilled almost to the letter and to time? Yes; I think that with perfect propriety we may hand "Max" a golden aureole, what time we bow our foreheads in the dust.—JOHN SHAND.

A NOVEL OF JEWRY.—Mr. Louis Golding's *Day of Atonement* (Chatto & Windus, 7s. 6d. net) is a remarkable novel. It is true that its style is a little too feverish (the general pulse of it is galloping), the subject-matter sometimes so condensed and the transitions so sudden that, now and again, one gets the impression of a narrative that is a little skippy or disconnected. Style and matter, perhaps, are not sufficiently well blended. Moreover, Mr. Golding, at times, figures rather too prominently as a sort of glorified Max Pemberton (I refer to the *manner* of his writing); while the Epilogue reveals showy self-conscious work that bears about as much relation to actual fine writing as the porter-artist's craft (admirable though this may be) to the masterpieces in the National Gallery. And (to continue the quest of flies in the pot of jam) he even makes use of the cheapest of cheap stock phrases such as "for all the world like." But the novel at its best (and its best is very frequent) will induce a reader to think of Dostoevski and D. H. Lawrence; and even (despite its tendency to plunge into hectic sensationalism) of Thomas Hardy. Against all adverse criticism the book stands on its own legs as an individual and original piece of work. And it is passionately written, and full of the broodings and clear-cut consciousness of a keenly sensitive and thoughtful mind.

Full of light were these days that followed, and like water that has found level meadows after steep adventures in the gaunt, craggy places. Luminous and passionless days. As



## THE ADELPHI

if there is light without passion, passion without light. Yet there is a passion which flares suddenly like a lighted brand, and how disastrously. There is a passion which fills the sky with a sweet, gradual light, like the loveliness preceding the moon throughout the wide heavens whilst there is no moon.

Divested of its peacock clothing and steeplechase tactics there are dozens of telling passages in it, as fine as that. It is written by a poet (a true poet) and it has a soul.

The story is about a young, scholarly Jew and his wife, and about the sorrows, virtues, and sins of the Jews—first in Russia, afterwards in an English North Country factory town. The delineation and development of character of the woman Leah is really finely done. She is the elemental female of a race, not a common type in herself, but that culmination (perhaps even to distortion) of a common type which manifests itself in certain individuals—strong, unlettered, stupid, fanatical, passionate, chaste, affectionate, exceedingly pious. She does everything by extremes, reacting from the stupidest and uncleanest of desires when a young maiden to the most austere and dismal repentance—even to cutting off her long hair. Mr. Golding, however, makes plain that the morbid intensity of her disposition has something quite lunatic in it. And it is largely the result of many centuries of Aryan thwarting and Christian persecution—that also is shown clear. The book makes copious use of appropriate symbolism, some of it a little violent, but a good deal that is more subtly interwoven.

Nearly everything and everybody in the book is an emblem, attribute, or signpost. Leah is as piteous and terrible a figure as Shylock—and probably as true to life. Finally she murders her sainted Jewish husband because he renounces Judaism and falls in love with Jesus Christ. The son of Reuben rejects both Judaism and Christianity,—Jehovah and Christ, they are each

## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

the same to him, revolting deities exacting excessive ritual, revenge, or martyrdom. Moreover, they make uncompromising fanatics of their followers when these happen to be intense or sincere people. That is how the son sees it. But he cannot live and breathe without a religion, and so (with the evident approval of Mr. Golding) he embraces the religion of Apollo. Actually Mr. Golding is in error; for the religion of Christ, rightly understood, embraces the religion of Apollo without obliterating a single sane feature of it. Moreover, if you are going to rear the temples of Apollo in England's "green and pleasant land" you will have to sweat to do it, be slighted, scorned, and persecuted in its furtherance, perhaps even die at the end—and that is Christianity. Even Apollo has no use for half-hearted and timid followers.

Judaism at any rate has little in common with Christianity, while the religion of Apollo has very much. Mr. Golding knows the Jews intimately, even to their bastard German language called "Yiddish," and he shows them as he knows them, a cliquish, prejudiced, clever, thrifty, and not too pleasant people, pitifully harried and misunderstood, and in their turn pitifully misunderstanding. His novel is packed with the conscience of the uncompromising truth-teller as well as with that of the good artist—though such an assertion is perhaps almost a paradox, for the really good artist, according to his lights, is always an uncompromising truth-teller. Finally, the novel is dedicated, most gallantly and appreciatively dedicated, to that great educationist John Lewis Paton, a headmaster of Manchester Grammar School.—HERBERT E. PALMER.

"TWELFTH NIGHT."—Has the essential difference—as it seems to me—between "Twelfth Night" and all the other comedies of Shakespeare ever been sufficiently emphasised? In the earlier comedies, such

## THE ADELPHI

as "As You Like It" and "Much Ado," you find a world complete in itself, a world where human happiness is felt to be the natural object of desire and where there is nothing but accidental misfortune to disturb the pursuit of it. In these plays the curtain falls on an ending obviously meant to be entirely satisfactory. In "Twelfth Night" the curtain falls on a very different sort of scene: on what is really a beginning, not an ending at all.

"Twelfth Night" opens as an enchanting romantic comedy: Shakespeare's humour, his characterization, his sense of the theatre, his power of pure poetic writing—all these gifts are now fully matured and active in perfect harmony within him. What happens? At first it is Olivia, Orsino, Viola, Sebastian, who are the solid life-like people: the Fool is an elf-like shadow and Malvolio a figure of fun. But by the end of the play the real people are Malvolio, the man who, whatever his weaknesses, has suffered in the dark prison; and the Fool, who is left out of all the marriage ceremonies, is never quite grown up, and yet is the one to hear the wind and the rain. The other people are dissolved into an exquisite unreality; and when, as is sometimes done, they go off the stage with an air of moving to a slow graceful dance you feel that this is exactly right, that the world which seemed so solid in "As You Like It" and "Much Ado" has dissolved into an exquisitely beautiful measure—the measure of youthful joy—now destined to fade, though never to be forgotten, within the to be author's mind. A world of new experience is beginning to darken and sustain his thoughts.

The Fool is left alone on the stage, and I believe that as he sings his queer wandering song the stage should gradually darken, and there might even be a suggestion of the wind and the rain. In some productions, the Fool is shown to be in love with Olivia; and this, again,



## THE CONTRIBUTORS' CLUB

accords with Shakespeare's unconscious purpose, if not with the definite intention of the Fool's love songs. He cannot take the present hour ; Olivia is not for such as he. " Twelfth Night " is Shakespeare's farewell to joy ; the wind and rain on which the curtain falls are the first breath of the storm on the heath, the first invasion of that *something else* which destroys the world of " As You Like It," that other sort of experience which has nothing to do with happiness but which, once felt, has to be followed to the end, perhaps to the complete blackness of physical death, or, if there is enough strength and endurance, to the sea-coast of Bohemia and Prospero's uncharted island. It is on the start of this journey that the curtain of " Twelfth Night " falls, leaving nothing but an approaching sound of wind and rain and the figure of the Fool, the man of childlike mind.—C. B. DAVY.

# THE WISDOM OF TCHEHOV

By The Journeyman

TCHEHOV is coming into his own in this country. *The Cherry Orchard* has been a success : now we are promised *The Sea-Gull*. Previous to this last successful attempt to lodge *The Cherry Orchard* in London, I remember two performances—one before the war, the other in 1920 : and I have a vivid memory of the smiles of polite incomprehension and the sniggers of downright misunderstanding with which it was greeted on both occasions. I was indignant, furious, mortally outraged. Ever since the day when I first read *The Cherry Orchard* in George Calderon's translation—peace be to his shade in the fields of Elysium : he deserved well of the republic for that alone—it had become an infinitely precious thing to me—the most perfect creation of beauty these modern times could show. I was too young to understand its *wisdom* ; but its beauty I did not mistake. And I hated, with the deadly hatred of youthful idealism, the smilers and the sniggerers. If I remember rightly, on the first performance there was not one good word said for the play in all the London Press.

By 1920, things had changed a little. Mr. Walkley was still positive it was nonsense ; Mr. Baughan that it was rubbish. But the wind was veering. The general attitude was not unlike that taken by Mr. Shaw towards the play in the preface to *Heartbreak House*, which has always seemed to me one of the most convincing proofs that Mr. Shaw is insensible to that highest significance of literature which can be vaguely called “ poetic.” In

## THE WISDOM OF TCHEHOV

*The Cherry Orchard* Tchegov, according to Mr. Shaw, was holding up to exquisite ridicule a generation of wasters; and he himself proceeded, in *Heartbreak House*, to follow what he conceived to be Tchegov's example. It was a queer piece of self-revelation. I am afraid Mr. Shaw is not the man to understand a wisdom greater than his own.

Perhaps, if Mr. Shaw had read Tchegov's letters, he would have come to a different conclusion concerning Tchegov's play. And yet, on second thoughts, I doubt it. For Tchegov's letters are of one piece with the rest of his writings. If you miss the beauty of the stories, you will be blind to the wisdom of the letters. (There is, incidentally, no back-stairs way to the understanding of a real author: his letters and confessions can only corroborate what you find in his actual creation. It is a great mistake to imagine that if we had a few trunks-full of Shakespeare's private correspondence, we should understand his plays any better than we do. Shakespeare could not have explained *Macbeth* or *Antony*. Literary creations of that order are their own sole explanation; that is why they are great.) Still—to return to Tchegov—a passage from his letters like the following might have suggested to Mr. Shaw that he was on the wrong track in supposing that Tchegov had the faintest interest in holding wasters up to ridicule.

We are staying in Nice on the sea-front (he wrote to his brother Mihail). The sun is shining, it is warm, green and fragrant, but windy. An hour's journey from Nice is the famous Monaco. There is Monte Carlo, where roulette is played. Imagine the rooms of the Hall of Nobility but handsomer, loftier and larger. There are big tables, and on the tables roulette—which I will describe to you when I get home. The day before yesterday I went there, played and lost. The game is fearfully fascinating. After losing, Suvorin *fil*s and I fell to thinking it over, and thought out a system which would ensure one's winning. We went yesterday, taking 500 francs each; at the first turn I won two gold pieces, then again and again; my waistcoat pockets bulged with gold. I had in hand French money even



## THE ADELPHI

of the year 1808, as well as Belgian, Italian, Greek and Austrian coins. . . . I have never before seen so much gold and silver. I began playing at five o'clock, and by ten I had not a single franc in my pocket, and the only thing left me was the satisfaction of knowing that I had my return ticket to Nice. So there it is, my friends! You will say, of course: "What a mean thing to do! We are so poor, while out there he plays roulette." Perfectly just, and I give you permission to slay me. But I personally am very pleased with myself. Anyway, now I can tell my grandchildren that I have played roulette, and know the feeling that is excited by gambling.

Tchegov was no reformer in Mr. Shaw's sense; and the Tchegov that Mr. Shaw sees is a Tchegov after his own image, which is not the reality at all. Tchegov had no belief in reform; like all wise men, he was a conservative. All men with a touch of the deeper vision are, fundamentally, conservative: from Jesus with his "Render unto Cæsar" to Shakespeare with his acceptance of royal authority. Yet Tchegov, slight and frail, undertook a fearful journey across Siberia (before the days of the railway) to report to the world upon the horrible conditions of the criminals on Sakhalin. Tchegov, at any time, would have given up his life for the love of his fellowmen. But his was a wise love; it knew well that though all men are equal in the sight of God, there is diversity of gifts, and God's equality will never be attained save by the recognition of each individual man that he has his allotted part to play in the great scheme of things.

Oh, the man was wise, and with a wisdom we are very far from yet. Listen to him, when he was thirty:

It is essential in this world to be indifferent. Only those who are indifferent are able to see things clearly, to be just, and to work. Of course I am only speaking of intelligent people of fine natures: the empty and the selfish are indifferent enough anyway.

Cold comfort, you may say. Then you have still much to learn. The wise man's indifference is a positive thing: to him nothing matters, because everything

## THE ADELPHI

matters. But indeed there is no explaining it. The wise man becomes, for himself, a part of nature ; his rebellious consciousness sinks back into harmony with that from which it sprang. But this sinking is a great soaring. He knows then that his business is not to cry to heaven, but to get on with his job. It may be a very little job, but the universe depends upon his doing it. True indifference is reintegration into unity.

Tchegov's letters, for those who know how to read them, contain the deepest wisdom of the ages expressed in the language of to-day. Every time that I come back to them, with a few more years' or a few more months' experience between me and my last reading, I find more and more of the simplicity of the profoundest truth in them ; and I am glad with all my heart that when they first appeared in English I, in reviewing them, spoke more truth than I knew and publicly declared them to be the letters of "the greatest hero of our time." That, and nothing less, was Anton Tchegov. He is *our* co-eval and spokesman, *our* artist ; and the best of us are still like children beside him.

Certain of his brief sentences have stood by me like words of Scripture. Some sound veritably like words of Scripture : "And all things are forgiven, and it would be strange not to forgive." From that sentence I first caught a Pisgah-sight of the land of true attainment. I have lived with it, and it has lived with me, for many years : it has never failed me yet, and I do not think it ever will. Others are less obviously radiant with the beauty that is truth ; they are oddly unobtrusive ; yet they have meant the world to me. "We are concerned with pluses alone." Six commonplace words, yet they have the secret of what men miscall happiness within them. I would give much to have written them, more to have had the power always to live up to them. And again :

## THE WISDOM OF TCHEHOV

Pharisaism, stupidity and despotism reign not in bourgeois houses and prisons alone. I see them in science, in literature, in the younger generation. . . . That is why I have no preference either for gendarmes, or for butchers, or for scientists, or for writers, or for the younger generation. I regard trade-marks and labels as a superstition. My holy of holies is the human body, health, intelligence, talent, inspiration, love and the most absolute freedom—freedom from violence and lying, whatever forms they may take.

“Absolute freedom”—you see what that cant phrase means to a wise man : freedom *in himself* from violence and lying. It is the only freedom worth having, and it is more worth than all the riches in the world. And it was Tchegov’s true freedom, painfully won, that gave him the power continually to be saying true things. Here is one that I never forget.

Alas ! I shall never be a Tolstoyan. In women I love beauty before all things ; and in the history of mankind, culture, expressed in carpets, spring-carriages, and keenness of wit. Ach ! To make haste and become an old man and sit at a big table. . . .

No one loved and admired Tolstoy more than Tchegov ; but Tchegov saw that even Tolstoy had not won freedom.

Something in me protests : reason and justice tell me : that in the electricity and heat of love for man there is something greater than chastity and abstinence from meat. War is an evil, and legal justice is an evil, but it does not follow from that that I ought to wear bark shoes and sleep on the stove with the labourer and so on and so on. . . .

No, that was not the way for Tchegov ; and it is not the way for us. There are no rules : the only thing that matters is that each man should come to his freedom by his own way. “I believe in individual people,” he said, “I see salvation in individual personalities, scattered all over Russia—educated people or peasants : they have strength, though they are few.”

That is the kind of wisdom I believe in ; and that is



## THE ADELPHI

the kind of expression of wisdom in which I believe. I don't like the wisdom of clever men—not because I have any objection to cleverness in itself, but simply because cleverness is never wise. It is too concerned with making itself invulnerable : and it is anxious to be invulnerable because it is afraid. There is nothing to be afraid of in this world except one's own fears. As Tchegov said yet again : “ God's world is a good place ! The one thing not good in it is we ! How little justice and humility there is in us ! ”

Mr. Shaw's Tchegov, who holds up wasters to ridicule in *The Cherry Orchard*, would have neither justice nor humility. Perhaps it is because Mr. Shaw himself is a little deficient in both those qualities. But Mr. Shaw's Tchegov is not Tchegov, nor anything like him.

P.S.—As I pass this proof yet another selection of Tchegov's letters (“ Letters on Literature ” : Geoffrey Bles, 12s. 6d. net) comes to hand. It is admirably conceived, for Tchegov's literary criticism is the subtlest I know. The book should be a *vade mecum* for every modern writer. A sentence strikes my eye, written in 1891 : if so-and-so “ had sweated the Asiatic out of himself.” Precisely in this lies Tchegov's difference from all other Russians, even the greatest. As a fifth-form schoolboy he had made his choice, and become a European. “ Why do you call yourself,” he wrote to his brother Mihail, “ ‘ your worthless and insignificant brother ’ ? You recognize your insignificance. . . . Recognize it before God ; perhaps, too, in the presence of beauty, wisdom, nature, but not before men. Among men you must be conscious of your dignity and worth.” The hardest thing of all for a true Russian to learn, Tchegov had learned at seventeen : Dostoevsky never learned it at all.

## BOOKS TO READ

**BEN JONSON.** Edited by C. H. Herford and Percy Simpson. Vols. 1 and 2. *The Man and his Work*, (Oxford University Press.) 42s. net.

A full appreciation of England's greatest comic writer requires ability to think in terms of a classical tradition; an act for which the modern mind is singularly unfitted. Hitherto only one contemporary (and he not English-born) has written of Jonson with real understanding; and we had not dared to hope that the Introductory volumes of the Oxford edition would be as good as they are. They form an adequate work, calling for very few reservations; much patient research has obviously gone to their making, and incidentally they are well produced. They reveal wide learning that has no tang of "specialization." The biography, written by a single hand, is admirable; the criticism—much more difficult—is equally so. The emphasis of Gifford is replaced by a calm estimate, very free from the usual apologetics or special pleading or air of protestation. It is a sheer intellectual pleasure, after working through the discussions of *Sejanus*, *Volpone*, and *Epicoene* to see just how *The Alchemist*, not Jonson's best play, was his best ad *sacculum*. Jonson was masterfully "of a piece"; without "inner conflicts" or "inner growth"; his "rarity" was relative and conditioned: "his limitations, like his powers, were not those most characteristic of his time." The editors are faithful to this perception of the core of Jonson; even his lyrical genius is not much slighted, and his critical position is justly if not fully expounded, with some recognition at last of his Dutch masters.

**ROBERT SCHUMANN.** By Frederick Niecks. (Dent.) 10s. 6d. net.

This (unhappily posthumous) work is, if undistinguished, both interesting and thorough; alike on the biographical and musical sides. It is "supplementary and corrective," and quite worthy to rank with the previous *Life of Chopin*. The later chapters are written, from Professor Niecks' notes, by his widow. Sir Alexander Mackenzie contributes an appreciative Preface.

**WASHINGTON IRVING ESQUIRE: AMBASSADOR AT LARGE FROM THE NEW WORLD TO THE OLD.** By George S. Hellman. Illustrated, (Cape.) 16s. net.

Mr. Hellman's sprightliness may not be to everyone's liking, but he has given us an interesting, fluent and extremely circumstantial book. Its chief value is along the lines of the sub-title; it is too superficial and ex-parte to be first-rate biography. One could not gather from this bright account of a pleasing personality that Irving possessed a significant mind or was capable of real intellectual experience. Mr. Hellman supplements in places the defective works by P. Irving, Warner and Adams; and prints some new matter together with the dispatches Irving wrote as Minister at Madrid. We are astounded by the suggestion, unsupported by any evidence, that Mary Shelley loved Irving, and would gladly have become his wife or, failing that, his mistress.

**MORE CHANGES, MORE CHANCES.** By Henry W. Nevins. (Nisbet.) 15s. net.

Mr. Nevins' career has been remarkably full of adventures which, under all his present serenity, have been sensitively felt. He has always been distinguished by a genuine and courageous altruism; he has fought for many strange causes and been in the forefront of many battles. So able a journalist has, of course, made his memoirs interesting reading. He enables one to see a great number of famous events and personalities from an individual standpoint. But those who do not blindly admire every idealistic temperament cannot fail to detect in him a certain complacency or to see that his excellent impulses are at the mercy of a defective logical sense.

**MEMOIRS.** By Sir Almeric FitzRoy. 2 Vols. Illustrated. (Hutchinson.) 42s. net.

The Clerk to the Privy Council has a unique post of observation; and this Diary (which does not recall Charles Fulke Greville) is interesting and sometimes amusing. Sir Almeric is an experienced, knowledgeable, and attractive man-of-the-world, whose very language suggests a tradition. In such a book one is always treading on contemporary toes; but Sir Almeric is downright rather than indiscreet, rarely malicious, and never malevolent. An honest record, in short: which leaves a more pleasant impression than do most recent and better-written socio-political memoirs. The author revered Lord Morley and the 8th Duke of Devonshire; he does not greatly revere Mr. Lloyd George or Lord Oxford and Asquith. He is able to conclude that "Forms are the fortress of liberty." A reference of Sir Almeric's to A. E.'s poetry is indexed under "Housman, A. E."!

BE THE NAME "Cadbury" ON EVERY PIECE OF CHOCOLATE.

NOVEMBER, 1925 MONTHLY VOL. III. NO. 6

# The Adelphi

1/3



1/3

EDITED BY JOHN MIDDLETON MURRY

**£2 : 2 : 0**

with order and 11 monthly payments of £1.

CASH PRICE

**£12 : 10 : 0**

Write for particulars of our INTRODUCTION SCHEME, P.H. 33.



*The*

# Remington

**PORTABLE**

*The SOUNDEST and the MOST COMPACT  
Portable Typewriter made.*

**THE REMINGTON TYPEWRITER CO. Ltd.**

Head Office: 100, Gracechurch Street, London, E.C.3.

And Branches in principal Provincial Centres.



# RELIABLE FUR COATS

Intending purchasers of furs are strongly advised to inspect our stock before coming to a decision. Practically every garment that we offer for sale is worked on the premises by our own highly skilled furriers from carefully selected skins. By handling the skins from the raw state up to the finished article we detect and reject all inferior skins, and at the same time eliminate all intermediate profits, and therefore claim with the utmost confidence that the values we offer are absolutely unbeatable. The shape illustrated is a typical example of the many handsome and becoming models now in stock.

## SMART FUR COAT

(as sketch) worked from well-matched natural brown musquash skins, on becoming lines, with new shaped collar and turn back cuffs, lined good quality plain or fancy silks.

Price,  
**35 Gns.**

In natural Black Musquash,  
**89 Gns.**

In Golden Nutria, **69 Gns.**

## Debenham & Freebody.

Wigmore Street.  
(Cavendish Square) London W.1



*Sent on approval.*

CATALOGUE POST FREE.

## BOOKS TO READ—continued

THE RELIGION OF YESTERDAY AND TO-MORROW. By Kirsopp Lake, D.D. (Christophers.) 7s. 6d. net.

This is a book which promises and disappoints. Dr. Lake is, of course, a thorough-going Liberal, or as he prefers to call himself, an Experimentalist. "The recognition of Purpose as God will, I believe, be one of the foundations of the theology of to-morrow." We doubt it: indeed it is almost a contradiction in terms. And the sentence is characteristic of the quality of the book: it is honest, but jejune. The religion of the future, if there is one, will not be such a starve-crow affair. The real trouble is that Dr. Lake is not religious-minded. He is a Benthamite. His vision of philanthropy administered "by professionally trained social servants" and his rather commonplace notion that philanthropy in the past has been "biologically unsound," reveal him as ignorant of the true and perennial strength of the religion he wishes to liberalize into philanthropic radicalism—the nature of the man Jesus. But an honest book, in this realm, is a comfort.

COLLECTIVIST ECONOMICS. By J. Haldane Smith. (Routledge.) 8s. 6d. net.

Mr. Smith holds that capitalistic private enterprise is the real source of "sickness" in the body politic, and that our only remedy lies in replacing it by *Collectivism*; by which he means, apparently, a system of State control operating mainly through guilds and designed to secure the abolition of all unearned income in the shape of rent, interest and profit, by the nationalization of industry. The book is clearly written and is marked by sanity of outlook and moral earnestness. Mr. Smith displays, perhaps, a too naïve confidence in the adequacy of his own solution. The weakness of his position seems to lie, however, not so much in the doubtfulness of its economics as in its failure to recognize that no economic change is in itself sufficient to establish a sound social order.

MIND AND MATTER. By C. E. M. Joad. (Nisbet & Co., Ltd.) 4s. 6d. net.

This little book attempts two things and succeeds in both: it is strenuously popular, and in theme and treatment unimpeachably *le dernier cri*. Beginning with the classical evolutionist theories and nineteenth-century mechanism, the author leads us, in smooth and exhilarating progress, through the difficult and dangerous regions of Absolutism, Relativity, and Psycho-analysis; inspires us with yet a newer version of the "New Ethios"; and finally reveals to us, in a few privileged glimpses, some of the secret purposes of the *life force*. It would be too much to say that the book has no defects; it is frequently vague, confused, and superficial, and it contains several downright mistakes. But its faults are, for the most part, the faults of over-simplification incident to works of its kind. Mr. Joad has provided what is, on the whole, an admirable bird's-eye view; and discerning readers will be grateful to him for its excellence none the less because they realize its limitations.

PSYCHE: THE CULT OF SOULS AND BELIEF IN IMMORTALITY AMONG THE GREEKS. By Erwin Rohde. (Kegan Paul.) 25s. net.

The translator and publishers are to be congratulated on rendering this standard treatise accessible to English readers. A pioneer work, distinguished by exact scholarship, wide and mature learning, and a scientific regard for the canons of evidence, *Psyche* remains still, despite the significant changes of critical opinion in the last thirty years, an authoritative contribution to the study of Greek religion. Though intended primarily for philologists, Rohde's book should prove of considerable value to philosophers, anthropologists, and all interested in the history of belief. The present version is well executed, and an attempt has been made in it to systematize the original modes of reference to classical sources. The latter are collected in extensive notes at the close of each chapter and in appendices at the end of the volume.

DIALOGUES IN LIMBO. By George Santayana. (Constable.) 10s. 6d. net.

These imaginary conversations rank higher as literature than as philosophy. Finely conceived and written, they obscure their author in dialectics. Mr. Santayana's highly rational materialism is half-revealed yet playfully depersonalized in the brilliant fantasia of Democritus upon the atomic theory; like the Stranger from the earth, we are impressed yet bewildered. The "dialogues" on modern theories of government between the latter and Socrates (not less sceptical from twenty centuries of vicarious experience), are inimitable. Had Mr. Santayana faced the great questioner with Democritus, we might have grown clearer about the Life of Reason. Instead, we are confronted with the shattering Neo-Aristotelianism of Avicenna. A brilliant, even profound work, yet of its nature inconclusive. In his world of shades, Mr. Santayana has not been willing to play Rhadamanthus.

## BOOKS TO READ—*continued*

ESSAYS BY DIVERS HANDS: Being the Transactions of the Royal Society of Literature. Vol. 5. Edited by John Drinkwater. (Milford.) 7s. net.

These are calm waters. It is doubtful if the wider interests of literary conservatism are much furthered by this obvious preaching to the pious who alone come to church. The contributions are tolerably "sound" and interesting, if little more; and there are traces, ever so slight but disconcerting, of provincialism. Mr. Bailey's elegant address does not "place" Landon; shows what he was without true realization of what he was not, an unconscious over-praise. Mr. Granville Barker is, as always, an alert and suggestive contributor on the drama, speaking wisely of translation in its theatrical aspect. The motive of *si jeunesse savait* . . . persists throughout the book, but in a half-hearted manner.

DEFINITIONS. By H. S. Canby. Two Series. (Cape.) 7s. 6d. net each.

The first of these "Series" is better than the second; and the section "On the American Tradition" conspicuously the most valuable. Mr. Canby's attitude to literature is sociological rather than critical, and the journalistic element is strong. Mr. Canby is eminently reasonable: he is almost the unprejudiced American. Though not profound, he is always interesting; and we hope he will be widely read over here. His interpretative virtues are many, and his actual critical sins very few. He really understands that literary America which is a puzzling phenomenon to most of us: a practised editor and lecturer, he unites in each capacity his experience as both.

SILHOUETTES. By Sir Edmund Gosse. (Heinemann.) 8s. 6d. net.

What new thing is there to say about Sir Edmund? Useless to pretend that one of these "sermons" is much better or worse than another: they are what 2,000 word articles for a Sunday newspaper should be, graceful, moderate, careful, urbane, lively and gently learned—but this is merely describing Sir Edmund again. He never goes deeply into critical problems. but we would not say of him as did the Dorking lady of his friend Andrew Lang, that "he is no serious seeker after truth"!

RUMINATIONS. By Arthur McDowall. (Heinemann.) 6s. net.

Try as one may to accept him lightly, Mr. McDowall's pleasant essays on shoes and ships and sealing-wax give a slight hint of falling between two stools. His ruminations are more valuable than those of the professional ruminators, but they are less tangible; mere observation is secondary to a kind of *withheld* philosophy not organized to bring his reflections into a higher sphere. He exceeds his themes without unifying his underlying perceptions; that is, without realizing his full personality. Enough: he has charm and humour, and we enjoy them. The essays on Autobiography, on pre- and post-Romantic touring, and on a very odd cleric, are in his other vein.

## NOTABLE NOVELS AND SHORT STORIES

SUSPENSE. By Joseph Conrad. Introduction by Richard Curle. (Dent.) 7s. 6d. net.

Conrad died unexpectedly; but anyhow it is characteristic that his posthumous novel contains no "final statement": is not his *Tempest* or *Samson Agonistes*. It is not in his great manner; but has a good deal of richness and vigour. It does not seem to suffer much from its fragmentary nature; and may take a respectable place among his second-best works. We are not persuaded that its theme is well suited to his genius.

ST. MAWR; together with THE PRINCESS. By D. H. Lawrence. (Martin Secker.) 7s. 6d. net.

*St. Mawr* is a story which grows. At first there is the sense that a writer so much absorbed in idea that he cannot pause to make his characters convincing ought to be writing an essay instead of a long short story. Only the horse, *St. Mawr*, who is, as it were, the embodiment of the idea, is real. But about half-way through the story, when the horse ceases to be the centre of interest, the human characters are given their chance. They come alive. At the same time everything becomes more clearly cut, more vivid. Towards the end of the story there are descriptive passages of poignant, effortless beauty.



# THE RED TERROR

## IN RUSSIA

Gr. 8vo.

By S. P. MELGOUNOV

6s. Net

*Illustrated with Photographs*

An amazing volume of revelations by an eminent Russian historian who has suffered not only at the hands of the Bolsheviks, but also under the Tsarist regime. The material collected from Soviet official sources is in itself sufficient proof that the horrors described by the author are not fiction but fact. The book is illustrated with a unique series of photographs. *[Prospectus post free]*

## Boswell's Life of Johnson

3 Vols. Demy 8vo. £1 2s. 6d. net

Edited by ARNOLD GLOVER. Introduction by AUSTIN DOBSON. Illustrated with 20 Photogravure Portraits and nearly 100 Line Drawings by HERBERT RAILTON. Prospectus Post Free.

## Dostoevsky

By André Gide

Small Demy 8vo. 6s. net

"I can recall no other critical work," says ARNOLD BENNETT, in his introduction, "which so cogently justifies and so securely establishes its subject."

Prospectus Post Free.

## British Flora

By Gaston Bonnier

Fcap. 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

A translation and adaptation to British conditions of Gaston Bonnier's *La Nouvelle Flore du Nord de la France et de la Belgique*. With 2,000 text figures. Prospectus Post Free.

## The Autobiography of Richard Baxter

Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

Edited with introduction and Notes by the Rev. J. M. LLOYD THOMAS. Baxter's great historical folio of 1696 *Reliquiæ Baxterianæ*, abridged. Containing many portraits and an epilogue tracing the Puritan Leader's career through the Commonwealth to the time of his death. Prospectus Post Free.

## Books & Theatres

By Gordon Craig

Royal 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

A delightful collection of essays illustrated with a unique series of original photographs of old Italian Theatres, etc. Prospectus Post Free.

## City, Sea & Countryside

Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.

A Book of Verse by ARTHUR L. SALMON. Prospectus Post Free.

AUTUMN LIST POST FREE. 65, Chandos, St., London, W.C. 2

## NOTABLE NOVELS, etc.—*continued*

THE SMOKING LEG AND OTHER STORIES. By John Metcalfe. (Jarrolds.) 7s. 6d. net.

Almost all these stories have the quality of those rare, amazingly vivid dreams which seem to take us right into another world. We do not merely look on at another world—we are there. The uneasy wind breathes and mutters, the darkness falls, and there is fear, vague and supernatural, of the unknown. Ever in the most “awake” story *Picnic*, there is still this same fear. It is an intrinsic part of Mr. Metcalfe’s realization. But, particularly in this “awake” story, we feel that his realization is shining as something beautiful, complete and new.

THE ELDER SISTER. By Frank Swinnerton. (Hutchinson.) 7s. 6d. net.

Mr. Swinnerton has written a story of unusual power, about two sisters’ love for an egoist, and its almost tragic—perhaps worse than tragic—consequences. He shows himself capable of a masterly detachment; delineating both young women with sombre insight and minute elaboration. This motive is more perfectly handled than are the later chapters in which things come to a head: the male characterization is rather incomplete than unconvincing: but the emotional economy is relaxed without heightening of the emotional communication.

CHRISTINA ALBERTA’S FATHER. By H. G. Wells. (Cape.) 7s. 6d.

This novel, amended to suit the views of various critics, would be deprived of Christina, and her father, and Mr. Wells. It would then demonstrate the value of contemporary literary criticism, but we should lose some drama which, in our view, is better than that of Mr. Kipps. In fact, this is one of the best books Mr. Wells has done. We put it with Mr. Polly. The fun is drier, even when the situation is as deliriously comic as that in which Mr. Polly fought with a dead eel, and the mockery of human folly is kinder; for this book, after all, is a serious survey of life by a master who is now in easier and happier control of his medium.

THE BAKER’S CART. By Gerald Bullett. (The Bodley Head.) 7s. 6d. net.

*The Baker’s Cart*—need one say it contains thirteen stories?—is more to our liking than Mr. *Godly Beside Himself*. Only four times do we suffer Mr. Bullett’s rather macabre supernaturalism: so grim a realist is an intractable denizen of fairyland. He has sensibility, wide and perceptive sympathy—especially with children; he leaves a distinct, though rarely lasting, impression. He is not a “big” writer, and at present his symbolism is rather too pronounced; but *The Sunflowers*, *Prentice* and *Summer’s End* are achievements.

RACHEL MAER. By Morley Roberts. (Nash & Grayson.) 7s. 6d. net.

The publishers have done well to revive this novel after twenty-two years; for it has a great deal of power, sincerity, and elemental truth. It is an unusual story of great and futile passions, written in a semi-Biblical style which, however, grows wearisome. The book wants relief; it wants humour (in spite of Steve, the decayed preacher, who is an achievement); it wants variety. It is difficult to be convinced by characters, however impressive, who exist at such an abnormal emotional tension, or talk so rhetorically. In fact, life is not like this.

### BOOKS REVIEWED OR ADVERTISED IN THIS OR ANY OTHER JOURNAL

*can be obtained through any of the 1,250 Branches of*

**W. H. SMITH & SON**

Head Office: Strand House, London, W.C.2.



Heinemann



INLAND FAR

by Clifford Bax

An autobiography, but not a book devoted exclusively to its author. Mr. Bax has met many literary and musical people and describes them well.

10s. 6d. net

OBSERVATIONS

by Max Beerbohm

Max has not forgotten how to translate solemnity into absurdity and the faces of the great are still his diversion and ours. This book contains the *Old and the Young Self Series*.

25s. net

DON JUAN

By James Elroy Flecker

Although this is an earlier work it is superior at moments to *Hassan*; that was a play with a romantic subject: this is romantic in outlook and treatment as well.

6s. & 31s. 6d.

HÉLOÏSE & ABÉLARD

by George Moore

Mr. Moore has told the whole history of these learned lovers famed more for their love than for their wisdom. This is the first unlimited edition.

10s. 6d. net

MORE FABLES OF LA FONTAINE

by Edward Marsh

These translations have the same grace and laughter that delighted La Fontaine's France, and the same capacity for unmasking the folly of fools.

6s. & 15s.



## Arthur Machen.

THE CAERLEON EDITION OF HIS WORKS (the only Complete Edition), in nine volumes. Limited and numbered, the initial volume of each set, containing a portrait in photogravure is signed by the Author. The type was distributed immediately after printing. Sq. demy 8vo. Issued in 1923 at £9 9s. net. Now offered at £5 5s., post free in Gt. Britain. Quote offer 237. Books you want! Foyles can supply them. Immense number of out-of-print books in stock. Outline requirements.

**FOYLE'S BOOKLOVERS PARADISE**

121, Charing Cross Rd., London. W.C.2.

## PSYCHOLOGICAL AID

### SOCIETY

A society devoted to the investigation of difficulties in life, conduct and health, on a new theory based on the dream as asserting the reality of spiritual values.

Meeting every Tuesday at 7.30 p.m. Visitors cordially invited.

Calendar of Symbolism for 1926 now ready. Price 2/6.

Apply, 14, Enleigh Street, W.C.1.

**A**RTIFICIAL TEETH (OLD).—2s. each tooth on Vulcanite. 4s. on Silver. 6s. on Gold. No misleading prices. Cash by return.—Dental Works, Main Street, Carlton, Notts. Bankers, Lloyds.

¶ The Editor of THE ADELPHI will be pleased at all times to consider MSS. if accompanied by a stamped and addressed envelope. No responsibility, however, is accepted for MSS. submitted. Communications for the Editor and MSS. should be addressed to The Editor, THE ADELPHI, 12, Cursitor Street, E.C. 4.

¶ The Subscription Rate for THE ADELPHI is 16/6 per annum post free to any address. Subscriptions may be sent to The Publisher, THE ADELPHI, British Periodicals Limited, 12, Cursitor Street, E.C. 4, or to any Newsagent.

¶ Advertisement copy and all communications relating to the advertisement pages should be sent to the Advertisement Manager, THE ADELPHI, British Periodicals Limited, 12, Cursitor Street, E.C. 4, to whom applications for Advertisement Rates should be made. (Phone: Holborn 225-226.)

# THE OXFORD BOOKS OF VERSE

8/6 net ; on Oxford India paper, 10/- net.

THE OXFORD BOOK OF ENGLISH VERSE.  
A.D. 1250-1900. By Sir Arthur Quiller-Couch.  
1,096 pages.

THE OXFORD BOOK OF LATIN VERSE. By  
H. W. Garrod.

THE OXFORD BOOK OF ITALIAN VERSE.  
By St. John Lucas.

THE OXFORD BOOK OF FRENCH VERSE.  
By St. John Lucas.

THE OXFORD BOOK OF GERMAN VERSE.  
By H. G. Fiedler. With a Preface by Gerard  
Hauptmann.

THE OXFORD BOOK OF RUSSIAN VERSE.  
By Maurice Baring.

THE OXFORD BOOK OF SPANISH VERSE. By  
J. Fitzmaurice Kelly.

THE OXFORD BOOK OF PORTUGUESE VERSE.  
By A. F. G. Bell.

THE OXFORD BOOK OF VICTORIAN VERSE.  
By Sir Arthur Quiller-Couch.

THE OXFORD BOOK OF BALLADS. By  
By Sir Arthur Quiller-Couch.

THE OXFORD BOOK OF ENGLISH MYSTICAL  
VERSE. By D. H. S. Nicholson and A. H. E.  
Lee.

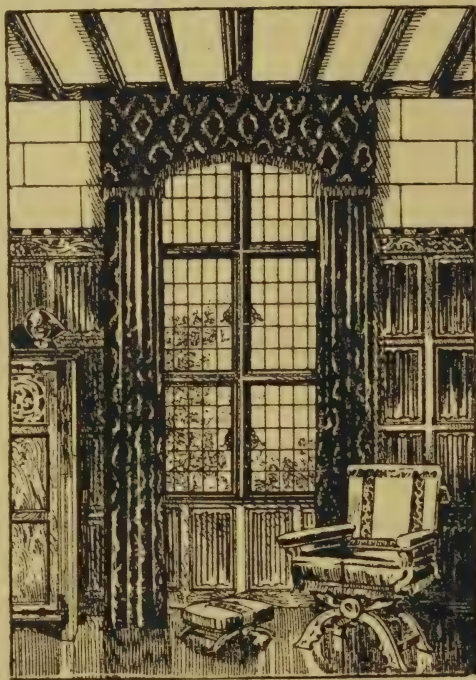
THE OXFORD BOOK OF SCANDINAVIAN VERSE.  
By Sir E. Gosse and W. H. Craigie. *Shortly.*

OXFORD · UNIVERSITY · PRESS

# Harvey Nichols *of Knightsbridge*

## **EXCLUSIVE AND ARTISTIC FURNISHING FABRICS**

A great variety of NEW FURNISHING MATERIALS are now on view in our Showrooms, together with SPECIMEN WINDOW TREATMENTS



INSPECTION INVITED  
**FURNITURE RE-UPHOLSTERED**  
at moderate charges.

**LOOSE COVERS**  
Cut and fitted  
by experts.

**BLINDS**  
of every  
description

**BEDDING**  
purified and  
re-made.

**ESTIMATES FREE**

**HARVEY NICHOLS & CO. LTD., KNIGHTSBRIDGE, LONDON, S.W.1**















UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS-URBANA



3 0112 122878983